





# CAREFREE PATH OF DREAMS

BOOK 05

*The Plagiarist*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Carefree Path of Dreams

(逍遙夢路)

by

The Plagiarist

(文抄公)

# Synopsis

---

This is the story of a boy who lived a secluded life in the mountains, tending his farm, rearing his fish, and dreaming his dreams. Eh? Did I suddenly conquer all worlds and become the big boss? Or am I still in a dream?

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Sparrow Translations @ [Qidian International](#).

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 401: Medicinal Herbs

---

"Knock! Knock!"

Morning, the next day.

The sun just rose and a violent knocking noise could already be heard from outside the door.

"Who is it?"

Fang Yuan opened the door groggily and saw two policemen in peak caps, "What's the matter, officers?"

"Are you Fang Yuan?"

A tall policeman flipped through his records and continued asking, "Eh, Sambhogakaya Monastery Heart Questioning House's owner? You even sold an Aquilaria Maitreya yesterday?"

"Yes, I have already instructed my shop assistants to pay the taxes!"

Fang Yuan asked confusedly, "Is there any other matter?"

"Yesterday night, where were you between 12am to 3am?"

The other policemen questioned him sternly. As the policemen represented the law's sense of righteousness, they could easily cause those who were not firm in their thoughts to waver and let the cat out of the bag.

"The weather was so cold and it was so late at night, I was, of course, sleeping at home..." Fang Yuan answered naturally.

"Is there any witness or alibi? The Aquilaria Maitreya brought by Mr Thomas for 500,000 dollars was stolen in the hotel last night!" The policemen questioned Fang Yuan and immediately observed his reactions detailedly.

"Stolen? What the..."

However, Fang Yuan had the acting chops of an award-winning

actor. A surprised yet shocked look appeared on his face and the policemen could not observe anything abnormal.

"Ok, if you thought of anything else, please inform us immediately!"

After a round of questioning, the two policemen bowed and left.

"Indeed, they came just to try to scare me....." Fang Yuan thought.

Fang Yuan closed his courtyard doors. He then watered the medicinal herbs in his garden as usual with a slight smile on his face as he thought, "What a pity... I had a witness who was absent! And it was your own guy!"

The stalker last night would most likely say that Fang Yuan was at home if not, he would then be admitting he was derelict in his duties.

With him as a witness, Fang Yuan was naturally not worried at all.

After he finished tending his garden, he rode his bicycle to a breakfast stall.

There were not many people at the breakfast stall yet. The steaming hot buns in the bamboo steamers gave out a tantalising and salivating aroma.

Fang Yuan immediately ordered his food and began slowly eating some buns and a bowl of spicy soup.

Suddenly, Fang Yuan noticed Guo Jing enjoying his fried dough and porridge opposite him. Fang Yuan did not know when he appeared. Guo Jing was wearing a pair of sunglasses which was rather odd looking.

After they finished their breakfast, the two of them mixed into the big group of people doing their morning exercise at the park.

"Little Master... you have to treat my injury! Or else I can't even

go to work today!"

They then went to a secluded spot in the forest. After ensuring there was no one following them, Guo Jing took off his sunglasses with a bitter smile to reveal a racoon eye which was strangely smaller than it was last night.

"Old Guo, you are a security guard, there's nothing wrong for you to get in a few brawls!"

After Fang Yuan spoke to him last night, Fang Yuan knew more about him. Although Guo Jing was a cultivator, he was not officially a daoist. Instead, he worked as a security guard at a factory. It was the perfect example of being hidden in plain sight.

"I am a nice old man deemed as a mister goody two shoes by the neighbour committee! If those middle-aged women found out I was involved in a fight, they would definitely annoy the hell out of me..." Guo Jing replied.

"Eh, don't worry! Take a seat!"

Fang Yuan pricked the area between Guo Jing's eyebrow with a silver needle and used his technique. A stream of spiritual energy was immediately transferred over to Guo Jing.

Moments later, all the remaining bruises on Guo Jing's body disappeared. He was no different from usual.

"Ah... amazing!"

Guo Jing took out a small mirror and looked at himself. He was satisfied and nodded, "Little Master, your magical needles skills are really perfect, it really reminds me of the Magical Needler Xue..."

"I merely learnt it from some ancient books, I was lucky to cultivate till such..."

Fang Yuan waved his arms and sat on a piece of rock, "Old Guo... do you think there are many people like us?"

"I'm afraid not!"



Guo Jing gave a bitter smile, "I have lived for so long and only met one, which is you... but lately, things are a bit different! Even though no one in my master's sect has ever managed to cultivate the divine techniques in the <Purple and Green Inscriptions>, which I inherited from my master's master, after fumbling with it these few years, I managed to achieve some results! I can now open my spiritual eye and draw talismans to mess with people!"

"Doesn't that means those people with lineage should have realised it by now and are secretly cultivating?"

Fang Yuan stroked his chin and smile radiantly, "Old Guo, you don't have to belittle yourself... your 6 Ding 6 Jia Talisman last night was really good. Also, with your spiritual eye techniques, next time, you can just wear a daoist robe and be a master exorcist!"

"Although that 6 Ding 6 Jia God possession technique is powerful, it consumes too much elemental energy. If I didn't meet you last night and you didn't protect my elemental energy with your silver needles, my old bones would definitely not be able to get out of bed today! I would definitely be bedridden for 7 days and 7 nights to recover..."

Guo Jing shook his head and took out a cloth bag, "This magical equipment... I should return it to its owner!"

"No need!"

Fang Yuan shook his head, "I have already sold this magical equipment, if you want to return it to its owner, you have to return it to Mr Thomas. Or you can keep it with yourself, anyway, I have nothing to do with it now."

"Sigh... although this is a magical equipment, after yesterday night's events, it's a piece of trouble!"

Guo Jing kept the sculpture with a bitter smile on his face, "I reckon the pickpockets in this city would definitely be super

unlucky in the next few days..."

"These thieves should be cleaned up!"

Fang Yuan then asked interestedly, "What exactly is this magical equipment? Do you know?"

"This... I only realised it yesterday when I went to look at the commotion!"

Guo Jing awkwardly continued, "But this is definitely a magical equipment, it is also no doubt related to the Way of Brahma... Brahman magical equipment mostly can calm a person's spirit and cleanse the psychological barriers in their hearts. This item should have similar effects... Whereas for other effects, I'm not really sure..."

"It's okay, you can keep it and slowly analyse it. If you have any new discoveries, just inform me..."

Fang Yuan stood up and said, "I have to go to school now! I still have to rush my thesis!"

In actual fact, Fang Yuan's gains this time around was counted not bad already. Not only did he obtain a Yin Yang Master's notebook, he met a real cultivator.

Okay... although this cultivator seemed like an amateur, his background was real. He even allowed Fang Yuan to experiment on him, which was greatly beneficial to Fang Yuan's process in perfecting his theories.

...

"Write my thesis! Write my thesis! This time..... I must really set the Thames on fire!"

Inside Xijing University's library, Fang Yuan sat in front a pile of books while biting his pen and thought, "Looks like I have to put in something substantial..."

Fang Yuan's pen could not stop moving and a stream of dragon-

and-phoenix-like words appeared. In that instant, it was as though the surroundings became absolutely silent, all sorts of noise, commotion, ruckus and hullabaloo turned into silence and emptiness under the tip of his pen.

After Fang Yuan wrote a few lines of words, he raised his head and saw the library was as per normal. Golden sun rays shined through the window and lighted up the fine dust particles in the air. Under the piles of books, there were many bookworms like Fang Yuan who had large round spectacles and were also busy studying.

"After all, this realm has harsh laws and is realm purely based on physics. If I want to sense the heavens or what not, I better get to bed early!" Fang Yuan thought.

Fang Yuan blew at his papers and stared at the title of his thesis, <The Relationship between Traditional Chinese Medicine, Human Evolution and the Revolution of Celestial Objects>!

"It's already not bad if the professors don't think I'm an idiot after seeing such a thesis title! But the truth always rests with the minority!"

Fang Yuan looked at the huge history books in front of him and a smile appeared on his face, "Spiritual King Comet? Interesting!"

"Of course... just these pieces of evidence aren't enough, I still need some human data. Else, the professors might really chuck my thesis into the bin... In Chinese Country, it is super embarrassing if someone can't even pass the thesis defence..."

Fang Yuan solemnly memorised the resources he obtained. After registering the books, Fang Yuan left the library and went to the Faculty of Traditional Chinese Medicine.

"Fang Yuan, you're here!"

The faculty's Professor Tian's eyes lit up immediately when he saw Fang Yuan, "Did you complete your germination experiment?"

Are you bringing me some good medicines..."

"No, I just came to prepare the resources for my thesis... I still need to contact the Traditional Chinese Medicine clinic for some medical cases!"

"You still need the agreement of the patient and the patient's family! Also, this is a bit too risky!"

Professor Tian was not very happy about Fang Yuan's thesis, "Fang Yuan, don't be too ambitious. I'm not criticising you, but as long as you systematically and scientifically write down your experiences in cultivating the medicinal herbs in your thesis, even if other professors do not pass it, we can still save you a spot in our master's degree programme!"

"Think about it, artificially cultivated herbs that are as good as wild herbs' medicinal properties! There is such a huge economic value in this, think about all the contributions you can bring to our motherland..."

As Professor Tian tried to convince Fang Yuan, seeing Fang Yuan's unwavering smile, he felt slightly gloomy.

Prescriptions in Traditional Chinese Medicine had two aspects, it was symptomatic and based on medicinal herbs. Of course, after so many years, many wild medicinal herbs became extremely rare and could only be replaced by those grown artificially.

However, many of these artificially cultivated medicinal herbs were always lousier than their counterparts found in the wild, even if they were of the same age.

Furthermore, such minute differences could not even be detected by equipment. Professor Tian was extremely shocked when he discovered the medicinal herbs Fang Yuan grew were not in the tiniest bit lousier than those found in the wild.

Nevertheless, Fang Yuan cooperatively participated in the research. They even did a control experiment with two medicinal

herbs that were exactly the same and were both the same age. Although the equipment could not detect any difference, the effects of Fang Yuan's medicinal herb was 30% better, which made Professor Tian completely baffled.

"I'm still more interested in treating patients and saving lives!" Fang Yuan replied resolutely.

In actual fact, the results were produced after Fang Yuan restrained his special ability already.

The slightly stronger medicinal property could be attributed to good or secret cultivation skills and tips, but if the greatly shortened growth cycle and even the variations were found out, the herbs would be treated like monsters and would definitely be investigated.

Although Fang Yuan was not afraid to reveal some more, what was the point?

# Chapter 402: Healing the Wounded

---

The Xijing University Chinese Hospital.

Although it was not Fang Yuan's first time here, he still hated the atmosphere of the hospital.

It was depressing and boring and everyone here felt desolated... It was suffocating.

"Haha... Professor Tian, what brings you here?"

Both Fang Yuan and Professor Tian wore white robes and arrived at the office of the hospital. A plump and half-bald dean came out and gave an inviting and warm smile.

"Old Wang, this is Fang Yuan, the one I've mentioned to you about!"

Professor Tian chuckled as he pushed Fang Yuan forward. "He is prepared to perform a new Traditional Chinese Medicine technique and is looking for a few patients here to try on..."

"I see..."

Dean Wang's eyebrows twitched but he slowly became relaxed. "No problem... head to the outpatient walk-in area, I will be fully responsible for you!"

He was only so forthcoming because Professor Tian was an important figure in the Traditional Chinese Medicine community.

"Do I seem like such a person? Don't worry, Little Fang is extremely professional!"

Professor Tian glared at Dean Wang.

"Oh, I see!"

Dean Wang smiled. "Is he your student? Like teacher, like student!"

With that, he knew that he did not have to bother about the

probation period and job experience. "What are your intentions?"

"Dean Wang, I am here to solve the untreatable cases. You can hand any medical case deemed hopeless to me!"

Fang Yuan chuckled.

"Oh?"

Dean Wang was stunned. "Why is that so?"

"I am primarily looking for cases where the patients and their family members are in despair so they would readily agree to this, reducing the chances of conflicts between them and us in the future... Furthermore, I want representatives from the young, middle-aged and old. The best would be to have these representative suffer from the same illnesses so that I can compare them!"

Fang Yuan stated all his conditions at one go and also hinted that he would donate to the hospital in his personal capacity.

"Alright, I'll prepare!"

Dean Wang was stunned for a moment before agreeing to Fang Yuan.

After all, Traditional Chinese Medicine was always not as attractive as western medicine. Even the Xijing University Chinese Hospital had ran into economic problems.

"You kid... how did you convince Dean Wang?"

After ensuring that no one else was near them, Professor Tian enquired.

"I only agreed to sponsor the hospital... Of course, I will not do it publicly!"

Fang Yuan smiled. "In my personal capacity, I will buy medical equipment and donate it to the Traditional Chinese Medicine faculty before letting you donate it using the school's name. Everything is clear, so what is there for us to fear?"

"Sigh... young people these days!"

Professor Tian remained speechless and did not know if he should feel happy or sad.

After a short while, Dean Wang returned with a few doctors following him. "Doctor Little Fang, nice to meet you. I have already chosen a few medical cases according to your requirements."

With that, one of the doctors handed him three sets of documents. "Lu Wei, 65 years old, multiple organ failure. Zhao Guoping, 37 years old, the final stage of stomach cancer. Sun Xiaohong, 15 years old, paralysed. These cases are similar to each other. What do you think?"

"Alright, tell them and their family members that I will pay for their medical bills!"

Fang Yuan flipped through the documents and realised that all three of them were middle-income families and could no longer support the burden of the medical bills. Therefore, the chances that they would agree to Fang Yuan's offer was high.

"The few of you will draft the document and settle the agreement. I will follow up after they have signed the agreement!"

Fang Yuan closed the document and there was a look of sorrow in his eyes.

Why was there so much sadness and separation in this world?

...

"Oh? Alright!"

As the few doctors took their leave, they started to discuss softly among themselves. "How's the new guy? Is he arrogant?"

"After all, he is Professor Tian's student. Even Dean Wang has to respect him!"

"Even so, he cannot play around with the patients' lives..."



However, by agreeing to foot their medical bills, he has resolved these 3 hard medical cases..."

...

"Doctor Fang! The 3 patients and their family members have agreed to sign the agreement. Here are the documents!"

After a while, a nurse entered and handed 3 documents to Fang Yuan.

"Hmmm, alright, I'll first take a look at Lu Wei!"

Fang Yuan slowly stood up and the aura around him changed.

His calm and composed disposition resembled that of a noble doctor, making the nurse dumbfounded.

She had only seen such vibes from the few old professors before.

Paying no attention to her, Fang Yuan entered the ward. "Are you Lu Wei? I am the doctor in charge of your treatment!"

"It's you?"

The few middle-aged men and women gave looks of suspicion and started to mumble among themselves. "Regardless, the hospital has agreed to cover all his medical bills, right?"

"That's right!"

Fang Yuan nodded his head.

"Alright, then we shall hand him over to you. Remember to get a nurse to attend to him every day!"

The few of them quickly took their leave. Looking at how they seem much more relaxed after knowing that the patient would not burden them further made Fang Yuan sigh.

A bedridden elderly would eventually lose all his filial sons.

On the bed, the old man opened his eyes and his wrinkled face was emotionless. Or rather, he had difficulty expressing his emotions.

"We have temporarily suspended his previous treatment. Let me use my needles for now..."

Fang Yuan sat down beside him and retrieved a silver needle.

His needle was almost 4 inches long. However, it seemed soft and runny, which confused the nurses around.

Such a long and thin needle was something that not all doctors were able to use. A slight deviation in the execution of the technique would result in the needle being bent even before entering the acupuncture point.

'Hmm... Life is as fragile as a candle in the wind, and the body is as weak as a rotten tree!'

Executing the needle technique from the Green Capsule Scripture Additional Recording, Fang Yuan pierced his first needle.

A stream of inner power entered through the needle. The old man felt more energetic and started to move his eyeballs.

"Mr Lu... I am only a doctor and not a god. Therefore, my treatment can only alleviate your pain and let you feel comfortable in your final days!"

Fang Yuan continued to pierce the other acupuncture points as he calmly spoke.

"Patient... the patient is moving his mouth!"

The nurse widened her eyes and shrieked.

To her, this old man was a vegetable long ago and was holding on to his last breath. However, he seemed much more energetic and lively now as though there was no more pain?

"Thank... thank you!"

The old man forcefully moved his lips and spoke.

"You're welcome, it's my responsibility!"

Fang Yuan smiled and stood up before calling the nurse over.

"From now onwards, you will be in charge of taking care of him. I'm sure I don't have to repeat his dietary requirements, right?"

"Oh, yes!"

The nurse now regarded Fang Yuan as a mysterious person and did not dare to disobey his order.

...

"No! I will not agree to it!"

It was evening and Fang Yuan had completed his treatment for the second patient, Zhao Guoping. After comforting Zhao Guoping's teary-eyed wife, Fang Yuan arrived at the final ward.

In the ward, an agitated voice was heard. "Little Hong's condition has just stabilised. How can you just change her doctor? I will not agree to it!"

"Cough cough... Qin Wangqing, please mind your words. This is the dean's decision. Furthermore, the patient's family members have already agreed to it. Do you think you have any say in this?"

A fellow colleague gave a piece of advice.

"Doctor Qin, we know your good intentions. However, Little Hong still wants to stand on her feet. We do not want to miss any opportunity..."

A pair of middle-aged parents spoke with tears welled up in their eyes.

"..."

Doctor Qin was speechless. She wanted to reveal to them that the patient's leg had been put through examination and there was already an irreversible nerve damage. Even a miracle would not be able to make her stand again.

Looking at the wide-eyed young girl leaning on her bed, Doctor Qin could not bring herself to say it. After a long while, he finally decided on what to say.

"If he is a renowned doctor, then I have no worries... But Little Hong, you must know that he is only 16 years old!"

"What?"

"16 years old?"

Sun Xiaohong's parents were stunned. Although there were instances in western medicine where the young doctors could potentially become more capable than the older doctors, in Traditional Chinese Medicine, nothing like that had ever happened before. They started to feel a tinge of regret.

"Cough cough... Doctor Qin, you are unethical to talk bad about others behind their backs!"

Fang Yuan felt embarrassed as he eavesdropped on the conversation. With a cough, he entered the ward.

"You are... Doctor Fang?"

The patient's parents' eyes glistened as soon as they saw Fang Yuan.

They had to admit that Fang Yuan's matured appearance gave them confidence. He had a special vibe and people would even believe him if he were to claim that he was 20.

"I stand fast on what I've said... If Professor Tian came personally, I would have no qualms, but you, I will never agree!"

Qin Wanqing spoke with a cold tone.

"It's your business if you don't agree. Since the patient's parents have already agreed, don't stand in my way!"

Fang Yuan placed his hands in his pocket and walked forward.

Although it was a rare sight to see a pretty female doctor in the hospital, in Fang Yuan's eyes, she was no different from any other females.

"Are you Xiaohong?"

Fang Yuan approached the bed and examined the girl leaning on the bed.

Sun Xiaohong had a long face and thick sideburns. She had big eyes and it was as though people could see a hint of hope in them.

"That's me! Are you 16? You're only 1 year older than me!"

Sun Xiaohong blinked her eyes.

"Hehe... That's true!"

Fang Yuan nodded his head. "How? Would you like to stand on your feet again?"

"Yes, of course"!

Sun Xiaohong spoke with determination.

"Believe in me, that is all I ask for!"

Fang Yuan's eyes glistened and he gave a reassuring smile.

Never would he know that he would get an unexpected finding from these few medical cases.

Through his Fiery Golden Eyes, Sun Xiaohong's physical body was stronger than the average adult and it was as though Fang Yuan was looking at another Zhao Daniu.

She was an evolver. Although she was only slightly evolved and was only slightly more energetic than other children, with the correct guidance, she could discover some abilities of her own, for instance, self-healing. Together with the techniques described in the Green Capsule Scripture Additional Recording, she had an extremely high chance of complete recovery.

'This is great! With her, it is even better than treating 10 or 100 normal patients!'

Fang Yuan's eyes glistened. However, Qin Wanqing interpreted his attitude towards Sun Xiaohong as a hostile one. "Fang Yuan, I warn you not to do anything stupid!"

# Chapter 403: Thesis

---

"Doctor Qin, please do not disturb me while I am performing my diagnosis!"

"You..."

Qin Wanqing was furious as she held herself back.

"Let me look at your wound..."

Fang Yuan could not afford to expose his special skill and had to act as though he was examining the wound on the thigh of the young girl.

He could not avoid skin contact with the patient and therefore, Sun Xiaohong blushed in embarrassment. However, she quickly got used to it and composed herself.

"Doctor Fang, how's it?"

The parents of Sun Xiaohang were concerned and came over to Fang Yuan as soon as he had completed his diagnosis.

"Her situation is not that bad. If she is willing to cooperate for the treatment, she should have the hope of standing on her two feet again after half a year!"

"It's impossible! Don't believe him!"

Qin Wanqing looked at the parents as they almost knelt down in front of Fang Yuan. With that, she exploded. "Xiaohong can never walk on her feet again. Don't trust him!"

As soon as she finished her piece, she felt that she had said something wrong.

"Doctor Qin, thank you for your care for the past few weeks. However, please leave!"

Sun Xiaohong had a look of despair as her parents furiously retorted.

"All of you will regret it!"

Qin Wanqing gritted her teeth but did not feel any resentment towards the family. Instead, she felt like biting Fang Yuan's flesh and was already plotting to expose Fang Yuan's lie.

"Wait a minute!"

Fang Yuan shouted out. "Doctor Qin, since you are worried about Xiaohong, how about this... you shall be in charge of taking care of her daily. After all, I will only perform my acupuncture for a few minutes every time. You can also observe me! How's that?"

This female doctor had a good heart and was also rather skilled in Traditional Chinese Medicine. With a caring heart, Fang Yuan could make use of her to do the menial work.

"Only acupuncture? Alright..."

Qin Wanqing thought for a while before agreeing, for she felt that she had a duty to protect her patients. However, she could not control herself. "However, it is illogical for you to cure her paralysis by simply performing acupuncture, and this is according to Traditional Chinese Medicine... There have been no successful examples of it in history."

"The theory is about to be formed and you shall witness the example!"

Fang Yuan blinked his eyes. "After all, this is my graduation project!"

"I knew it..."

Qin Wanqing rolled her eyes and felt that the world was hopeless.

"Let the truth speak for itself!"

Fang Yuan forcefully calmed himself down, brought a spirit lamp and sanitized the silver needles.

"You have lost all feeling in your legs, right? If you do feel anything later on, remember to tell me!"

He gently reminded Sun Xiaohong before lightly piercing her acupuncture. Following the teachings of the Green Capsule Scripture Additional Recording, his inner energy flowed through the silver needle and entered Sun Xiaohong's body.

The human body was a world in itself and had its own circulatory system. This was the theory written in the Green Capsule Scripture Additional Recording.

Measuring the energy flow, Fang Yuan could feel that there was a blockage as soon as the inner energy flowed towards the wound on the thigh.

Encountering such a condition, anyone else would conclude that there was nothing that could be done to treat the legs.

'Hmm... even with my medical skills, if this patient was a normal person, I would need to spend at least a few years to stimulate the growth of the damaged nerves...'

This was after taking Fang Yuan's cultivation level into consideration.

'However, Sun Xiaohong is different. She is already slightly evolved and the source of her energy is comparable to a matured adult. As long as there is additional stimulation and guiding to guide her special ability to heal, she would be able to recover completely in half a year, providing yet another example to support my thesis...'

Fang Yuan's eyes twinkled with excitement.

'Of course, the subject of guiding one's special ability to stimulate spiritual droplets into another special ability is an interesting one too!'

Regardless of what Sun Xiaohong's initial special ability was, Fang Yuan was prepared to alter it completely and forcefully, turning it into a self-healing ability.

"How's it? What do you feel?"



After half an hour, Fang Yuan kept his needles and wiped off the sweat from his forehead.

"I... I felt a warm sensation in my body as though there was a flow of energy towards my thigh..."

Sun Xiaohong blushed in embarrassment and tears welled up in her eyes. "Just now... I felt an itch on my thigh!"

"Impossible!"

Qin Wanqing shook her head. "Xiaohong, you must be hallucinating. That must be it! This is impossible... It is just acupuncture. How can there be such a satisfactory result?"

Amidst Sun Xiaohong's parent's joy, she appeared dazed and desolated.

Fang Yuan gave a look of pity as he gazed at this female doctor.

How could she be so unwilling to accept the fact? What if she were to witness supernatural happenings in the future? Would she accuse the whole world of being wrong and become a frenzied person?

"Alright, Doctor Qin, I'll leave her in your capable hands!"

It was none of Fang Yuan's business as to how others viewed him. With a casual flick of his bag, Fang Yuan walked out with style. "From today onwards, I will perform my acupuncture on her weekly. Everything else remains the same for her."

"Alright, Doctor Fang!"

Qin Wanqing was stunned as she replied, giving a complicated look.

...

As the seasons went by, there was a commotion in Xijing University.

The graduating students were about to graduate, vacating their

spots for the freshmen.

To every university student, the thesis was the hardest thing to do. They would most of the time prepare many months in advance, and after many comments and feedback from their teachers, they would correct it countless times. It was as though they would climb through hell and back.

Interestingly, although those teachers would give them heartless comments and strict feedbacks, they would ultimately become lenient when it came to grading the thesis, allowing most of the students to graduate with a degree.

Of course, Fang Yuan had this experience in his past life and was prepared to not follow this path again.

It was Sunday.

The sun was shining brightly and there was a cool breeze.

Lecturer Wu from the Faculty of Social Sciences carried a huge stack of documents and ran towards the classrooms. As he opened the door, a room full of professors gazed towards him, making him embarrassed.

He had entered the wrong classroom.

"Mr Wu, are you here to listen as well?"

Before he could turn around, a familiar face greeted him and even passionately offered a seat to him.

"Yes... Haha..."

Lecturer Wu laughed and awkwardly accepted the seat as he prepared to give an excuse to take his leave later on.

'This arrangement seems like... the questioning of a thesis, something's not right...'

Lecturer Wu was a little confused. "Which faculty is this student from?"

"Don't you know? He is from the gifted class, a kid under Old He!"

Lecturer Wu got a prompt reply from his friend.

"Oh, then he must be around 16 or 17? No wonder there are so many people listening to him!"

Lecturer Wu seemed to understand the commotion. However, he slowly noticed more and more lecturers entering the classroom before his eyes became widened. "That is... Professor Tian from the Faculty of Traditional Chinese Medicine and Professor He from the Faculty of Biology... Oh my, why are the professors from the Faculty of Astronomy here as well? And the assessors too. What kind of thesis is so complicated? Inter-faculty as well?"

"You'll know after reading it..."

With a complicated look, his friend passed him a printed copy of the thesis.

"Oh? A discussion about the relationship between Traditional Chinese Medicine and the human body and their association with the movement of the celestial bodies? What a broad topic indeed..."

Lecturer Wu had also done research in biology before. After flipping through a few pages and reading about a few examples, his expression changed. "This is interesting..."

"Alright, the thesis defence will commence now!"

Just as Lecturer Wu became absorbed into the thesis, a stern voice was heard.

Shocked, he raised his head and realised that even the vice-principal was here and was sitting in front. 'There seems to be a lot of professional people for this thesis defence. Will the young man be stressed out?'

"Good day, lecturers! I am Fang Yuan!"

With this, a young man walked up to the podium. He was tall and

was smiling widely.

"Hmmm... The gifted are indeed more matured. If someone were to say that he was 20, I would still believe!"

As the teachers discussed among themselves, Fang Yuan ignored their small talks and spoke with a confident voice. "The topic of my thesis is... The Relationship between Traditional Chinese Medicine, Human Evolution and the Revolution of Celestial Objects!"

"As everyone knows, Traditional Chinese Medicine has its foundation on Yin, Yang and the Five Elements. The blood and veins are known as meridians, and the essence, energy and spirit make up the skeleton... However, the fact is that all of these are intertwined by energy! The human body is a world in itself and has its own natural circulatory system. Energy will flow within this system, and a small change within this circulation will be able to have a strong impact on the body. This is the basis for my theory of the Big Circulation!"

"There are many treasures within the human body, and the body is a world in itself. The Big Circulation allows energy to transcend the different parts of the body, activating the process of replacing old cells with new cells as well as the recovery process, if any... Please refer to the annexes for examples as to how treatment can be performed according to this theory, as well as my 13 Needles Technique..."

"The human body is a small world, and the universe is a large world. Both worlds can exchange energies, and this is the exchange between nature and the human body! The environment in the outside world will be affected by energy and will manifest in the small world of the human body. This is known as 'evolve'. I believe that we are in a prime time. As the energy in the universe becomes increasingly concentrated, humans will get closer and closer to a breakthrough!"

"Rubbish!"

At this point in time, a lecturer who was appointed an assessor could not hold it in any longer. "Rubbish! What the hell are you saying?"

"Please note that all I am stating are facts. As a scientist, I have predicted all of these with sufficient evidence..."

Fang Yuan remained composed. "You cannot deny its existence just because you have not seen it for yourself before!"

"Alright, so where's your evidence?"

"My evidence is in this stack of the date of our country's population as well as the fact that there is a new record being set in the Olympics..."

Fang Yuan held a timeline in his hands. "We can see for ourselves that before the world war, the record has never been broken. However, in a short span of the past 10 years, we have continuously broken the record numerous times. The quality of life has also gone up to be much higher than the accumulative quality of life for the past 100 years..."

"This is due to the improvements in technology and usage of them..."

"However, there are such examples in the ancient times as well. Please refer to the attached recording regarding the records of the Spiritual King Comet!"

Fang Yuan smiled. "In history, there were multiple encounters with the Spiritual King Comet. We have also observed its trend and predicted that it will visit our world every 100 years to bring change!"

"In this history recording, after the appearance of Spiritual King Comet, many humans have sighted ghosts and deities and therefore, we are able to deduce something from this... For instance, in recent years, there were revolutions in every country

which commence the era of sea exploration..."

# Chapter 404: Inheritance

---

The Spiritual King Comet was an unusual comet. It had a light green coloured comet tail and an orbital period of a thousand year. It roamed across the universe and flew by Planet Earth.

But the unusual thing was, every time it flew pass Planet Earth in history, many events would occur, especially the appearance and increase in divine and supernatural forces.

Of course, Fang Yuan did not mention these as they were too shocking and taboo.

"Of course... the example I will be giving is not a retortion but part of my evidence!"

Fang Yuan displayed large amounts of data and formulae, "We can look at this curve related to the evolution of the human physical body. I have divided it into four stages and each section represents 10 years. This coincides with the wave crest of Spiritual King Comet's radiation..... The first crest is at Year 994 which was the start of the World War. Hence, I predict, in the Year 1004 and Year 1014, human bodies would reach a new peak. 20 years later, in the Year 1024 when the Spiritual King Comet officially reaches the boundary of Planet Earth, it would bring about tremendous changes..."

"In conclusion, the core of my thesis is that the human body is a small world where energy circulates. Energy in the body can sense and exchange with energy outside the body and the body is also affected by this energy. The peaks in energy are also closely related to the Spiritual king Comet. Thus, its next arrival would definitely bring about changes to the environment of Planet Earth and hence cause humans to undergo tremendous changes!"

"Regarding the factuality of my thesis and the examples I have I given, we can look at three cases in the Traditional Chinese Medicine hospital."

"Lu Wei has already lived two months longer than his expected life expectancy. Zhao Guoping's late-stage stomach cancer has already been controlled. In particular, Sun Xiaohong has already recovered her knee-jerk reflex, her situation is very optimistic!"

"I suggest, the last part about the start of the period of great evolution in humans can be judged next year!"

Fang Yuan had an odd smile on his face and bowed down.

After his presentation, there was absolute silence.

Many old professors and judging professors had a dumbfounded expression on their face.

"In actual fact..... by changing the name of spiritual droplets to energy, it should be the easiest way for these old researchers to understand what I am saying?" Fang Yuan thought as he stared in front silently.

"Qigong has already been proven as pseudoscience! Student Fang Yuan, are you trying to reverse that verdict?"

Biology Professor Ho raised his glasses and said, "Professor Zhang, what do you think?"

"The orbital period of Spiritual King Comet is indeed very long. Also, surrounding it are some mysterious phenomenon that could not be explained until now..."

Professor Zhang was a bit hesitant.

"But just looking at the front part on Traditional Chinese Medicine with real medical cases as evidence, I think it is not bad!" Professor Tian immediately supported his own student.

"I oppose, letting him pass the thesis defence is going against the rigour of science! How can you be so sure to confirm these with just a few conjectures and medical miracles..."

The biology professor was moving his arms wildly while criticising Fang Yuan, which made Fang Yuan slightly pity him.



The poor professor's world view, philosophy of life and values were definitely on the verge of breaking apart.

"I agree to pass him... Professor Zhang, how about you?"

Professor Tian's palms were sweaty as he looked at Professor Zhang, the last person to make the decision.

"On principle, I agree, but, I reserve the rights to pursue this retrospectively. Just like what he said, we must be rigorous in our research and projects. We will wait and see next year!"

Professor Zhang stood up and left his seat.

As many teachers began to left, they still continued to discuss Fang Yuan's thesis.

Before He Tianming left, he patted Fang Yuan's shoulder with a mixed emotion on his face, as though he was comforting Fang Yuan and yet seemed like he had other feelings.

"Sigh... you!"

Professor Tian waited for Fang Yuan to come down before he approached him with high hopes, "In the end, you still presented it... I already told you early on, just with your front portions, you would be a new pioneer in the field of Traditional Chinese Medicine and you can even skip having a postgraduate degree. But you chose to add in those paranormal content or what not at the back which dragged you down..."

"Because truth... always rests with the minority!"

Fang Yuan smiled and appeared confident.

...

"Energy... Spiritual King Comet?"

That night, Fang Yuan's thesis was on top of a desk in a certain office.

"He's already reached this stage? What a genius!"

Director Zhou who especially went to Mountain Ocean City to invite Fang Yuan last time was reading the thesis word for word. He felt a bit conflicted as he thought, "Just that it's a pity... we cannot immediately verify whether his theory is correct or not. But just with the few medical cases, it should be of enough value..."

At Director Zhou's level, he could easily obtain the hospital's patient information. He was very clear that whatever Fang Yuan said were all true.

This was especially so for Zhao Guoping, he even controlled his condition and it was turning benign. Also, that Sun Xiaohong was also a miracle.

"It's a pity... that Fang's 13 Needles Technique could only be done by one and a half person in the entire Faculty of Traditional Chinese Medicine currently."

One was obviously Fang Yuan, while the other half a person was Professor Tian.

There was no choice, even if Fang Yuan further simplified his guiding needle process and energy transferring process, if one did not know how to use the technique, he still would not know even if it was simplified.

This was just like how that Qin Wanqing had no progress at all after learning for so long.

Director Zhou thought for a while and placed the thesis in a file. He chopped the "Secret" stamp on it and called his secretary over, "Send this to Mailbox 27, Copper Bay immediately!"

"Yes!"

The secretary bowed and ran out of the office.

In actual fact, that location was merely a layer of disguise. After the file was strictly inspected and passed around numerous times, it finally arrived at an underground military base.

A middle-aged person who just finished watching an experiment returned to his office and was reading the thesis intently. He then mumbled to himself, "Fang Yuan? Interesting..."

...

Autumn passed and it was now winter.

Although the thesis defence was not very smooth sailing, Fang Yuan still passed in the end. It was now the time period where the University presented the degree certificates and arranged jobs for the graduates.

However, it was as though Xijing University totally forgot about Fang Yuan. While other Year 4 students were already presented with job opportunities, there was absolutely no news for Fang Yuan.

Of course, these were all on the surface.

Fang Yuan also felt the level of security on him had already secretly increased, there were even traces that the medicinal herbs grown in his gardens were sampled for analysis.

It was a pity as Fang Yuan was extremely cautious and would leave absolutely zero traces. No matter how many times they checked on it, they could only reach the same conclusion that these medicinal herbs were just normal medicinal herbs.

Fang Yuan was also too lazy to be bothered by it and continued his usual routine of cultivating and going to the hospital.

After half a year, Fang Yuan felt his Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell was close to completion. He just needed a key opportunity for him to breakthrough.

"It's Doctor Fang!"

The moment Fang Yuan walked into the hospital, another doctor walking towards him had his eyes lit up immediately as though he just saw a god.

"Divine Doctor Little Fang!"

"Master Fang!"

The nearby patients and doctors erupted and swarmed towards Fang Yuan at once as though they were crazily chasing after a star.

Ever since Zhao Guoping's late-stage cancer became benign and he could even be discharged to go to work, the deserving title of "Divine Doctor" landed on Fang Yuan.

There were many people who came over wanting to observe, interact with and even learn from Fang Yuan. Of course, there were even more patients with all sorts of cancer that begged for Fang Yuan, some of their connections could not even be rejected by Dean Wang.

Seeing such, Fang Yuan could only keep repeating his cautions that his medical treatments were only an experiment and there would be sequelae and all sorts of uncertainty. Fang Yuan just kept trying to belittle himself and with a certain unknown force protecting him, he managed to have some peace.

Of course, there were still some instances every two or three days. Due to the rage in Qigong recently, many people wanted to cultivate too and came over to request Fang Yuan to accept them as disciples. There was even a youth that knelt in front of the hospital for three days straight, which made Fang Yuan want to roll his eyes.

Congratulations, youth, you were so close!

"Professor Tian, Dean Wang!"

Inside the hospital, Professor Tian and Dean Wang led a group of researchers who were staring intently at Fang Yuan.

"Sigh... after Old Lu persevered till now, he was in a critical condition a few times this morning..." One of the doctors said with his eyes red.

"His days are numbered, what can we do..."

Fang Yuan shook his head, "I'll go take a look at him!"

Naturally, a human's energy was not unlimited. At the stage of multiple organ failures, it was certain that his days were numbered, and one could only try his best to care for him.

The group of people arrived at the intensive care unit. There were numerous equipment and instruments surrounding Lu Wei, who was lying down on the bed in an unconscious state.

"He is in a deep coma, we have tried all sorts of method to wake him up but to no avail..." Dean Wang spoke softly.

"Bring me the needles!"

Fang Yuan furrowed his brows as he watched.

Professor Tian personally brought over a case of needles.

Fang Yuan picked up one needle and slightly squinted his eyes.

The surrounding doctors immediately stood still and kept quiet. One of them even took out a camera and began recording.

"Swoosh!"

Fang Yuan could not be bothered about what was happening behind him. The moment he picked up the needle, he was in an extremely calm state of mind. Suddenly, Fang Yuan moved; his right hand moved like the wind.

"Woosh! Woosh!"

In an instant, Old Lu was pricked 13 times and he jerked slightly.

When Fang Yuan poked his second needle, Old Lu's eyelids twitched before he woke up.

"Amazing!"

Dean Wang played back the scene and shook his head in awe at the same time, "This Fang's 13 Needles Technique requires one to prick 13 acupuncture points in a row at the start within 3 seconds.

There is only a margin of error of 0.01 second between each needle! In the entire Faculty of Traditional Chinese Medicine, only Professor Tian could barely achieve it... however..."

Dean Wang had already witnessed the effectiveness of this needle technique, but due to limitations and conditions, the technique could not be popularised. Thus, Dean Wang was naturally disappointed.

"Doctor Fang... I guess I can't make it to the next day!"

Lu Wei opened his mouth and smiled while talking with no tinge of fear in him, "Lastly, thank you... I have a courtyard house in Wangfujing, I shall give it to you! Cough cough... this is my gratitude to you!"

"What? The old man still has a courtyard house under him?"

Outside the ward, the children of Old Lu were enraged, "Dad! You can't be biased..."

"How can you leave such a good thing to an outsider!"

"Exactly..."

The group of middle-aged men and women stared angrily at their father's lifesaver, Fang Yuan, as though they immediately regarded him as an enemy.

"Cough cough... all of you unfilial sons and daughters, I am sick and none of you even wanted to bear the medical fees... I... I don't have such children! Doctor Fang, you must accept it!"

Old Lu's face was red.

"Mister Lu, I don't need this, but if you don't want to leave it for your children, you can give it to the country!"

Fang Yuan had a righteous expression on his face as he continued, "Treating you is my contribution to the field of medicine and definitely not for any personal gains."

# Chapter 405: A New Era

---

"Since that's what you have requested... cough cough... I'll donate it to the country!"

Old Lu mumbled under his breath.

"Mmm... Dean Wang, please help him see to it!"

Without paying any attention to the glares of the unfilial sons and daughters, Fang Yuan left the hospital and arrived outside.

It was winter and the sky was turning dark.

Snowflakes drifted from the sky, covering the ground with a glossy layer.

"Life... is this brittle!"

Fang Yuan closed his eyes and could feel the flickering flame of life.

"Hehe... Brother Fang, what are you looking at?"

Sun Xiaohong ran towards Fang Yuan and her face became flushed. She was gasping for air. "It's snowing. Why are you not carrying an umbrella? It's cold outside..."

"Just some random thoughts... Let's return to the wards!"

Fang Yuan stroked Sun Xiaohong's head and she squinted her eyes in comfort. Like a lazy cat, she almost purred.

"You can be discharged after a few more days of observation! Why are you not happy?"

Fang Yuan continued to probe. "You told me that you wouldn't want to spend an extra moment in the ward..."

"I'm happy..."

Sun Xiaohong twitched her nose and her eyes were filled with anticipation. "Can I come here to look for you next time?"

"Of course you can!"

Fang Yuan flicked the snowflakes from his clothing and brought Sun Xiaohong back to the ward. "Today is the last time I will perform acupuncture for you! Doctor Qin, you're here too!"

"Doctor Fang..."

Qin Wanqing bit her lip. With a complicated look, she took a deep and apologetic bow. "I'm sorry for misunderstanding you last time! Also... please accept me as your disciple! I am willing to take all kinds of hardship."

"It's nothing much... What happened previously was only normal and I'm sure other doctors would react the same way as you did... As for accepting you as a disciple, I don't have that practice..."

Fang Yuan rubbed his head. "However, you can approach me if you do have any questions regarding Traditional Chinese Medicine!"

"That's great! Thank you, Doctor Fang!"

No matter how bad Fang Yuan's name was in Xijing University, in Qin Wanqing's eyes, Fang Yuan would always be the noble doctor worthy of her respect.

With that, her face turned red in embarrassment. "We're about to usher in the new year... Doctor Fang, if you don't mind, please come over to my house to have a meal!"

After finishing her piece, Qin Wanqing started to scold herself inside as she did not know why she would do that.

The fact was that there were many male doctors who were wooing her. Therefore, it was an unexpected thing that she would personally invite another male doctor to her house for a meal.

"It is simply a meal to thank you!"

Looking at Fang Yuan's handsome face, her face became even redder as she tried to explain herself.



"It's the new year... In an instant, it's going to be the year 1004..."

Fang Yuan was filled with emotions. "It's alright... In fact, this year, I am preparing not to accept any invitations... I have already decided to be alone and settle down."

"That's a pity..."

Qin Wanqing forced a smile and thought of an excuse to take her leave.

...

"Phew..."

After a long morning of work, Fang Yuan returned to Xijing University and heaved a huge sigh. "I'm finally done with the day's work..."

The three medical cases in the hospital were concluded and Fang Yuan was too lazy to return there.

He only attended a few lectures where he could not reject the invitations.

"The new year will be here in a few days time..."

The ground was covered in snow. Because of the winter break, many students had returned to their homes, but there were still a few students lingering around in the university.

The empty school felt much more peaceful and vast.

The remaining students who stayed behind in school were full of energy and built a few snowmen on the field.

Fang Yuan had made a name for himself in the university. Those who could recognise him started to point fingers and talked about him.

This was especially after they had realised his thesis, which sounded like a joke.

Of course, there were a few of them who looked at him with pity.

Those who didn't know had thought that he had failed his thesis and had to retain another year because of the lack of job prospects.

"Relax..."

Witnessing this scene, Fang Yuan remained emotionless. "Time will pass very quickly..."

...

The harsh and cold winter did little to dampen the festivities.

After settling some stuff on hand, Fang Yuan returned to his hostel and waited for the day to arrive.

"Pa!"

Eye-catching fireworks exploded in the night sky.

As the thunderous fireworks exploded, celebratory music was broadcasted throughout the entire nation.

There were many people who knew that Fang Yuan was an orphan. Now that he had a different status, he had attracted the attention of many. For instance, Professor Tian had invited Fang Yuan to his house to usher in the new year and had unknowingly mentioned about his own granddaughter many times, making Fang Yuan speechless.

The good thing was that there were no phones installed in Fang Yuan's hostel and therefore no disturbance.

Fang Yuan crossed his legs and sat down as he waited for 12 midnight and the new year.

"It's about to begin!"

With the change of his expression, he could feel that the spiritual droplets in the surroundings became much more concentrated as the concentration increased by folds in an instant!

"Rumble!"

The changes which the spiritual droplets brought about were

immense.

In the next moment, with the inflow of spiritual droplets, Fang Yuan's body became a blackhole, sucking all the spiritual energy from the heavens and earth.

With this inflow of spiritual droplets, his Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell which was at a bottleneck instantly achieved a breakthrough to the 2nd Grade and began its climb on towards the 3rd Grade.

"After completion of the 1st Grade of the Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell, my physical body should be similar to that of the evolvers. By making use of the spike in spiritual droplets and actively absorbing it, I will be able to benefit more compared to them who are passively absorbing it!"

Fang Yuan's eyes glistened as he looked at his own stats:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 3.0

Spirit: 3.0

Magic: 3.0

Profession: ???

Cultivation: ???

Technique: [Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell (Grade 3 (57%))]

Skill: [Medicine (Level 3)], [Botany (Level 5)], [Fiery Golden Eyes (Level 1)]"

"1st Grade of Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell: Spiritual Droplets Affined Body transformed! Energy sense increased! 2nd Grade of Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell: New ability to release spiritual energy!"

"I have not only achieved a breakthrough to the 2nd Grade, but I

have also completed almost half of the 3rd Grade? Furthermore... The ability to release spiritual energy in the 2nd Grade..."

Previously, Fang Yuan was able to absorb spiritual droplets and turn them into spiritual energy. However, his physical limitation limited him to require the use of silver needles to transfer the spiritual energy.

However, after gaining the ability to release spiritual energy now, everything would be different.

"Furthermore... I will be able to use all sorts of talismans, daoist techniques and even control magical equipment... After removing this limitation, it is as though I am able to cast anything I want. Since I already have an idea of the different types of spiritual techniques, it will mean that my cultivation has already overtaken that of people like Guo Jing..."

Although the rules of reality in this realm was different from Fang Yuan's own realm, after gaining the ability to cast spells, Fang Yuan would merely have to alter the spiritual spells to follow the rules of this realm.

Fang Yuan tilted his head as he thought hard to himself. With the snap of his finger, an orange ball of flame appeared.

Seeing this, Fang Yuan started to smile. "This world... will be different!"

...

At the same time, in Mountain Ocean City.

"Hit him! Hit him!"

10 over gangsters surrounded Zhao Daniu and started to beat him up. "Let's see if you will still dare to open your roast fish stall and steal our business! Don't you have an idea as to who is in charge of this street?"

"Wreck his stall! Destroy it!"

"Clang!"

Amidst all the shattering, Zhao Daniu clenched his fist and his eyes turned bloodshot as he witnessed all his effort being wasted.

"F\*ck you for not giving me peace even on the night of new years!"

One of the gangsters spat a mouthful of spit on Zhao Daniu's face. "What a pity... you are still useless even though you're well built!"

"Bang!"

As soon as the gangster finished his piece, a fist slammed into his face, causing his teeth and blood to fly. It was as though he was crushed by a car. Even if he were to survive, he would still suffer a concussion.

"Ho! Ho!"

Zhao Daniu's eyes were bloodshot and he was breathing heavily. This honest bloke had finally exploded!

"Bang! Bang bang!!"

After all, he was also an evolver and had a physical body many times stronger than a normal human. He could even be considered a small superman.

As his wrath was incurred, the 10 over gangsters were no match for him. Within seconds, all of them were lying on the floor.

"You b\*stard, go f\*ck yourself!"

It was a fact that fighting would make one reckless and irrational.

A gangster shouted as he took out a knife and stabbed it towards Zhao Daniu's thigh.

"Kacha!"

With a distinct sound, the blade of the knife snapped into two.

"Mon... monster!"

As the gangster shrieked, a huge fist was coming his way.

Blood was spewing everywhere!

"What... what did I do?"

After a long while, Zhao Daniu came to his senses and had a look of confusion as he examined the mess around him.

He looked at his own pair of hands.

The skin on the back of his hand had a green hue and felt like a rock, as though it was indestructible.

"What in the world... what is this, wait a moment... I think I have hit someone..."

He lowered his head and examined the few gangsters which had attacked him earlier on.

The few who had suffered from fractures were a small issue, for the few gangsters had a punch in their chest and it was obvious that they would not be able to survive it.

A police siren was heard approaching.

"I... I killed!"

This man finally recalled all that had happened. Instead of fleeing, he knelt on the floor and started to cry...

...

At the same time, in the capital.

Sun Xiaohong was preparing dishes. Suddenly, she accidentally sliced her own finger.

"Boohoo... it's pain..."

As her fleshed turned pale, crimson red blood started to seep out of the wound and she was on the brink of crying.

However, before Sun Xiaohong could put a plaster on the wound, the deep cut had disappeared already.

"Eh? This is weird..."

She examined the wound for a long time before acknowledging the fact that it had recovered. With that, she was utterly confused.

...

In a particular guest room.

Guo Jing's expression changed as he examined the spiritual light flashing on the magical equipment and talismans. He was filled with emotions. "This is not an illusion! Everything is real... The era of energy depletion... is over!"

# Chapter 406: Ambush

---

In an underground base.

Telephones were ringing non-stop and even on new year's day, every employee from top to bottom was present.

On top of that, they seemed to be even busier than usual days.

"Reporting! There is news from different locations with sightings of unusual bodies!"

"There is an inferno man appearing in Musical City. He has caused widespread fire and there are 23 casualties as of now..."

"Citizens from Black River City have reported sightings of an iceman walking on the surface of water..."

The police of Mountain Ocean City have caught a mass murderer with skin as hard as rock. He is impenetrable and in a single fight, he had killed 1 and injured 13 others..."

...

News of unusual sightings poured in, making everyone feel vexed.

In the headquarters, a middle-aged man frowned as he looked at a screen before him.

On a static screen, a normal looking young man started to hold his throat and cough vigorously.

"Rumble!"

A ball of flames shot out from his mouth as though he was a fire-spitting dragon.

The middle-aged man was stunned and expressionless. Slowly, he looked at the other screens. Finally, he froze on his chair and started to read a printed copy of a thesis on his table:

Before the arrival of the Spiritual King Comet, there were 4



instances of spikes in the radiation of spiritual energy. I shall call them occurrences!"

"I the year 994, the first world war began and that was the first occurrence!"

"The second occurrence will come in the year 1004 and will bring about many changes to humans, including the concept of life itself... It is not simply the strengthening of one's physical body, but the improved usage of energy..."

...

As the middle-aged man read through the thesis, he had a solemn look and went through every single word in detail.

After a long while, he seemed to have snapped out of his trance as he plucked the telephone from the desk. "... That's right! It's me! I order you! Immediately protect this scientist! At all costs! That's right, now!" Also... Immediately seal the information on the thesis and guard against it from being stolen or leaked out. Everything on the thesis is now classified!"

After passing down his orders, he hung up and pressed his palm on his forehead, depressed. "D\*mn it... Without sealing up all these information timely, I'm sure that some of it would have leaked out... Those subordinates are too slow when performing their duties..."

However, he knew that his subordinates had treated the thesis as a joke. If not for Director Zhou's report, this thesis would not have landed in his hands.

At this point, the middle-aged man finally smiled. "Old Zhou... He is still talented in scouting the gifted."

...

In the night, there was hardly any peace.

"Baka!"

In a normal-looking Chinese courtyard house, a dim light covered the four corners.

This was a form of protection as it would sound an alarm as soon as there were trespassers.

The middle-aged couple living here were but an act. In an underground room, the owner of the house peered through his presbyopic glasses and examined the thesis on his hands. He had a ferocious but passionate look on his face. "How could someone even predict this? What a genius... Mr Fang, why are you not our countrymen!"

Even in the Middle Continent, Chinese Country had its competitors.

Although living in seclusion, this country was still strong.

"Director, what should we do next?"

A woman stood straight and enquired respectfully. If Fang Yuan was here, he would find this woman familiar, for she was Thomas's translator - Little Night of the Plains.

"It's already too late to mobilize him!"

The director rubbed his eyebrows and revealed a demonic look. "Activate all our spies to invite him to our country..."

"Must we... must we do this?"

Little Night shuddered. This would mean that all their arrangements in the capital would be for nought.

"He... he is worth this. He might be the hope that our country needs to rise up once again. Everyone has the duty to sacrifice themselves for the country. I can even give up my own life without hesitation!"

The middle-aged man retorted.

"I understand!"

Little Night knelt down and kowtowed. "Please pass any instructions you have for me!"

"No! You and the other 'Nightingales' will not have to participate in tomorrow's activation. Conversely... I want the few of you to stay in ambush. If our plan were to fail, the few of you will be the backup plan!"

The middle-aged director was solemn. "We need to try all means and ambush that young man or even the people around him who are informed of the classified information. Even if we have to complete this mission like a dog, we will still do so!"

"May our country live forever!"

A burning fire of passion raged in Little Night's eyes.

...

"The whole night was filled with the sirens of the police. It seems like this city was not so peaceful last night..."

Fang Yuan sat up on his bed and stretched himself.

The evolution brought about by the spike in spiritual droplets was not something normal people were able to control.

Those naturally-born evolvers would not be able to control themselves and therefore create chaos. This was the problem of the realm!

If there was the existence of the internet, the headlines would be filled with news of these evolvers.

It was not simply becoming stronger, but there was the development of completely new special abilities.

Even in this era, the speed at which information was transmitted was still extremely quick. In such a rapidly-evolving age, it was already impossible to cover up news.

'However...'

Fang Yuan opened his door and gazed at the people outside. "What are you guys intending to do?"

"Comrade Fang Yuan!"

A female soldier in her uniform gave Fang Yuan a military salute and handed to him a document. "You have been assigned a job. Please follow us!"

"... An investigator from the Research Centre of Supernormal Humans...."

Fang Yuan looked at them and was speechless. "Alright... Although you guys did not go through the university and delivered this personally to my hostel, I still very thankful for it. However, why do we have to leave now? I have only just woken up and have yet to brush my teeth..."

"We can settle these issues along the way! My name is Ye Yingzi and I am in charge of your safety!"

With a stern voice, Ye Yingzi spoke once more. "Is there anything else that you need to pack?"

"Just my clothing."

"Do we really need... to resort to this?" Fang Yuan knew the answer, but he asked anyway.

"Yes we do. Comrade Fang Yuan, you are now different. Your wisdom is the country's greatest asset and therefore, your personal safety is of paramount importance!"

Ye Yingzi quickly called for a few soldiers to enter and help Fang Yuan to pack up. She was a little confused. "Are there any documents that we have to bring along?"

"Nope, they're all right here!"

Fang Yuan knocked on his head and walked out of his hostel.

Along the road outside, 6 jeeps were parked and guards equipped with rifles were standing in their positions, extremely still.

"..."

Seeing this, Fang Yuan let out a bitter smile. "Did you guys waited for an entire night here?"

"2 hours and 37 minutes!"

"Alright... It seems like I will never return here in the future!"

Fang Yuan shrugged his shoulders. "The aunties from the neighbourhood committee must think that I am a dangerous fugitive to be able to activate so many soldiers to capture me on new year's day!"

"If you think that this is a problem, we can explain to the neighbourhood committee...."

"Forget it!"

Fang Yuan climbed up the jeep parked in the middle.

The jeep was specially manufactured and the windows behind were completely tinted and unable to see through.

"I'm sorry... This was an urgent order from the headquarters!"

Ye Yingzi sat beside Fang Yuan. A fragrance smell filled the jeep as she took out a few bags. "This is your breakfast..."

"Oh, thank you very much!"

Fang Yuan opened the bag, revealing dough fritters, soup dumplings and roasted donkey meat. It was the standard breakfast which he had gotten used to.

As he ate the breakfast, he felt a sense of familiarity but was not surprised.

With the country's power, he could never hide his background and they would be able to get all the information about him, even the breakfast which he liked.

"Where are we going now?"

"The research base!"

"Do we really need so much security? Are we overdoing things?"

"This is according to the requirements of the headquarters, so we are not overdoing things!"

...

After a full meal, Fang Yuan probed further and started to understand more about his predicament.

The jeep drove steadily. Although Fang Yuan could not see the surroundings outside clearly, he knew that he had already left the city and was in the countryside.

"Rumble!"

Suddenly, there was an explosion and flames broke out in front.

The huge vibration broke the neat line of jeeps and even flipped Fang Yuan's jeep.

"Da da! Da da!"

Amidst gunshots, Fang Yuan and Ye Yingzi climbed out and were surrounded by blood and fire.

They were in a wilderness and the remaining soldiers formed a defensive circle around Fang Yuan.

The illusionary silhouette of the enemies appeared from all directions. Accompanying roars from a few wild beasts, a few black dogs the size of bulls rushed forward, fearing nothing.

"It's an ambush!"

From her earpiece, she had just received news of an ambush. Ye Yingzi's expression changed. Gritting her teeth, she plucked out the gun from her waist, held Fang Yuan in her other hand and slowly shifted her position.

"The enemy's firepower is very strong and they seemed to be controlled by a puppet master from Japan... D\*mn it, what are the brothers at immigration doing? How could they let so many

dangerous spies enter our country?"

Ye Yingzi held Fang Yuan and retreated.

"We finally meet... The power of this heat weapon..."

Fang Yuan was extremely nimble and could still pay attention to his surroundings.

"Such firepower... if we were in a undulating terrain, we will still have a chance to escape by casting spells. However, face to face, we would be shot and our bodies would be full of holes!"

"Let's go!"

Ye Yingzi knew that they were disadvantaged as well and brought Fang Yuan to hide in a forest. "This is our home ground. Reinforcements will arrive shortly. Comrade Fang Yuan?"

"Mmm, I'm fine!"

Fang Yuan lightly slapped himself as though he was a normal human in shock.

However, he was observing Ye Yingzi who had a face of justice. He wondered if she would still risk her life for him if he were to be abducted away.

# Chapter 407: Investigations

---

Fortunately, such a test of her loyalty did not happen.

The reinforcements came promptly. With a few huge explosions, machine guns filled the place and the tables were turned.

Even the few weird looking huge dogs turned into a bloodied mess under the rapid fire of the machine guns.

In a few moments, a party or rescuers entered the forest and successfully located Ye Yingzi.

After ensuring that the surroundings were safe, Ye Yingzi then brought Fang Yuan out to see the massacre.

Gun wounds were not simply thumb-sized holes in the body. Instead, it was a bloodied mess and the internal organs were ripped apart. The entire place seemed like an execution square and even the experienced soldiers became nauseous just by looking at the scene.

"Let's go!"

It seemed as though tears were welling up in Ye Yingzi's eyes. Bringing Fang Yuan to a new care, they travelled for a long period before finally reaching a particular base.

"I am the in-charge of the Research Centre of Supernormal Humans - Xi Menjian. Welcome, comrade Fang Yuan!"

A seemingly unstable middle-aged man personally walked out to welcome Fang Yuan and gave him a friendly pat on his shoulder. "I've heard that you encountered a few troubles on your way here. I hope you're ok!"

"It's alright, it's just a little unexpected that... is it worth it to do all these? After all, I am only a student."

Fang Yuan forced a smile.

"Of course it's worth it!"



Xi Menjian's expression turned to a solemn one. "Do you know that for this operation, Japan has sacrificed most of their spies and their arrangements in the capital, putting 10 over years of effort to waste... If we came a little later, we would be able to host the United Nations Conference at your hostel!"

Xi Menjian joked and waved his hands. "Alright! We don't have enough time to give you a welcome party. Send the order, we shall commence the meeting!"

...

In the underground base.

Seated in the huge conference room, everyone looked serious as they watched a clip.

The two groups of people here were very distinct. One group was made up of investigators who were mostly scientists. The other group was made up of stern-looking military personnel who sat upright.

"This is the situation report which we have received 6:00 am in the morning today. Furthermore, more problems are arising as we speak... All of these happenings only prove that Comrade Fang Yuan's theory of the spike in energy due to the arrival of the Spiritual King Comet, the theory of the Big Circulation and the evolving human body are all true!"

Xi Menjian quickly took the attendance of those who had arrived and Fang Yuan immediately felt as though everyone in the room was staring at him, trying to understand his thoughts.

"Because of this, the country has pledged more resources to our research centre to assist in investigations. I have already passed a military order in the presence of the chief. We will come up with a solution to the crisis as soon as possible, placing our priority on protecting the lives of the people and their properties!"

After speaking in a strict tone, Xi Menjian looked towards Fang

Yuan. "Comrade Fang Yuan, do you have anything to add?"

"Hmm, there is indeed something for me to add!"

Fang Yuan nodded his head and felt inadequate for not having glasses to push up. "The spike in energy will not only benefit those evolvers. We need to pay attention to those who have inherited some sort of skill from their ancestors... For instance, martial arts, daoist techniques et cetera. We need to understand that even a normal human with potential will be able to become supernormal under such circumstances. They might be even harder to deal with compared to those evolvers."

The revival of any ancient supernormal influence would bring about a great disruption to any present society.

Xi Menjian maintained his solemn face. "This is indeed true. We have already thought about this point and regarding it... I shall read out a new nomination here!"

"Pa!"

Everyone in the conference room stood up.

"... To deal with the current situation, the Religious Bureau have appointed Comrade Xi Menjian as the Chief of Bureau, Comrade Zhou Ming as the Assistant Chief of Bureau. Their job scopes would be to manage supernatural events, take charge of a quick response team and head the Office of Truth Investigation... Furthermore, Comrade Fang Yuan shall be invited as the special consultant!"

"Pa! Pa!"

There was a rousing applause.

Fang Yuan felt a little conflicted. 'Isn't it just a bureau to investigate supernatural happenings? They have gone to such lengths to even think about classifying it under religion...'

"Alright, please carry out your tasks according to your

allocations. Dismissed!"

Xi Menjian was a decisive person and quickly ended the meeting.  
"Comrade Fang Yuan, please stay!"

"Chief of Bureau!"

Fang Yuan took a bow. "What instructions do you have for me?"

"Mmm, Comrade Little Fang, you are about to join a whole new working environment. What requests do you have? Please let me know!"

Against a real talent, Xi Menjian was still extremely respectful.  
"The Assistant Chief of Bureau, Zhou Ming is He Tianming's boss! He was the one that sent you to the gifted class, Director Zhou!"

"Oh, so it's him!"

Fang Yuan displayed an expression of shock.

"Mmm... The future of the world is changing and the country needs more talents... By telling you all these, I am hoping that you will not have any more confusion. Do you have any more requests?"

Xi Menjian asked with a straight face.

"Although I have to keep mum about my job, I'm sure I still have my personal freedom, right?"

Fang Yuan thought about it for a while before asking.

"The uniqueness of this job as an investigator will have a certain degree of secrecy. However, we will not restrict your personal freedom. The only thing you will have to do is to report whenever you are leaving or staying in the base, and everything will have to be subject to my approval. This is to ensure that the security department can ensure your safety!"

Xi Menjian replied.

"Alright, I have no further questions for now. I request to start

my job immediately!"

Fang Yuan shouted.

"Alright!"

Xi Menjian was evidently satisfied. "Please let me know if you have any other needs. As long as they are required for experimentation, you don't have to hold back!"

He sounded serious, and Fang Yuan knew that he was.

After saying their goodbyes, Fang Yuan silently left the conference room.

"Good day, Consultant Fang!"

Ye Yingzi stood by the door as though she had waited for quite a while. "I am your orderly from now on! Let me bring you to your bedroom!"

"Orderly?"

Fang Yuan seemed confused.

"Yes! Although you still need to go through an officiating ceremony, in the database, you are already a major!"

Ye Yingzi gave Fang Yuan a military salute.

"Alright..."

Fang Yuan started to examine the weird-looking surroundings. "This place is not too bad!"

Although it was an underground laboratory, the facilities here were top-notch and the scientists were treated well.

Of course, the majority of the scientists were in their 70s or 80s. Only a young face could stand out among them. "Are you Fang Yuan? I am Li Zilong, a professor in Biology. I have already read through your thesis about evolvers umpteen times and it is still unbelievable..."

The 30-year-old young man shook Fang Yuan's hand

passionately. "With your addition, our team will be more efficient than ever!"

"It is already..."

Fang Yuan had to act humble.

Li Zilong had a prestigious background and his energetic eyes made Fang Yuan feel as though he was dangerous.

Using his Fiery Golden Eyes, Fang Yuan could see that this person's life energy was extremely concentrated, especially at the portion of the brain. He was an evolver who had an evolved brain, a talent among the talents.

"I'll have to add something. I am an evolver with an evolved brain, and my evolution is already 20% completed! I have only just awakened the force of my mind yesterday!"

Li Zilong raised his glasses and his handshake was full of energy. "Of course, my abilities are only basic and they still have to be trained!"

"Hmm?!"

Fang Yuan was surprised at Li Zilong's honesty and started to think to himself.

Fang Yuan was all along acting as a gifted person with a super brain, right?

Since Li Zilong had no reservations about hiding anything, he must have received special treatment from the higher-ups.

To any organisation especially one involved in scientific research, the more of such talents they could have, the better.

"I have always been smarter than the average person. However, how do you measure the rate of development of the brain?"

Fang Yuan piqued.

"It was impossible last time, but things are different now!"

Li Zilong's eyes were burning with passion. "Are you interested in going for the test?"

"It would be disrespectful to reject your offer!"

Fang Yuan smiled and followed Li Zilong into a laboratory.

"I would like to inquire about something. Where do we get the subjects to research on?"

Unknowingly, Fang Yuan asked.

"This... Most of them are volunteers from the army. I occasionally volunteer myself as well..."

Li Zilong answered without hesitation. "Of course... there are a few evil convicts as well... However, we do not perform destructive experiments and therefore, no one has to worry about being cut up..."

'Who would've thought that.... Li Zilong would be so distasteful in his jokes...'

Fang Yuan sat on a cushioned chair and remained speechless. Wires were being attached to his head.

"This is the latest instrument which I have developed, the Brainwave Scanner. It is able to retrieve information from the human brain and from there predict the development level of the brain... However, it's a pity that there is only one such instrument in existence!"

Li Xilong started to touch the screen beside the instrument. His fingers started to work quickly and in no time, a scanned image appeared.

The polygraph printer beside the screen started to whirl into life, sketching lines on a piece of paper.

10 minutes later, Li Zilong raised his glasses and read the report.

"Indeed what I've guessed! Your brain is 15% developed! You are even smarter than the top scientists in the world!"

"Only 15%?"

Fang Yuan calmly sat upright, wore his clothes and did not seem disappointed.

"Mmm, an average person would have a development level of around 1% to 5%, and the smartest scientists would at most achieve a development level of 10%..."

There were flames of passion in Li Zilong's eyes. "You are similar to me! Did you awaken any special ability last night?"

"Does my acupuncture technique count?"

Fang Yuan tilted his head and threw out the excuse which he had long prepared. "I can feel that the 'energy' in my body is increasing. If I were to perform acupuncture now, I'm sure I will be able to achieve what I cannot previously!"

"We have long noticed your magical acupuncture technique, Major Fang Yuan! Needless to say, you have already exceeded the standards of the world in terms of healing..."

Li Zilong continued. "Fang Yuan, are you heading towards the direction of performing research on evolvers?"

"Actually, I always had a thought in my mind..."

With a serious look, Fang Yuan continued. "The destructive power of evolvers are too much. Even if we are able to come up with a temporary solution to keep them under control, we will still not be able to control them in the future. Therefore, I have thought of a unique idea which might be able to help such a situation..."

# Chapter 408: Demon Restraining Cuffs

---

In an enclosed environment within the underground laboratory, time passed very quickly.

A month had passed.

Xi Menjian rubbed his forehead as he left a meeting.

Everyone was worried about the outbreak of evolvers around the world and the strict security protocols that were put in place to deal with the situation.

'Fortunately.... The probability of such an obvious special ability is extremely low among the evolvers... However, considering the slow increase in energy as well as the 3rd occurrence which is about to happen...'

Xi Menjian started to have a headache. 'Finally, the information about the old cultivators... Sigh, could this world be plagued with demons in the future?'

"Chief of Bureau!"

At this point in time, a secretary came running in. "There's news from the research centre. Experiment No. 2 was a success!"

"What?"

Elated, Xi Menjing peered out. "It's Comrade Fang Yuan, one of the two evolvers with evolved brains! Great! Let's return now, for this is a rare piece of good news!"

At this point in time, within the underground base.

Fang Yuan gazed at the screen and saw a familiar face.

The subject was tall and skinny and had a tanned skin. It was his friend from the orphanage, the national athlete who did the country proud - Liu Fei.

"Let's begin the experiment now!"



"The subject of the experiment is Liu Fei, a speed evolver. After the second occurrence, nothing happened. His previous record for the 100m sprint still stands at 8.9 seconds!"

...

The assistant by the side used a robotic voice to report the details.

Fang Yuan nodded his head. Even among the first few evolvers, there was only a handful who were able to awaken their special ability under the influence of the second occurrence.

However, they were normal humans who became supernormal overnight as well! This was the potential of the evolvers!

"Ready... go!"

Liu Fei had volunteered himself to become the subject of experimentation and contribute to his country.

Without emotions, Fang Yuan coldly gave the order.

"Whoosh!"

On the screen, Liu Fei sped towards the finish line like the wind.

"The data obtained during experimentation is a new record! 8.5 seconds!"

The researcher exclaimed.

This result was able to shatter the world record once more.

'It seems like the second occurrence is still effective!'

Fang Yuan nodded his head and commanded. "Let's commence the control experiment!"

"Yes!"

In the screen, a researcher made Liu Fei wear a metal bracelet.

"Kacha!"

As soon as the bracelet was fixed on Liu Fei's arm, his expression

changed.

"Let's begin!"

"Whoosh!"

It was another 100m sprint, and the new results came out. "13.02 seconds!"

"After a body checkup, we found out that the energy in his body was restricted and the muscles in his legs are stiffened..."

"Let's change the subject!"

Fang Yuan nodded his head and changed the subject.

"This is a volunteer from the army, Qian Yingming. He had awakened his special ability to spit fire after the second occurrence. The fire which he spits out can reach 1,000 degrees Celsius and he has no control over it..."

The screen changed and now displayed a charred interior of a laboratory.

A young man was coughing and sneezing inside. Every time he did so, sparks would come out from his nose, charring the entire room.

With that, he was being made to wear a metal necklace around his neck. With a look of confusion, he started to sneeze and cough with all his might but there were no longer any sparks.

"Send in the 3rd group!"

"4th group!"

...

"Hmm, the experiment on subject No. 2 is still the most successful!"

After comparing 10 groups together, Fang Yuan rubbed his chin.

"Congratulations!"

Li Zilong walked in. "The metal cuffs made from special gold are smelted with your hidden needles, which will pierce through their acupunctures, disrupting the flow of their internal energy and from there, disrupt the balance in their small worlds! This is a genius idea... But only you will be able to think of it!"

"How? Have you thought of a name for it?"

"Let's call it the 'Demon Restraining Cuffs'!"

Fang Yuan rubbed his chin and a playful thought came to his mind.

"Mmm... no matter how powerful and evil the evolver may be, as long as he is wearing the Demon Restraining Cuffs, he will have to obediently face the law... This is great!"

Xi Menjian walked in and shook Fang Yuan's hand. "Comrade Fang, your design is going to help us so much!"

"Chief, please be patient. There are still a few things to be improved. Firstly, we have to consider the rarity of this gold. Furthermore, the detailed smelting will have to go through rounds of discussion, for the hidden needles and engravings in the cuffs will have to be extremely accurate and be manufactured according to the standards of the human anatomy..."

"Of course, the most important thing is to concede that these cuffs will still have their limitations. If the evolver has too much energy in them, they might be able to free themselves by using brute force!"

Fang Yuan calmly analysed the potential problems and raised his glasses.

Since he had joined the scientific community, how could he not get a pair of glasses to display his maturity?

Although his eyesight was perfect, he had made a degreeless glasses which could cover up the appearance of his Fiery Golden Eyes if he were to use them.

"Don't worry, these problems are not problems!"

Xi Menjian patted his chest with confidence. "We have a huge population compared to other countries and we can use brute force to solve all these problems with all the brains we have. With that, we can create an equipment which the criminals will have to worry about!"

...

Since the country was in favour of it, the production process quickly commenced.

In a few days, the first factory was built to produce the special gold and engineers were gathered for a meeting.

"We have a military order from the higher-ups. Regardless of price and resources, we have to smelt as many special gold ingots as possible. We have to meet both the quality and quantity required... Don't even mention any potential difficulties. Just resolve these difficulties and raise requests if any of you might have any requirements. The higher-ups have already sent someone to the factory to manage all of you, and he is sent here to resolve your problems. Comrades, this is the task of the government. We must complete it!"

At the same time.

From all locations, the most highly-skilled people were called forth.

Even though they might be the backbone of their own factories, they could only put down whatever they had on their hands and gather at a specific place to become part of a larger project.

Mountain Ocean City, Red Star Machinery Factory.

"Leader... we cannot let Master Guo leave. He is the support of the entire factory. Without him, a lot of machines in our factory will no longer be able to operate!"

The plump factory manager held the phone, nodded his head and had an uneasy expression.

"We cannot change to someone else. This is a tasking from the government and this request was directly from the manpower branch... Furthermore, this is a contribution to the country! Why should we be against it?"

"Yes, yes!"

The factory manager stood up straight. "However, the productivity of our factory..."

"Don't worry about it. We have thought about it as well as we assure you that we will not make your current load heavier. Tell Master Guo not to worry about anything and just do his best... Didn't you praise him for his craftsmanship before? If he is unable to deliver, he will make our factory lose face! As long as he completes the tasking, everyone will remember him!"

"Yes, I'll promise that he will complete the tasking!"

The factory manager was filled with excitement. "I'm not self-praising, but Master Guo is a highly talented craftsman. Nothing can trouble him!!"

After a long while, the factory manager hung up and gazed towards a middle-aged man. "Master Guo... look, the country has chosen you specifically..."

"Since that is so, I shall make a move now!"

Master Guo smiled. Although he was only a middle-aged man, his hands were already full of calluses, which was evidence of his rich experience. "Since the higher-ups value me, I cannot be disrespectful..."

...

The entire Chinese Country was extremely happening as the country's machinery was running to complete the taskings.

Within the research centre.

Xi Menjian looked at Fang Yuan and felt a little conflicted. "Comrade Fang Yuan, I will surely approve if you would like to go for a break. However, your personal safety is important, extremely important!"

"I know, but I do have self-defence capabilities to some extent..."

Fang Yuan smiled. "Furthermore... I am very interested in the quick response team of the Religious Bureau... After all, I can only progress well if I am able to obtain first-hand data about the Demon Restraining Cuffs..."

"Don't even think about it!"

Xi Menjian shook his head. "I rather give you a long break than let you out to fight!"

It was crazy to let a scientist carry a gun to fight a war outside.

"The times have changed..."

Fang Yuan did not give a direct reply and instead, gave a mysterious smile.

"Alright, I'll approve of your break in advance. However, I will need to add a few more guards for you and you cannot leave the capital..."

Xi Menjian looked at Fang Yuan and knew that Fang Yuan was an extremely determined person. He could not convince Fang Yuan otherwise as he held his head, conflicted.

"Alright!"

Fang Yuan took a bow, left the room and closed the door.

...

After returning to his room, he received a pleasant surprise.

"I am the new guard, Zhao Daniu, reporting for duty!"

Zhao Daniu appeared much stronger than before. Donning a

military uniform, he saluted Fang Yuan and had a look of happiness in his eyes.

"Haha... it's you!"

Fang Yuan smiled, walked forward and gave a friendly punch to Zhao Daniu. "What happened?"

"This was all your idea... Initially, the orphanage had sent me to a factory to work. I could not stand it when then factory manager started to touch the girls and take advantage of them. Therefore, I punched him and left to start my own stall, selling barbecued fish..."

Seeing a familiar face, Zhao Daniu became much more relaxed. "My business picked up and I had done the calculations. In a year, I would be able to year at least 10,000 dollars. However, at the end of the year, I met a few gangsters. I accidentally killed one of them and was captured by the police. However, I was fortunate enough to have met Officer Han who had given me the option to redeem myself by working for him..."

"Cough cough!"

Ye Yingzi coughed. "Comrade Zhao Daniu, watch your image. Also, Comrade Fang Yuan is the leader, so mind your language..."

"Hehe... I'm stupid and I've almost forgotten about it!"

Zhao Daniu smiled sheepishly as he scratched his head.

"Haha... Daniu, don't you worry. Since you are now following me, I will make sure that you are well taken care of... let's go for a roast meat feast in the canteen! I also secretly brought along two bottles of alcohol..."

Fang Yuan paid no attention to what Ye Yingzi said as he placed his arms around Zhao Daniu and spoke with authority.

Even Ye Yingzi was speechless when she saw such an attitude from Fang Yuan...

# Chapter 409: Illness

---

Heart Questioning House.

"Sorry... our boss is really not around! There's no more stock left for Opening Point Incense..."

Both Ding Qiuyu and Zhao Lihong smiled while accompanying their last customer away. As they looked at the "deposit" he insisted on leaving behind, they could only give an awkward smile.

"Dear... I think there are at least 10,000 dollars in this stack of cash!"

Ding Qiuyu counted the cash and was at a slight loss of words, "Little Boss is such a capable person, can't believe the Opening Point Incense he casually made would sell so well! I guess you can't even earn as much by selling antiques?"

"I know right!"

Zhao Lihong was a youthful university student too, with a mischievous smile on her face, she said, "If you can get a guy like Little Boss, you would have no worries for the rest of your life... Sister Ding, you have to work hard!"

"Rude lass, it's not like you don't know my situation..."

Ding Qiuyu rolled her eyes and continued, "Lately, Chen Bo has been acting all weird. He keeps saying he wants to breakthrough and reach a new height, it's like he's crazily obsessed... He even asked me for Opening Point Incense and he was prepared to buy a batch of it!"

"There are so many weird things happening lately!"

Zhao Lihong's expression turned mysterious and she continued, "There are rumours that some people saw a ghost on the path behind our school!"

"Also, the fire at 2nd West Street, some people swore they saw



the God of Fire..."

"Furthermore, many people also had odd sightings at the old pagoda trees at the west of the city and the Dragon King Well at the east of the city... This can't be good too, the world is changing, I better go to General's Temple on Green Phoenix Mountain to ask for an effective talisman to ward off evil!"

...

Zhao Lihong was making a big deal out of the events as she counted with her fingers.

"Miss Zhao, please... you are a modern university student, how can your brains be so feudal and filled with trash?"

Ding Qiuyu rolled her eyes and then asked curiously, "Eh? General's Temple on Green Phoenix Mountain, this name sounds familiar..."

"It was originally a normal temple, but lately, I heard there's a new daoist elder there, he's amazing! He can do palm reading, stop your misfortunes, and if you ask for a son, he will grant you a son!"

"Cough cough..."

Ding Qiuyu was even more speechless, "Ask for a son? This seems like the duty of the Goddess of Fertility, there's no link to the name of General's Temple at all?"

"Doesn't matter if the name has a link or not, as long as it's effective... Think about it, Boss was gone for so long and we have no news of him at all, we should go and pray for his safety! What if Boss was really met with some danger? At least we can still burn more paper money for him..."

As Zhao Lihong saw Ding Qiuyu slightly wavered, she immediately persuaded her.

"That's true... we should go together one day, I heard the sceneries on Green Phoenix Mountain is not bad!"

Indeed, Ding Qiuyu had a change of mind.

"Cough cough... I'm not dead yet, burn paper money for me?"

Fang Yuan stepped into the store with a sour face.

He was very disappointed to hear those words the moment he returned to the capital.

"You are fine, Little Boss! That's great!"

Ding Qiuyu went forward as though she wanted to take a good look at Fang Yuan. However, she suddenly saw Ye Yingzi and Zhao Daniu standing beside him and was alarmed, "The two of them are..."

"My bodyguards!"

Fang Yuan scratched his head, "Zhao Daniu, Ye Yingzi!"

"Wow! Boss, you are really rich! You even have bodyguards, just like in the movies..."

Zhao Lihong's eyes lit up. She was not interested in Ye Yingzi at all and instead, she was very interested in Zhao Daniu. Her eyes kept looking at Zhao Daniu.

"If I said these were just the bodyguards they could see and that I have eight more hidden around me, I wonder what will their expressions be like..." Fang Yuan thought to himself secretly.

Fang Yuan was then curious, "Why are both of you around?"

"Oh, it's because business in the shop has been too good lately! Many are attracted by the Opening Point Incense!"

Ding Qiuyu took out the ledger, "Boss, the stock you kept has all been sold out! Just now, there was even a customer who wanted to buy it for 1,000 dollars per tael! He even left tens of thousands of dollars as deposit!"

"Ah, you all have worked hard! You all can split the cash as your bonuses!" Fang Yuan said nonchalantly.

People nowadays were pure and honest.

If it was in Fang Yuan's previous realms, when the Boss disappeared for a few months and there was so much money left behind, it would not be out of the norm for anything to happen.

Of course, these two women might have to count themselves lucky for not having any ill-intentions with the money.

Else, Fang Yuan aside, the force represented by Ye Yingzi would definitely teach them a good lesson.

"It's most likely those cultivators who discovered the use of my Opening Point Incense..." Fang Yuan thought.

With the support of the country, Fang Yuan was no longer interested in these people.

"From now on, we will stop selling the Opening Point Incense and don't accept any more deposits. For those we have accepted, they can count themselves lucky! I will ask someone to bring over the stock!"

Fang Yuan looked around the shop and was very satisfied as the shop was running well. He then left the shop.

On the journey, Ye Yingzi left for a short while before returning and said, "Major Fang, we investigated the surroundings of your Heart Questioning House and discovered traces of spy activities. It can be confirmed that at least half of those customers purchasing Opening Point Incense were intelligence officers from other countries... Also, the other half are cultivators from nearby! The social relationships are very complex!"

"I know, hence, this is the last time!"

Fang Yuan went back to the courtyard house he rented and asked Zhao Daniu to harvest the fully grown medicinal herbs and deliver them to Heart Questioning House. Fang Yuan then prepared to visit each of his friends one by one to return the favours.

He Tianming was obviously the first stop. Teacher He vaguely knew about Fang Yuan's whereabouts and when he met him, he was very glad and said many words of encouragements and blessings to Fang Yuan.

After Fang Yuan knew the other people in the Gifted Class were already in their new jobs, Fang Yuan did not ask about them further and left for Professor Tian's house.

Tian Family was not far from Xijing University and had their own decently sized courtyard house.

Fang Yuan visited the house once before and thus, he knew the way there.

As usual, Ye Yingzi was the one who went forward to knock on the door.

"Who is it?" An old granny came out and asked.

"It's me!"

Fang Yuan walked forward two steps, "I came to see Professor Tian!"

"Little Fang!"

The moment Professor Tian's wife saw Fang Yuan, she forced a smile on her face and said, "You came at the wrong time, my husband is in the hospital. Sigh... I was just about to leave the house before you came."

"Eh, what happened?"

Fang Yuan furrowed his eyebrows.

"Sigh... my poor granddaughter..."

The old granny's eyes turned red at once and she began sobbing.

Fang Yuan glanced at Ye Yingzi and she immediately went forward to help the old granny enter the house.

"Something happened to Tian Ai!"

Fang Yuan squinted his eyes slightly and the sight of an energetic young girl appeared in front of his eyes.

She was two years older than Fang Yuan and was in her university studies. She was Professor Tian's family's apple of the eye.

Of course, Professor Tian even shamelessly tried to have Fang Yuan date his daughter, just that he was firmly rejected by Fang Yuan.

"Which hospital is it, I will visit them!"

Now that they were in trouble, Fang Yuan had to do something about it. He immediately went to the hospital.

"Professor Tian!"

"Fang Yuan!"

Inside the ward, Fang Yuan saw Professor Tian and his family members.

Professor Tian used to be full of vigour, but now, he was as skinny as a skeleton. It was as though he had just aged ten plus years. His eyes lit up the moment he saw Fang Yuan and exclaimed, "Quick, come take a look at my granddaughter!"

"Mister Tian..."

Beside him, two doctors helplessly persuaded, "Your granddaughter has a problem in her mind. Her biological markers are all perfectly normal!"

"Doctor Xu!"

At that moment, another female doctor looked at Fang Yuan. She seemed to recognise something and whispered to the other doctor.

This Doctor Xu then glanced at Fang Yuan surprisedly and stopped what he was doing.

"Problem in her mind?"

Fang Yuan went forward and opened Tian Ai's eyelids. As he looked at her pupils, he said, "Hmm... indeed, it's Soul Leaving Illness! When did it begin!"

"Three days ago! She has been like this since she returned from Green Phoenix Mountain!"

Professor Tian forced a smile on his face, "The onset was so sudden, if I did not possess your 13 Needles Technique, I'm afraid I might even have to send her off at then..."

"Green Phoenix Mountain again!"

Fang Yuan gave a look and Ye Yingzi immediately went out to collect details and information about the mountain.

"I'll try!"

Fang Yuan picked up the needles and pricked the acupuncture points on Tian Ai's temple.

"Cough cough... Doctor Fang, although I admire your new found knowledge in Traditional Chinese Medicine, but..." Doctor Xu who was at the side coughed and wanted to continue speaking, but suddenly, his pupils dilated in awe.

On the bed, Tian Ai who was unconscious at first suddenly opened her eyes and looked around. She was a bit dazed and asked, "Where is... this?"

"Wha.....aattt! This is not scientific!"

Doctor Xu could not even speak coherently, "Impossible..."

Doctor Xu exhausted all his efforts and did all sorts of checks, but he still could not treat this odd illness. However, Fang Yuan managed to solve it with just a needle?

This was simply mind blowing to Doctor Xu and shattered his world view!

"Granddaughter!"

"Daughter!"

Professor Tian and his family members could not hold their tears and thanked Fang Yuan profusely.

Fang Yuan then humbly left the ward. He gave a mirthless smile and asked, "Did you discover anything?"

"Yes!"

Ye Yingzi immediately softened her volume, "The General's Temple on top of Green Phoenix mountain was built before our country was founded. It was destroyed once and was rebuilt afterwards. The current residing daoist priest is called Ma Kunyuan and he is not officially registered... Before that, it was all normal but once the new year began, there were weird and magical news regarding the temple and rumours that he was very effective..."

"Furthermore, we have checked with the hospitals in the capital and discovered 6 other teenage girls with the same illness as Tian Ai. All of them have also visited Green Phoenix Mountain before...."

"Hehe..."

Fang Yuan remained composed and quiet for a moment before he gave a cold laughter, "Looks like all sorts of bull ghosts and snake gods have really emerged!"

...

Inside General's Temple, Green Phoenix Mountain.

The temple was not big and was old looking. At the front, there was an altar set up for a ferocious looking war deity, which was Green Phoenix General.

At that moment, at the house behind the temple.

Inside a secret room, a daoist priest sat cross-legged with his arms resting. He was looking at the 7 small flags in front of him

and a joyful look appeared on his face, "Ancestral Master, bless and protect me! There's hope for me! As long as I finish cultivating my Xuan Yin 7 Evil Flags... my powers would increase by another tier! Eh? Who dares to destroy my spell?"

His face changed at once and an ominous atmosphere brewed at once.

A "bang" could be heard as a black flag originally in the array exploded suddenly. It began burning without any wind.....



# Chapter 410: Old Daoist Ma

---

In the huge conference room.

Xi Menjian's voice echoed within the room. "Comrades... although we were caught off-guard by the arrival of the new era, we still did our best. However, they are a few of them who think that by possessing some powers, they can harm others, spread malicious thoughts like a cult and even occupy a mountain to call themselves king. This is an insult to us!"

"In conclusion... After taking into account the chaos, we have been approved to go ahead with an inter-departmental mission with the quick response team of the Religious Bureau as the backbone. The policemen and the armed forces will support and the codename for this activation is 'Typhoon'. The purpose of this activation is to wipe out all the self-proclaimed gods! By doing that, we will be protecting our people's lives and properties, ensuring peace and stability in the society... On the ground, I will give the command to commence the activation..."

...

Xi Menjian ended the meeting. Just as he was about to take a sip of tea, a piece of news came and his expression changed. "What? A volunteer? How is this not fooling around? Get him..."

His eyeballs rolled as his attention shifted. "Send Group 2 and Group 3 out. We need to ensure his safety... Let's treat anything else as a drill for Operation Typhoon..."

...

Green Phoenix Mountain.

The surroundings were beautiful and the undulating terrain was filled with flora and fauna.

On the rugged mountain path, there were occasional passers-by heading towards General's Temple.

"I've heard from the villages around that this temple is extremely effective especially when asking favours from the General! He will always accede to your request! Daoist Ma is a magical person, for he is able to use the water mixed with burnt talismans to treat illnesses..."

"Hmph..."

Hearing this, Fang Yuan remained speechless and was deep in his thoughts.

The loosening up of the rules which governed this world led to the uprising of the god dao, and not the cultivators or the evolvers!

Even Fang Yuan was a humble cultivator and had to gather spiritual force by himself.

However, it was different for gods. As long as enough people worshipped them, they could quickly become more powerful and their physical body would be strengthened.

Considering how many people were there last time compared to the world population now, the resources which the god dao could feed on was almost unlimited!

"Of course... The concentration of spiritual droplets in this realm is still not enough to create a real god. However, the influence it is able to gather is still substantial enough..."

Fang Yuan thought silently to himself. At this point in time, Ye Yingzi started running towards him. "Chief of Bureau has approved your plan... however... let us ensure your safety!"

"Please wait for a while, Group 2 and Group 3 are arriving!"

'It seems... Xi Menjian wants to see my hidden power!'

Fang Yuan smiled. His objective had no conflict with the country's interests. Therefore, Xi Menjian could offer him full support. 'I'll let them see what I can do!'

Fang Yuan's trip to Green Phoenix Mountain was in fact, an

experiment.

It proved that Ye Yingzi did not take extreme measures, which allowed them to trust each other even more.

"Good day, Chief!"

On the top of the mountain, a group of policemen were rushing towards Fang Yuan. "We are here to take orders!"

"Disperse the crowd first. I will talk to him!"

Fang Yuan nodded his head and arrived at the General's Temple.

"Creak!"

The door opened by itself and a gust of wind blew the leaves on the ground. "My fellow followers, I have an important guest to meet today. Please come again another day!"

A loud voice was heard from the hall.

"Since it is your instructions, we will follow!"

The rest of the villagers were true believers. After hearing this instruction, they obediently left the mountain without any complaints.

"This person... he seems like he is a cultivator! His influence here is indeed strong!"

Ye Yingzi slid her hand to her waist and was on guard.

"Furthermore... He is trying to scare us away!"

Fang Yuan led Zhao Daniu and Ye Yingzi into the main hall of the temple.

Under a ferocious-looking statue, an old daoist was seated with his legs crossed. He had a long face and appeared shaken, giving off a unique vibe. "I am Daoist Ma Kunyuan. I believe all of you are from the government, right?"

"That's right... do you know why we're looking for you?"

Fang Yuan got himself a prayer mat and sat in front of the old daoist.

"Let me guess! You are suspecting my methods of using boiled talisman water to treat patients!"

Ma Kunyuan stroked his beard. "It's a pity... My vision is to follow the dao. These small tricks mean nothing!"

He retrieved a thin branch from a peach tree and inserted it into a jade bottle.

"Buzz!"

Following a brilliant green glow, the branch started to grow and flowers bloomed from it into beautiful peach blossoms.

Such an ability to recreate life stunned Ye Yingzi and Zhao Daniu and both of them were in a daze.

Seeing their reactions, Ma Kunyuan was elated.

"Oh, so what should we do to learn these tricks?"

Fang Yuan appeared friendly and asked.

"The cycle of life and karma means that you will need to pay with gold and silver to exchange for spiritual talismans and spiritual water... I can provide assistance to the government, but the rates will be different... Also, I am lacking in a few disciples for I am intending to start a sect in Green Phoenix Mountain!"

Ma Kunyuan stated his thoughts as though he had already prepared what to say.

"Pa! Pa!"

Fang Yuan clapped. "Daoist Ma, you've planned everything well. You first intend to display your might before offering your services. Are you planning to blackmail the country and the organisation?!"

Fang Yuan had to admit that this cultivator was indeed smart.

Ma Kunyuan knew that it was unwise to go against the country and therefore seek to cooperate.

However, he was only requesting to be treated normally and was secretly hinting for the government to grant him the entire Green Phoenix Mountain.

If someone else came to confront Daoist Ma, he would probably be threatened enough to grant Daoist Ma the position he had asked for. From then, Daoist Ma would be able to get all the resources he wanted without restrictions and become powerful among the powerful.

"I wouldn't dare!"

Ma Kunyuan gave a solemn look. "However, I do have some good karma for protecting this place. Are you guys intending to take action on me for no reason?"

"Good karma?"

Fang Yuan snickered. "Let me ask you. If you are an official daoist, have you registered yourself with the government? Nope! Did you build this General Temple? Do you have the rights to this property? Nope! And you talk about protecting a place? Hehe... Let's not talk about your talisman water for now. Don't you think I have no idea about your antics!"

"Adding everything up, you have not only committed obscene acts on women, you have also spread malicious cultist thoughts. All of these are enough to sentence you!"

"Sigh! Ma Kunyuan, give up today! Lock him up!"

With a sense of justice, Fang Yuan waved his hands and two soldiers came forward.

"D\*mn you!"

Daoist Ma leapt out a few feet and his expression changed.

Fang Yuan's prediction was extremely accurate and exposed

Daoist Ma had done.

There was an ancient saying which described that if one did not follow the king, one would not be able to accomplish anything.

Daoist Ma knew that he had committed illegal acts as was intending to come up with some tricks to redeem himself and from there enter the government to get a position which would grant him immunity.

Who would've thought that such a weird person like Fang Yuan would appear to expose him?

As he waved his hands, two streaks of black fog appeared and the two soldiers beside Fang Yuan fell to the ground.

"HA!"

Zhao Daniu knew that something was going wrong. With a deep breath, he expanded in size and his body was covered in a green hue.

"Natural Rock Skin Technique?"

The old daoist became shocked before smiling calmly. "It's a pity, you are only a dumb person who knows how to show off.... Let me show you something you've never seen before. Strike!"

"Sha! Sha!"

Beneath Zhao Daniu's feet, a layer of sand appeared and started to spread out, devouring almost half of Zhao Daniu.

"I am treating you with respect but it seems like it is not working..."

Ma Kunyuan placed his hands behind his back and sighed. "Forget it. I shall make all of you convinced of my power before requesting for your leader to talk to me!"

"How arrogant!"

Such an arrogant attitude of his angered Ye Yingzi.

If he was truly a respectable and capable daoist, they would not have such an extreme reaction. However, prior investigations had revealed that this person had past criminal records and was even more extreme in his actions after obtaining powers.

If this kind of person were to enter the government, it would be an insult to the government!

Without hesitation, Ye Yingzi pointed her gun forward and shot three times.

"Too slow! Too slow!"

Daoist Ma dodged the bullets. "Although the gun is powerful, you must consider who is wielding it... Although I am not faster than the gun, I am faster than you!"

"Whoosh!"

Like a leopard pouncing on its prey, Daoist Ma's right hand turned into a claw and struck towards Fang Yuan.

After all, although this child seemed young, it was obvious that he was their leader, and he might just be a descendant of a powerful person.

"Protect chief!"

With a scream, Ye Yingzi and a few other soldiers leapt forward but felt helpless.

Since this person was able to resist the quick response team's ambush and was unafraid of guns, he was indeed a threat to the country.

If they could not suppress him this time, he would get out of control in the future and claim this land for himself for good.

"I will never let that happen!"

Ye Yingzi roared and leapt forward like a female leopard.

"Hehe... Your courage is admirable... After my sect is formed, I

will surely hire you as my servant!"

Unfortunately, Daoist Ma was way much stronger than Ye Yingzi. With a finger, he transformed into numerous shadows.

Ye Yingzi turned cold, weak, and fell to the ground.

"Haha... kid, did you see that? I wanted to show my loyalty to the government and yet you have to force me to such lengths... Next time, my offer would not be so simple. Furthermore, I don't care who your backing is. I promise that you will be in deep trouble!"

With confidence, Daoist Ma exclaimed.

With such an easy victory, his confidence surged.

His power would mean that he should not be restricted to just this place and he deserved much more.

However, the child in front of him remained calm and unpredictable.

"Are you done?"

With a calm look, Fang Yuan stood up. "If you are, then you can die now! Although I will do the same thing as you in your shoes, it is unfortunate that you encounter me today!"



# Chapter 411: Arrest

---

"Reporting, the target has entered General's Temple! 10 minutes have passed and there's still no movement!"

"Received hints from Ye Yingzi, negotiation has failed! Be ready!"

"Take note, the top priority of this mission is to protect the personnel's safety..."

...

Outside General's Temple.

There were slight commotions at a few spots. Snipers had their scopes aimed at the General's Temple and there were even many armed personnel prepared to raid the temple at any time.

"Boom!"

But suddenly, accompanied by a huge flash, it was as though someone threw a grenade into the temple. The entire temple exploded and its walls toppled.

A strange gas dome appeared. Ye Yingzi and others were behind Fang Yuan and all of them were perfectly fine.

However, Ma Kunyuan who was opposite them was in a mess. His hair was dishevelled and he was retching up blood as he said, "Daoist technique? I can't believe... there's someone in this world with daoist techniques that are more profound than mine!"

Ma Kunyuan stood straight in front of the altar.

Also, there was something very odd. While the surroundings were ravaged, the statue of the deity was not damaged at all. It's emotionless eyes continued to stare downwards.

"It's such a pity you chose here! Haha..."

Ma Kunyuan guffawed, "Even if your cultivation is above mine, but with the support of the god, Green Phoenix Mountain is my

home ground! Stay here!"

"Woong! Woong!"

Although it was in bright daylight, they could see a golden glow radiating from the deity's statue with their own eyes. The golden glow had some hints of black colour and they entered Ma Kunyuan's body.

With that, it was as though Ma Kunyuan just consumed a cure-all panacea and he was immediately full of energy.

"As expected... there's no god... just a messy and jumbled mix of forces..."

Seeing such, Fang Yuan gave a faint sigh, "You kept forcing yourself to cultivate god dao techniques with your human body, have you gone crazy from thinking about becoming a deity?"

"What do you even know! My sect has all sorts of secret techniques, they are not something you can understand!"

Ma Kunyuan laughed and 6 small flags appeared on his palm, "Xuan Yin 7 Evil, die!"

"Rumble!"

6 beams of black-green coloured light appeared and formed an array which surrounded and trapped Fang Yuan and others.

"Target spotted, snipe!"

Although all these that were happening were very shocking and mind-blowing, the ambush team still completed their duties well as they shot at Ma Kunyuan.

"Bang!"

After one shot, Daoist Ma moved aside slightly and was not hit at all. He even faced their scopes with a scornful smile and exclaimed, "On top of Green Phoenix Mountain, I am... god!"

"Idiot!"

"Kaboom!"

In the skies, a layer of clouds gathered and a bolt of lightning struck downwards.

The 6 tattered array flags could not withstand the flash of lightning and turned into ashes immediately.

"You think you can kill me just with some crippled 'god' forces you absorbed and your crippled array? What a joke!"

Fang Yuan raised his right hand and continued, "The mighty force brought about by the surge in spiritual droplets is a powerful force from the heavens and earth! Your muddled 'god' forces are nothing compared to it!"

"Lightning from the mighty skies, listen to my command! Turn into a divine sword and punish the evil demons!"

As Fang Yuan's palm moved, the bolts of lightning in the skies were drawn together too as they combined and turned into a gigantic divine sword with fearsome purple coloured flashes.

In an instant, everyone including Ma Kunyuan was stunned as they looked at the scene.

The tremendous might of the lightning in the skies could be controlled by the single hand of a person?

"Kaboom!"

Fang Yuan did not hesitate nor pause at all as he directly pointed at where Ma Kunyuan was at.

"No!"

Daoist Ma's hair stood on its ends and he had never in his life felt such a life-threatening danger so clearly, as though he was about to die. After he let out a strange wail, he immediately ran towards the outside in an attempt to escape.

"Kaboom!"

Nevertheless, no matter how fast he moved, he could not escape the wrath of the heavenly lightning.

A purple flash landed on him and the ground he stood on exploded, leaving behind a 3-foot deep pitch black hole. Old Daoist Ma disappeared in an instant.

"So scary..."

Ye Yingzi went forward and let out a heave of cold air, "If every supernormal person is like him, I can't imagine what our future will be like!"

"No need to worry. Most likely, this Daoist Ma has cultivated in the past. By making use of the surge in spiritual droplets, he managed to breakthrough. In the entire country or even world, his cultivation level should be amongst the top few, else, why would he even dare to establish a sect near the capital?"

Fang Yuan suddenly smiled, "Also... this is not settled yet!"

....

In the obstetrics department of a certain hospital in the capital.

Accompanied by loud cries, a new life just came into this world.

"Congratulations, it's a boy!"

Suddenly, accompanied by the congratulatory words of the doctors, there were many noises coming from the outside of the ward.

The newborn had its umbilical cord snipped and was bathed. Wrapped in a white piece of towel, the newborn's black eyes had no tinge of innocence in it. Instead, his eyes were filled with cunningness and madness, "Damn it! When did such a powerful freak appear! That 5 Lightning Righteous Technique was just like a heavenly punishment... Luckily, I riskily tried my Corpse Liberation Reincarnation Technique and it succeeded! Revenge is a dish best served cold... just you wait..."

Just that, did he still have the courage to fight against Fang Yuan, someone who was so powerful that could destroy everything with his heavenly lightning technique?

The old daoist's heart trembled in fear. As a newborn's brain could not think too much, he immediately fell into a deep sleep.

"Hello, Little Ma Kunyuan!!"

When the newborn opened his eyes, his whole body trembled. A demon-like face was right in front of his eyes.

Daoist Ma was groaning inside his heart but could only force himself to put up an innocent look as he looked at the surroundings.

After all, he was inside the hospital with a group of people surrounding him, and these people were all on their toes.

"Cut the act! You are the one I am looking for!"

Fang Yuan coughed twice and took out an arrest warrant, "Criminal Ma Kunyuan, you are arrested for illegally reincarnating without the approval of the relevant authorities! You have the rights to remain silent but every word you say will be used against you in court!"

"Uuuuuwaaaaa!"

Daoist Ma really cried this time around. His cry was piercing and filled with grief.

He was already forced to reincarnate, and they still did not let him off!

"Bring him away!"

Fang Yuan contained his laughter, "He can't resist against us anymore..."

"No worries!"

Beside Fang Yuan, a person who looked like a political officer

smiled and said, "I have already planned 16 years of education for him, starting from the infant's ideological education. We will revamp his ideologies in coordination with the revamp of labour. He shall be used as the specimen for future criminals and he would be a good example."

"I wish you success!"

Fang Yuan then returned to the base.

Fang Yuan's treatment was obviously different now. Many people clustered around him and escorted him to Xi Menjian's office.

"Comrade Fang Yuan, seems like every time we meet, you bring me new surprises!"

Xi Menjian gave a mirthless laughter.

"I said before last time, I have some self-defence abilities!"

Fang Yuan laughed mischievously.

Previously, Fang Yuan concealed his abilities in order to gain entry into this base to obtain more research data.

But now, after so long, with Fang Yuan's level, and especially with the authority he gained from completing the Demon Restraining Cuffs, he had already looked through most of the data he wanted to see. Thus, he was naturally not afraid anymore.

After all, what Fang Yuan needed was the most fundamental experimental data from the large amounts of samples.

With these, Fang Yuan could better compare the differences between the realms and improve those higher order things in his mind, akin to improving the template of spiritual techniques.

Hence, the Fang Yuan now could have such abilities and even have the technique to control lightning and annihilate powerful opponents.

Else, if it was the Fang Yuan who just entered the base against Ma Kunyuan, Fang Yuan might have even died.

"Cough cough..."

Xi Menjian almost choked on his own saliva, "You still need self-defence when you can control lightning and punish evildoers?"

"Originally, I can continue to conceal, but why did I choose to expose it?"

Fang Yuan's expression turned solemn, "Because I can't stand to see those people with special abilities or spiritual techniques freely abuse their powers and bring trouble to this world!"

"Is that so? I have misunderstood you!"

Xi Menjian stood up and bowed to Fang Yuan solemnly, "Thank you! Comrade Fang Yuan, thank you for all that you have done for us!"

In actual fact, ever since Fang Yuan attracted more attention to himself, investigations regarding him had never stopped.

There were specially assigned people that were collecting and analysing his details, including those since he was young to each and every of his action in the orphanage. They even formed a mental model based on him.

'Target does not have any antisocial inclination, he is rather insecure about his safety and is good at hiding and protecting himself. However, he does not bully the weak and he even occasionally kindly help out others!'

'From this aspect, he concealed himself just to protect himself, similar to how Zhao Daniu was like... Now, he even proactively wants to contribute to the country.'

'Such a morally righteous comrade, what's there for me to be worried about!'

Xi Menjian's expression turned very gentle, "Just that... don't be so reckless next time! We rather send our troops to destroy Green Phoenix Mountain than to see anything bad happen to you!"

Fang Yuan was capable of becoming a powerful leader in the bureau in the future.

Furthermore, his research ability was very outstanding, he was really an exceptional and rare talent.

"Yes! I promise I will never commit similar mistakes again!"

Fang Yuan stood at attention.

Fang Yuan was who this realm required, a person who did not have any conflict of interest with Chinese Country.

Furthermore, the real exact details about his background would never be told to anyone. Other than that, anything else could be revealed, even the Green Capsule Scripture Additional Recording!

"I wouldn't be so foolish like Elder Extreme Darkness to go against a country on the battlefield!" Fang Yuan thought.

Records about Elder Extreme Darkness were also kept in the research centre, which Fang Yuan had read before.

Elder Extreme Darkness' potential then was comparable to Fang Yuan's current potential and that was during the period of the first occurrence! During that period, spiritual energy was thin and it was truly horrifying!

But so what? The result of forcefully entering the World War and going against a powerful country was a missile that totally obliterated her.

Past experiences were lessons learnt, Fang Yuan did not want to follow in the footsteps of Elder Extreme Darkness.

It was too shallow to confine one to the national level. This realm's true value was still the realm itself!



# Chapter 412: Grading

---

"You already saw what I can do!"

In front of Xi Menjian, Fang Yuan remained resolute. "This is only the beginning of the second occurrence. We still have time to resolve the problems... If we delay any longer and allow the cultivators and mutants to gain the upper hands, then it would be too late!"

"This is why have Operation Typhoon!"

Xi Menjian nodded his head.

"Pardon me for being straightforward, but with only a group of volunteers, the Demon Restraining Cuffs and some firepower, we can only deal with a group of criminal mutants. However, we are still incapable of dealing with the powerful ones among them."

Fang Yuan shook his head. "Take for instance Ma Kunyuan. Although he is an isolated case, those a little weaker than him are still causing problems for us!"

"..."

Xi Menjian frowned and remained silent.

He was extremely clear of the capabilities of his soldiers.

Although he had a few strong mutants and a group of cultivators, it was still not enough to deal with a Ma Kunyaun.

"So, what are you intending to do?"

"As your special consultant, I request to lead a small team to reinforce the quick response team... If they still cannot resolve the problem, I will handle it personally!"

Fang Yuan exclaimed with confidence.

'The stronger the mutant or entity, the more it exemplifies the supernatural rules of this world... I must defeat them, capture

them, study them, and even... absorb them! Only by doing this will I be able to increase my power!

"An emergency team? Alright, I'll approve of it!"

After thinking for a long time, Xi Menjian finally agreed to it. "What will it be called?"

"Let's call it the 'Dragon Team'!"

Fang Yuan snickered.

...

In the following months, the entire world fell into chaos.

The second occurrence came and the concentration of spiritual droplets multiplied. This brought about a change in the laws of physics for the entire world.

This was different from the first occurrence which caused physical bodies to change. This time, it led to discoveries of special ability! People now harnessed the ability to produce fire, ice or even lightning... Or they could be impenetrable, have the ability to fly and other weird abilities. The country could no longer keep the news from the public, resulting in a worldwide chaos.

In the Middle Region, the scientifically-endorsed Qigong was slowly gaining popularity once again. 'Martial Artists' started to appear in these regions. Some were living in the secluded forests and others were living on mountains. They had sworn that they had seen a deity with a sword and therefore, many others were trying to track down the deity in an attempt to become fated and meet her.

In the Blue Star Alliance, the long-gone vampire and werewolf appeared once more. Churches started to spread their faith and preached everywhere, making use of their new and effective magical spells to gain popularity far and wide.

As for the Golden Eagle Federation, although there were only a

few cultivators there, the increasing number of mutants were the greatest among the all the regions.

The mutants misused their ability to disrupt peace and even formed an alliance among themselves, claiming that they would create a country for mutants, creating a big problem for the Federation.

Considering the chaos in other regions, Chinese Country already had one of the most favourable situations.

The decisive stance to clamp down on the evolvers and the strong-willed Xi Menjian led to a large-scale cleansing operation throughout the entire country.

Those who had just obtained their special abilities and were not accustomed to it yet were paid a visit by the people from the Office of Supernatural Studies.

The criminals who were disruptive were attacked and clamped down fiercely by the quick response team.

Within a month, the mildly chaotic society started to regain its peace. The few mutants who were left out even surrendered themselves, succumbing to the investigation by the people of the Office of Truth Investigation.

...

"It's really peaceful..."

Little Night of the Plains carried a basket and walked home.

"You're back!"

The lady who was staying with Little Night was Little Vegetable. She was a small lady with black hair and claimed to be a foreign student.

"Mmm, I've bought carrots, vegetables and a slab of pork. We can cook soup tonight!"

Little Night placed the groceries in the kitchen. While she was

doing it, she secretly sensed the enchantment in the surroundings. "Hmm, it is not yet destroyed... You can say your piece in peace!"

"There's meat! This is wonderful!"

Little Vegetable was elated and was filled with emotions. "A few countries within Middle Region have already declared war. No one would've thought that Chinese Country can still maintain such peace and stability. The security in their city is much better and I've heard that the criminal mutants are all captured. With that, the situation became under control!"

"Yeah, it's really strong!"

Little Night let out a bitter smile. Even their home country was troubled with these mutants.

Comparatively, she now knew the power of Chinese Country!

"How's the intelligence?"

Both of them knelt down before a small table and Little Vegetable became tensed.

"The headquarters of the Religious Bureau is in a military base and it is extremely hard for us to infiltrate... However, we are familiar with their departments and the situation in the bureau, especially their Demon Restraining Cuffs. We have verified that these cuffs will affect the spiritual force of Yin Yang Masters!"

Little Night took in a deep breath.

"The instruction from the higher-ups is to prioritize and obtain their little invention!"

Little Vegetable appeared solemn. "Without it, we will need to sacrifice a lot of warriors before we will be able to capture one mutant. Furthermore, we cannot ensure that we will be able to contain the mutant for a period of time! Prioritize the capture of its designer, Mr Fang Yuan, as well! That is our final goal!"

At this point, her expression changed as she glanced towards

Little Night. "You've met him before. How is he?"

"How is he?"

Little Night of the Plains thought about the scene at Heart Questioning House and was in a daze. "I could not see through him. Although I felt that everything was under control then, now that I recall, it seems like the entire place was shrouded in fog... It's a pity that they no longer sell the Opening Point Incense..."

The incense was extremely beneficial to Yin Yang Masters. They had secretly performed tests on it after shipping it back to Japan and could create it from its composition. However, they were still unable to achieve its desired effect.

The need for resources and the fact that Fang Yuan's prediction through his thesis made Fang Yuan the top priority for spies from many countries.

"It's a pity..."

Little Vegetable sighed.

As a top mutated scientist, he would surely be protected by maximum security and it would be almost impossible for anyone to go near him.

Although spies from all over the world were hungry to get to him, they could only patrol around Fang Yuan's old lodging and school... all these places were places which he could possibly leave his DNA for the spies to collect.

"I have gotten in contact with the Nightingale and have gotten a piece of intelligence!"

Little Night of the Plains appeared solemn and continued. "This is related to the thunder-type mutant from the legends as well as the Grading system described by Mr Fang Yuan!"

Fang Yuan's actions at the Green Phoenix Mountain was too much of a commotion to be placed under wraps.

Xi Menjian had thought long and hard and could only create a 'God of Thunder' in the database in an attempt to cover up for Fang Yuan.

Of course, it was not entirely covering up for Fang Yuan.

This was because the God of Thunder was indeed the leader of the Dragon Team. The team leader had resolved many problems regarding criminal mutants and was well-known throughout the world.

However, no one would link such a powerful warrior with Fang Yuan the scientist and therefore, it was as good as covering up for him.

"Be clear about it!"

Little Vegetable became excited and straightened her back.

"Those with improved physical qualities after the first occurrence are graded 'Mortal'! Those elementary martial artists and illusionary souls with only the ability to scare others are also in this grade."

Little Night of the Plains continued. "Above the Mortal Grade is the Ghost Grade! This people have a certain special ability and can disrupt the order of society... According to this classification, I am under this grade."

"After Ghost Grade would be the Murderous Grade! There are extremely few mutants in this grade. Those in this grade are able to defend themselves against a group of mutants or even a country's forces... The daoist in Green Phoenix Mountain is classified under this grade. Of course, he is the top in this grade!"

"After Murderous Grade, it would be Calamity Grade!"

Little Night gave a suspicious look. "This is only a hypothetical grade and our sources have yet to get information regarding mutants in this grade. We only know that there must be the existence of such mutants in the Calamity Grade. If any of them

were to appear, there would surely be a calamity! I suspect the God of Thunder belongs to this grade."

"There seems to be an official way to test mutants and see which grade they belong to. Professor Fang has designed an instrument to test the circulatory system within one's body based on the concentration of spiritual energy and from there conclude a general grade..."

"It's Mr Fang Yuan again?"

Little Vegetable became silent. "Chinese Country is too fortunate... to have such a talent and such a powerful mutant like the God of Thunder."

"Whoosh! Whoosh!"

With a white flash, an origami crane flapped its wings and floated through the window.

"How could they even think of such a method to send information?"

Little Night and Little Vegetable froze. "Is there any emergency?"

Little Night stretched out her hand and the paper crane landed on her palm. She bit her tongue and spat a mouthful of blood on it.

"Buzz!"

With a red glow, a row of red words appeared.

This was an encrypted message. If Little Night did not spit out the mouthful of blood, the paper crane would self-destruct.

"It is truly an emergency! There are sightings of a Murderous Grade mutant in Mountain Ocean City. It has broken free of the ambush by the quick response team and the Religious Bureau is sending in more reinforcements!"

Little Night became overly excited and a little dizzy. "There are many scientists involved in this, including Fang Yuan!"

"To be able to get close enough to obtain intelligence about the Murderous Grade mutant and Mr Fang Yuan himself..."

Little Vegetable spoke in a serious tone. "This is the best opportunity and we must make full use of it!"



# Chapter 413: The Willow Tree

---

There was silence in the airplane cabin, except for the continuous whirring of machinery.

Through a small window, the blue sky was visible and there were fluffy white clouds beneath.

"Professor Fang, in another half an hour, we will reach Mountain Ocean City!"

Beside him, there was a scientist, Old Li. He laughed as he spoke. "That is Professor Fang's hometown, right?"

"That's right... many years have passed since then!"

Fang Yuan was donned in a lab coat, wore glasses and gave off a scholarly vibe. No one would be able to associate him with the team leader of Dragon Team, the God of Thunder.

It was an ancient trick for martial artists with cultivation to make use of their muscles and internal energy to alter their appearances. This was nothing difficult for Fang Yuan.

As for his appointment as a professor? Since the completion of the design for the Demon Restraining Cuffs, Fang Yuan had been approved to be a professor with almost no resistance.

Now, he gazed deeply out of the window and was lost in his thoughts.

'Is Professor Fang thinking about your hometown?'

This colleagues looked at him and gave friendly smiles without interrupting him.

They were clueless that Fang Yuan was actually reading through his stats window:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 3.5

Spirit: 9.9

Magic: 9.9

Profession: ???

Cultivation: ???

Technique: [Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell (Grade 3 (99%))]

Skill: [Medicine (Level 3)], [Botany (Level 5)], [Fiery Golden Eyes (Level 1)]"

'The improvements brought to my body after killing Ma Kunyuan's possessed body and absorbing the spiritual energy from Green Phoenix Mountain is too great...'

Seeing this, he was extremely satisfied.

With his special ability to have fixed stats and his own strong physical body, he almost had no limits in this world, which was something that others could never imagine.

After removing the restrictions on his own body and assimilating into the world, he would be able to increase his cultivation as long as he was given energy to absorb!

'It's a pity... The Green Phoenix Mountain was mainly covered in the strength of the god dao and most of it is being wasted... Hopefully, Mountain Ocean City will not let me down...'

"Whoosh! Whoosh!"

The plane flew through the clouds and descended. On the horizon, a huge airport appeared.

Fang Yuan and his colleagues alighted from the plane and a group of people hurriedly rushed towards them. The one leading the group of people was a middle-aged soldier in military uniform. "Hello guys, I am the person-in-charge here and my name is Wu Tie. We've waited for quite a while!"

"Hello!"

Fang Yuan stretched his hand out. "We have brought the best botanist from the base and hope that we will be of help to the situation!"

"You are... Comrade Fang Yuan! This is great!"

Wu Tie was initially suspicious after seeing Fang Yuan's young looks as he led the group of scientist. However, after realising that it was Fang Yuan, he was overjoyed. "Great... our city is finally saved!"

"Oh? Has it reached such a stage already?"

Fang Yuan raised his glasses. "Let's get on the car. Tell us about it along the way."

"Rumble!"

The jeeps roared to life and a line of 10 jeeps drove on the roads.

They were on the outskirts of Mountain Ocean City. After 10 minutes, the silhouette of a city appeared on the horizon and Fang Yuan could see a few familiar looking buildings.

At the same time, the accompanying Zhao Daniu shrieked.

This was because a layer of fog was slowly spreading, engulfing almost half of the city.

"Is this the power of the Thousand Year Willow?"

Closing his eyes, Fang Yuan could feel an immense amount of spiritual droplets gathering around the city, forming a swirl.

In the middle of the white fog, there was the silhouette of a jade-green tree covering half the sky. It was full of energy and life.

"That's right... After the second occurrence, other than the increased appearance of mutants, there are also natural changes and mutated plants..."

Wu Tie had an uneasy look on his face. "Some animals are even

better adapted than us in absorbing spiritual energy... Of course, the biggest winner is nature!"

After the second occurrence, there seemed to be the appearance of a few mysterious plots of land on earth.

Some of these lands were originally dangerous. Together with the increase of spiritual droplets, they became perilous plots of lands which had to be avoided at all costs.

Other plots of lands only became dangerous after the second occurrence. From then on, these lands began to spread far and wide.

It was unfortunate that one of these lands was in the middle of a city.

"Its index number is M-95 and it is a willow tree. It was originally an old tree in the North Park of Mountain Ocean City and it was rumoured to be more than 1,000 years old. After investigations, it was found out that although it had already withered, after the first occurrence, the tree started to revive and recover. Therefore, it was not removed from the park and appeared completely normal. Who would've known that after the second occurrence, this willow would start to spread out? Within a short period of time, its roots had already spread throughout the entire North Park. It also began to release a thick fog which was unable to be dispersed. In the fog, there is an intoxicating agent and the fog has already covered half of the city..."

"Before this, we have already sent people in hopes that the willow tree could be destroyed. However, our efforts were futile and even the fire-type mutants could do nothing about it... Until now, we have already evacuated over 300,000 people from their homes. The destruction this willow had caused to our economy and our properties are too much to calculate!"

With an uneasy look, Wu Tie shared everything he knew about the situation. "We are suspecting that this willow has a simple

mind on its own and its branches are like hands which are able to move, making it extremely hard to destroy..."

"I understand!"

Fang Yuan nodded his head. "When we arrive at the base, we will need to start collecting some data! If we still cannot succeed, we will have to use our final plan!"

"..."

Wu Tie remained silent and there was pain in his eyes.

The final plan would surely be to bomb the place, wiping the willow tree of its existence!

If the final plan were to be executed, the entire Mountain Ocean City would be destroyed as well. This was an outcome no one would want to see.

Notwithstanding anything else, the problem of hundreds of thousands of refugees created from bombing the city would have to be dealt with or it would cause a greater societal problem.

Therefore, they had to solve the problem caused by the Thousand Year Willow!

If not for this, Xi Menjian would not have sent his most precious asset, Fang Yuan, here.

After driving for a while, a huge camp appeared before Fang Yuan and company. Many green and huge tents lined the camp, making the entire place feel organised.

Outside the camp, there were concertina wires surrounding the boundaries and red warning signs were posted everywhere.

"Lecturer Fang..."

After alighting from the keep, Wu Tie could no longer hold himself back. "Chief of Bureau, Xi Menjian, has promised us to send reinforcements. Where are the highly skilled people in the Dragon Team? Where are they?"

"You must know that the intoxicating agent is extremely potent. Even if we are properly equipped with anti-poison clothing, we will not be able to last for 10 minutes. Only the mutants will be able to fight in the fog!"

Thinking about how they would know about the properties of the fog, Wu Tie's eyes started to redden. It must have been a painful lesson for them.

"Don't worry. The Dragon Team is already on its way. However, the God of Thunder likes to travel alone and will not be with us for now!"

Fang Yuan smiled.

"That's good..."

Wu Tie's eyes were filled with uneasiness.

Any superior would not feel at ease if their subordinate were to travel and do things on their own.

Being a composed person, he quickly regained his composure and did not display any displeasure. "Since that is so, I hope that they will remain safe. In the surroundings of this camp, I have already detected the traces of a few spies from the Golden Eagle Federation!"

"This unique situation will be attractive enough to attract them here..."

Fang Yuan sighed before instructing Zhao Daniu and Ye Yingzi to open the packages and start to build many instruments.

"I need to get close to the white fog and conduct a field research on the concentration of spiritual energy there!"

Fang Yuan casually took a gas mask and wore it.

"Mmm, I shall send a party to escort you!"

Wu Tie was impressed at Fang Yuan's decisiveness and how he was willing to risk his own life for research.

...

Very quickly, Fang Yuan, Zhao Daniu and a group of soldiers entered Mountain Ocean City and were on the main street.

"Sigh..."

Zhao Daniu looked at the empty streets and the tattered newspapers flying in the wind as he began to be filled with emotions.

After all, he was different from Fang Yuan and did not have the opportunity to study abroad. He had grown up here and therefore had a feeling of affection for the city.

Now that he had observed the desolate and lifeless scene, there was a tinge of sadness in his heart.

"This place gives me the goosebumps!"

Ye Yingzi held her gun tightly and scanned the surroundings on full alert.

She had never imagined that an empty and lifeless city would give her the creeps.

"This is only normal. After all, we are comparing it to the capital!"

Fang Yuan walked down an alley and a layer of white fog appeared before him. It was different from the fog of dream masters and was even more pale, giving off an ominous vibe.

"Professor, be careful. The intoxicating properties of this fog are extremely strong and there seem to be other dangers lurking in the fog as well!"

Beside him was a group leader wearing a chemical warfare suit and a gas mask. Because his voice was amplified through the mask, it sounded extremely depressing.

"Don't worry, I've got it!"

For safety reasons, Fang Yuan and Ye Yingzi were also wearing gas masks. Only Zhao Daniu did not require any protection and was unobstructed by the fog, making the rest around him jealous.

"This place... this place is alright. Let's set it up!"

Fang Yuan placed a metal rack on the ground and created a path for himself.

Ye Yingzi and Zhao Daoniu went forward to help him. They seemed experienced and not long after, a small radar-looking instrument was assembled and the wok-looking sensor was pointed towards the white fog.

"Let's fix the location! React as soon as a high concentration of spiritual droplets is detected!"

Fang Yuan looked at the needle as he started to read off some numbers. "Hmmm... There is a reading of 10 for the spiritual droplets. It should be a branch or root. Follow it... We've found it!"

"Ascertain that this is the trunk of the willow!"

"Dooo! Doooo!"

There was a vibration in the fog as though something was detected.

With that, the instrument started to give off a chime.

"Hmm, the readings at the core are hitting 999, more than what we can detect! It is confirmed..."

With a solemn face, Fang Yuan announced. "This is a Murderous Grade disaster, and its destructive force is above what we had encountered at the Green Phoenix Mountain!"



# Chapter 414: Parasitic

---

Since there were Murderous Grade supernormal people, naturally there would be Murderous Grade disasters.

Such a thing that destroyed a city, affected hundreds of thousands of people and could not be annihilated except if it was extensively bombed would be a Murderous Grade natural disaster.

"This willow tree does not know how to conceal itself... if it maintained its previous state and waited for the third occurrence... it would most likely rise to Calamity Grade! Humans would not be able to do anything to it."

A Murderous Grade natural disaster affected an area, whereas the range of a Calamity Grade natural disaster would be the entire country or even realm!

"Tzz! Tzz!"

"Tzz! Tzz!"

Suddenly, the instrument pointed towards the white fog and was emitting an ear-piercing noise in the silent environment.

"It's the willow? It has discovered we are probing it, retreat!"

Fang Yuan swiftly kept the instrument and was the first to run away.

After all, the order this team received was to protect Fang Yuan's safety with their lives. If Fang Yuan did not leave first, none of them could leave unless they were a deserter.

"Retreat! Retreat!"

The team leader at his side took out his gun. His voice was rather frightened as he said, "I have already requested for aid from the headquarters, they will be coming soon!"

"Boom!"

Near the boundary of the white fog, the cement roads ruptured and numerous spiderweb-like cracks appeared.

Not only that, the cracks kept extending like a black coloured centipede. The cracks were charging towards where Fang Yuan and team were at.

"Boom! Boom! Boom!"

The ground continued to rupture and a giant black shadow emerged from the cracks. It was like a long whip that swung crazily.

"Smack!"

As the ground tremored, a few soldiers who could not dodge it fast enough were smashed into pieces.

Furthermore, it was as though the black shadows were alive as they kept sweeping towards the remaining of them.

"The willow tree's rhizomes? Can they spread till here? No... no way, this is just a... parasitic body!"

Fang Yuan's eyes sparkled and he shouted, "Daniu! Go!"

"Haaa!"

Zhao Daniu's entire body swelled and his skin turned into a green and rock-like colour. He extended both his arms forward and grabbed it.

"Smack!"

The root was like an iron whip and smacked Daniu's arms, producing an extremely dull noise as though it hit something tough.

"Gotcha!" Zhao Daniu exclaimed delightedly and he then pulled backwards continuously.

"Rumble!"

A spot on the ground rose up and formed a big bulge. There was

even a chattering noise from within it, as though there was a living animal inside it.

The nearby rhizomes were provoked at once and they immediately let go of the others and aimed Zhao Daniu.

"Smack! Smack!"

Although the rhizomes could rupture the ground and break bones, they had no effects on Zhao Daniu. When they landed on his body, his skin turned white momentarily and there were no marks nor injuries left on it.

"Haha... come out!"

Zhao Daniu laughed. The veins on his arms bulged out as he strongly exerted his force.

"Bang!"

The bulge erupted and a strange living creature appeared in front of everyone's eyes.

"Chi chi! Chi chi!"

The creature had the appearance of a gigantic white rat which was almost as large as a buffalo. Its snow-white fur had hints of grey and there were large amounts of rhizomes emerging from underneath its skin. It was truly disgusting and horrifying.

"This... why does this look like it is parasitised!"

Fang Yuan stroked his chin, "Unless these rhizomes are the true mutated organisms... Do willow trees have spores? No... it seems like... willow catkins!"

"Professor Fang, be careful!"

A panicky voice could be heard from the communication device, "That is the willow tree's parasitised mutated body! Based on our observations and research, it should be infected by those white coloured catkins..... As long as a living object is parasitised, it would immediately become a terrifying biological weapon!"

"I was right, it is the willow catkins!"

In Fang Yuan's eyes, large amounts of fine willow catkins had already covered the entirety of this rat's body.

Furthermore, the catkins even covered the rhizomes and were like insects crawling towards Zhao Danu.

"Burn it!"

The soldiers in the team could finally react. They took out their flamethrowers and started burning the rhizomes.

"Flaming!"

Under the searing flames, large amounts of white coloured willow catkins ignited at once. The roots rustled and let out a wail and numerous burnt patches appeared along with large amounts of fluids blasting out.

"Snap!"

The giant white rat immediately broke off its rhizomes and tried to turn around to burrow into the ground as it saw the situation was not in its favour.

"Attack!"

"Ta! Ta! Ta! Ta!"

However, at that moment, more than ten blazes of fire were shot and landed on the rat's body in an instant. There were many holes in its body as though it was a honeycomb.

"Dead?"

Fang Yuan slowly walked forward and thought, "Normally, such parasitic species were at most Mortal Grade mutants and 80% of them would stand no chance against me. However, against Ghosts Grade mutants, even if my stats were not restricted, it would be super troublesome to fight against them!"

"Professor, such an organism is extremely dangerous! Even if the

parasitic body has died, there are still copious amounts of microorganisms inside its body!"

One of the soldiers immediately went forward to stop Fang Yuan.

"It's okay..."

Fang Yuan took out a pair of tweezers and searched inside the rat's pool of blood. He then picked up a strand of willow catkin.

Its body was thinner than a strand of hair and it was still wriggling about, as though it had a life of its own.

"Once such infection spreads, it would be harder to deal with it than the willow tree... However, there seem to be some limitations..." Fang Yuan looked at the white fog and ruminated.

"Professor! The responders have arrived and they are requesting to escort us to leave immediately!"

Ye Yingzi took a step forward.

"Oh, let's go!"

Fang Yuan placed the strand of willow catkin into a test tube. He then tilted his head to one side and looked somewhere before he finally turned around and left.

After the group of them left, the white fog rolled and was soon back to its calm state.

On top of a residential building near the area, a few black shadows appeared, "Such a pity... if they went deeper it, it would have been the best opportunity for us!"

"Don't be foolish, Professor Fang Yuan is Chinese Country's most important mutant researcher, it would be impossible for them to let him be in danger!" A gorgeous lady at the side laughed.

She had a hot body and was donned in a black leather suit that showcased her seductive curves. She had blonde hair, blue eyes and was the quintessential western beauty. She then continued, "Instead of being so secretive, why not let me give it a try..."

Chinese Country's scientist, I'm interested!"

"Narissa, you Black Widow! Why is your brain filled with the thoughts of white fluids... What we need is his intelligence, not his corpse!" A tall blond dude beside her replied.

This Narissa awakened a very bizarre mutant type. She could strengthen herself by absorbing males' vitality and she had already caused some panic in Golden Eagle Federation.

Once a person has his vitality drawn out, it would be very difficult for him to survive even if he was a mutant.

If her teammates did not know that her ability to syphon vitality had its limitations as it had to be done through a specific method, there would be no males willing to be in the same team as her.

"Fine, I know!"

Narissa stuck out her tongue and licked her thick and supple red lips, which made all the men on the spot felt warmth flowing near their nether region.

"Ok, we have three objectives for this mission. The first is to observe this willow tree's ability and assess its danger! The second would be to monitor the strength of the mutants in Chinese Country! The third objective is this Professor Fang Yuan!" The team leader explained slowly. When the team leader was serious, even Narissa did not dare to retort.

"Furthermore... this time around, we have the assistance of another power!"

"Woong! Woong!"

Above the rooftop, two origami cranes appeared. It then exploded suddenly and cast the image of two persons kneeling and greeting, "Greetings, ladies and gentlemen!"

The two persons were like ancient ladies. They had a thick layer of white powder on their faces and bright red lips. They were also

dressed colourfully and thinly.

"Japan's paper shikigami?"

Narissa smiled and said, "Indeed, a group of people who like to hide themselves and do things indirectly!"

"As our true bodies are not around, we can only meet you all with such means. Apologies!"

The two shikigamis each had three fingers on the ground as they bowed again, "Also... Fang Yuan is our main target this time around and I hope you all can satisfy this small wish of ours. We will do our best to cooperate with you all in other areas!"

"Your target is Fang Yuan?"

The team leader smiled nonchalantly, "No matter how good a scientist is, without the best equipment and fellow researchers, he would not amount to anything... Our Golden Eagle Federation is the hub of modern cutting-edge technology! My main goal this time is also that God of Thunder! He is a Calamity Grade mutant and should not waste his time here... his ability would be put to the best use only if he comes to our Golden Eagle Federation!"

"Understood, we will do our best to help you all!"

As the two shikigamis spoke, their bodies sinisterly began to burn from their bottom and turned into two piles of ashes moments later.

"What a strange usage... looks like some of the supernormal cultivators in Middle Continent and East Continent are pretty interesting too..."

A mutant walked forward and looked at the piles of ashes on the ground. His eyes suddenly let out a bloodthirsty glow as he said, "I wonder how their blood taste like..."

"Jax! There will be opportunities!"

The team leader's voice was firm and filled with perseverance

like a piece of aged granite, "In this world, only power can crush everything!"

...

The atmosphere inside a conference room in the large military base was tense and solemn.

Presentations and results of data analysis played which reflected their despair.

"In conclusion... we can deduce that this demonic willow tree is at the peak of Murderous Grade! There is a possibility that it might enter the Calamity Grade in the future!"

Fang Yuan kept his presentation pointing stick and continued, "Regarding the effective methods to combat it... Professor Chen!"

"Cough cough..."

An old professor coughed a few times and presented, "I have already created its life model. According to the deductions, even missiles could only at most seriously injure it and cannot completely annihilate it. It must be paired with napalm bombs... However, the resulting pollution cannot be estimated..."

"Hence, the best way to destroy it would be to send a group of soldiers to carry and place large amounts of bombs and napalms at the core of the willow tree. Thus, this can destroy the tree and yet protect the entire city!"

Wu Tie's expression changed as he asked, "When is God of Thunder arriving?"

"Tonight!"

"Looks like... this is our only method?"

Wu Tie's face turned ashen as though he just aged ten years. He then muttered the meeting was dispersed.

"I'm preparing to engage in a thorough research, don't let anyone disturb me!"



Fang Yuan asked for a laboratory as an excuse for the God of Thunder to appear later on.

As long as he had the cooperation of Ye Yingzi and Zhao Daniu, he could continue to keep up the act.

# Chapter 415: Infiltration

---

"It's done!"

Fang Yuan wore a black suit and looked at Ye Yingzi and Zhao Danu.

Only two of them knew the true identity of the God of Thunder.

"Execute according to plan. I will destroy the willow tree and the both of you shall stay here to be my alibi!"

"Rumble!"

As he spoke, he started to grow in height and his facial features began to change. He now had sharp eyebrows and grey sideburns.

To put it in another way, he had transformed from a young scientist to a middle-aged handsome lad.

"Alright!"

Ye Yingzi acknowledged but had a complicated look on her face.

No matter how many times she had seen Fang Yuan do this before, she would still be stunned.

"Whooosh!"

With a smile, Fang Yuan disappeared with the wind.

...

Outside the base in the wilderness.

"Is our leader not here yet?"

A young man with a yellow-dyed hair and earrings who seemed flippant started to complain.

"Searing Flames, how dare you say such things here..."

In front of him was a 30-year-old beauty with a mysterious seductive vibe coming from her.

"Red Sister, we are just joking!"

The young man called 'Searing Flames' seemed to fear this lady as he tried to make up for what he had said previously.

"Look at Old Guo. He is much more patient than you!"

Red Sister crossed her legs and sat down, glancing towards Guo Jing who was fiddling with a magical equipment. "Am I right?"

"Hehe... Red, don't you mock me!"

Guo Jing stood up and shook his limbs. "I'm old already and I can't compare to you youngsters!"

"Your daoist techniques still leave our leader in awe. You were personally invited by him to join the team, so how can you only have those few moves?"

Searing Flames rolled his eyes.

Speaking of this, Guo Jing felt depressed.

He was minding his business to begin with and was well hidden within the city. However, one fine day, a government official came knocking on his door.

He had no intentions to kill a government personnel and go against the entire government and had to obediently allow them to recruit him.

After unknowingly making his way into the Dragon Team, he then realised that it was the God of Thunder's intention to recruit him in and therefore he could only allow it.

"Enough about me..."

Guo Jing looked at Searing Flames and Red Sister as his eyes glistened. "Although you guys have special abilities and are strengthened after the second occurrence, the way you guys are using it is wasting your natural talent... How about becoming my disciple? Considering your foundation and potential, both of you have the opportunity to breakthrough to the highest realm in the daoist books!"

"It's boring!"

Searing Flames rolled his eyes. "If I become your disciple, I will have to stare at the ugly-looking talismans the entire day. I'm too lazy to even go to school. Do you think I will join you?"

"Then why not consider the Golden Eagle Federation from the West? Their process of strengthening their bodies are much more simplified. All they have to do is to take some medication and an injection. Convenient!"

At the same time, Red Sister took out her make-up and started to touch up.

"Sigh... The Violet Seal Script is a rare heritage. Many cultivators don't even have the chance to see it, let alone having the chance to learn..."

Guo Jing revealed a face of regret. "Even our leader has requested to see my techniques and perform investigations on it..."

"That is the leader, not us!"

Red Sister smiled. "Leader is a talent. Furthermore, have we all not been forced to try out daoist techniques? This proves that not all mutants are able to cultivate in daoist techniques... The best would still be to follow your own body and awaken your own special ability which suits you this most. This is what Professor Fang said."

"Sigh... eh?"

Guo Jing sighed before twitching his eyebrows and retrieving an array flag which was in his possession. "My array has been alarmed. Our leader must be here!"

"Ripppppp!"

With the streak of a lightning, Fang Yuan's middle-aged persona arrived.

"Boss!"

Seeing their leader's arrival, even the rebellious young punk did not dare to show any disrespect and properly greeting Fang Yuan.

He only displayed so much respect because he was once taught a lesson by Fang Yuan.

The codenamed Searing Fire and Red Sister were rebellious children who posed problems even for Xi Menjian. Troubled, he assigned both of them to Fang Yuan.

"Hmm, there are only the 4 of us here. We must complete the mission!"

Fang Yuan's eyes glistened with excitement.

He knew that he had to get the willow tree no matter what happened.

Although everyone regarded him as a Calamity Grade mutant, he knew himself the best and gauged that he should only be around the Ghost or Murderous Grade.

He could only release so much power previously because of the face that he made use of the high concentration of spiritual droplets and channelled them completely to create spells.

'Therefore... If Guo Jing were to attain the highest cultivation possible of the Violet Seal Script, he should more or less know that I am not a mutant, but... just well-versed in thunder-type techniques!'

Fang Yuan laughed to himself.

Regardless of where the power came from, if he could harness it, it would be considered his!

"This willow is intriguing. It not only has a huge storage of spiritual droplets, it also lies above a node... If it was in the world of Da Qian, it would surely become a hollow... If I were to absorb it completely, I would be able to advance many grades at once!"

This was something only possible for Fang Yuan for he had the

ability of have fixed stats. Therefore, he would be able to absorb in energy and simply improve his cultivation.

If Elder Extreme Darkness were to have such an ability, she would probably have ruled the entire world and would not end up being killed by a bomb.

"We have no worries for you are here, leader!"

Searing Flames exclaimed loudly.

"In this operation, we will split into two groups. After meeting up with the officer at the camp, the few of you will bring the bomb with you, while I will deal with all those who are watching!"

Fang Yuan's cold voice sounded murderous and Searing Flames uncontrollably shuddered.

...

"Good day, officer!"

Within the camp.

The 4 members of the Dragon Team revealed themselves and therefore, the entire group was invited to Wu Tie.

After settling their identifications, Wu Tie heaved a sigh of relief. "The future of Mountain Ocean City lies in your hands!"

"Don't worry, we will accomplish the mission!"

Fang Yuan laughed and followed Wu Tie to the back end of the camp.

"This is the poison jointly developed by Professor Fang Yuan and I. It might be useful!"

The previous Professor Chen came out and brought them to a huge warehouse.

"Also, we have completed preparations for the specially made bomb and napalm. You guys can leave anything!"

"Very well, prepare a few vehicles and we shall be on the move!"

Fang Yuan was decisive.

"Rumble!"

Not long after, a row of cars drove along a road and went straight into the fog-covered Mountain Ocean City.

As the fog became denser, the visibility started to worsen.

There were weird sounds coming from the surroundings.

"You guys should be clear of the location of the park where the willow tree is... There is only one mission, and that is to deliver the bomb safely to the perimeter of the park!"

Fang Yuan's spiritual will shook and in a bolt of lightning, he was gone.

...

In a base outside the city.

At where the Dragon Team once was, a staff officer made his way to the table and grabbed the used cups.

"What are you doing?"

Suddenly, the tent was lit up and Wu Tie was standing at the opening with a stern look. "These are the objects used by the Dragon Team. Are you trying to obtain their biological samples?"

"Hehe... This is so boring. How could I be discovered so quickly!"

The staff officer laughed. The chime of a bell was heard and everyone who heard it felt creeped out.

"I've said it before... we should have attacked them directly for it is the best opportunity... Even the God of Thunder is trapped within the fog now. The entire base is filled with valuable scientists to capture!"

Suddenly, the staff officer smiled and transformed into a thin piece of paper which then started to burn.

"Rumble!"

Outside, a huge explosion was heard and there were screams.  
"Call the police! The base has been infiltrated!"

"Let's start the war!"

Wu Tie scoffed. "Recall the Dragon Team back and protect these scientists at all costs!"

"Reporting!"

A messenger was shouting into a phone but soon after, he turned pale. "Our communications... have been cut!"

"Pa! Pa!"

There were flapping sounds everywhere. A piece of dark cloud floated above the base and covered the entire sky.

Bats flew down from the sky and formed the figure of Narissa. Like a model doing catwalk, a red bat landed on her hand. "Hehe... there are only so few people? There seems to be too little!"

"A mutant from the Golden Eagle Federation?"

Wu Tie screamed and with that, his body was covered in a gold hue as though he had transformed into an iron man.

"Bang! Bang!"

Following which, there were countless gunshots and in a few moments, many blood holes were formed on Narissa's body.

"Firepower? This is irritating!"

With a smile, a red glow appeared on her body and her wound quickly recovered. Squeezing out the last bit of bullet from her body, her glowing and perfect skin was restored.

"Superspeed regeneration?"

Wu Tie's eyelid twitched. "Murderous Grade? Don't stop shooting! Even though she can regenerate, there will surely be a limit as to how much she can handle!"

"That's right... If you hit me a few more times, I might not be



able to keep up with the regeneration!"

Narissa stuck out her tongue and her body exploded into countless bats which started to spread out.

"Ahh!"

There were cries as many soldiers had their necks bitten and their blood sucked dry.

"Narissa, what's the point of you sucking their blood? Your regenerative powers will not be strengthened anyway..."

A furry-looking silhouette broke into the camp and turned into a 3-metre tall werewolf. The fur on him seemed extremely hardy as normal bullets could only cause sparks when shot at the werewolf.

The werewolf let out a disgruntled howl.

"Hehe... even so, I will not let you have them!"

Narissa's voice came from every bat all around.

"You people... are you not afraid of war by doing this?"

Wu Tie grabbed a bat and tightened his grip, smashing it into a bloodied mess.

"Although you know that we are the spies of the federation, the federation will never acknowledge our existence..."

The humongous werewolf howled and appeared frenzied. "Where is that scientist?!"

# Chapter 416: Tempest

---

"Answer me!"

The giant werewolf roared inside the camp.

Wu Tie's expression remained the same. Accompanied by commands, a few tanks and armoured vehicles drove as though they were going to surround the werewolf.

'Vampire Bat Narissa and Werewolf Jax...both of them are the top mutants in Golden Eagle Federation, why are they here?'

Wu Tie watched the scenes unfold emotionless while thoughts flashed through his mind rapidly.

"Haha... Big Dog! You better be careful! If you fall here, I wouldn't save you!"

Narissa laughed. The bats flew around everyone and could barely be stopped.

"D\*mn it, b\*tch!"

The giant werewolf roared. With his arms strength, he flipped over a vehicle.

"Bang!"

Immediately, a blinding spark exploded on his shoulder and the werewolf whimpered and moved back. There was a fleshy and bloody mess on his wound.

"This is only a Murderous Grade mutant!"

Wu Tie watched and sighed secretly as he felt the entire world had already undergone tremendous changes.

He could no longer be bothered as he roared and turned into a beam of iron light and charged towards the werewolf.

"Bang!"

The wolf's claws and the iron fists clashed, and the two of them

were evenly matched.

...

At a certain spot in the campsite, Ye Yingzi and Zhao Daniu heard the commotion outside and became tensed.

"I was ordered to relocate Professor Fang Yuan, where is he?" A blood-stained soldier leading a small group of soldiers rushed forward and asked.

"Professor is..."

Ye Yingzi suddenly paused for a moment. As she was about to say the truth that Fang Yuan was not around, Zhao Daniu was suspicious and suddenly went forward to give him a punch.

"Poof!"

In an instant, the soldier became a thin piece of paper that broke into two.

"We have been discovered?"

"Since there are mutants protecting the area that have yet retreated under such circumstances, Fang Yuan must be inside!" The voices of two women could be heard from the remaining soldiers.

"Ahh... who are you all?"

The remaining of them finally realised something was amiss. They did not know when their fellow soldiers and officer were replaced by paper shikigamis!

"Heehee!"

"Haha!"

The shikigamis who were as tall as humans laughed strangely. Suddenly, they leapt forward and stuck themselves on to the remaining soldiers as if they were glue.

A bunch of origami cranes flapped their wings and landed on the

ground before turning into the appearance of two female ninjas, "We came to invite Sir Fang Yuan to leave with us, please do not resist meaninglessly!"

"Scram!"

Zhao Daniu hollered and turned into a stone human. As he strode forward, he threw yet another punch.

"Bang!"

The ground tremored and a large crater appeared. However, the two female ninjas sinisterly continued to stand on top of their origami cranes, "Shikigami - Binding Spirit!"

"Hissssss!"

On the ground, tons of black coloured strands of hair appeared as they twined with each other and turned into numerous black pythons. They were as thick as a person's arm and quickly coiled around Zhao Daniu.

"Ahhh!"

Although Zhao Daniu magical strength was astonishing, it was as though this kind of black pythons existed both physically and mentally. Not only was Zhao Daniu's body restrained, his mind was affected too.

After Zhao Daniu struggled a few times, the black pythons coiled tighter and tighter which made him kneel on the ground.

"Secret Technique - Seal!"

"Poof!"

A puff of white smoke appeared and the black pythons on Zhao Daniu's body turned into black coloured chains that linked to the ground, which was like some sort of array.

"We just came to bring Sir Fang Yuan away, why must you resist?"

Little Vegetable spoke with her innocent voice and immediately saw Ye Yingzi clench her teeth and whip out her gun from her waist.

"Say no more, just kill them!" Little Night of the Plains said blissfully.

Little Night of the Plains and Little Vegetable cultivated in Yin Yang magic since they were young. They were originally talented and had profound expertise in spiritual spells, with the two occurrences, their powers had even further increased. Whereas, Zhao Daniu who just entered the Ghost Grade and the surrounding soldiers were no match for the two of them.

If the two of them reached the Murderous Grade, they could directly annihilate them and their powers would be unmatched.

Thus, with such a foundation, they could naturally cause changes in the minds of normal people and even cultivators.

"Hehe... two little sisters, do you need big sister's help!"

Suddenly, a group of blood-red bats flew over and turned into the appearance of Narissa. Her gaze towards Zhao Daniu was filled with satisfaction as though she saw a delectable prey, "Although I prefer that iron man just now, this stone man is bigger, not bad too!"

"No need to trouble you!" Little Vegetable replied respectfully, "As per our agreement, we just want this scientist from Chinese Country! The rest is all yours!"

"Yes, that was the agreement!"

Narissa walked two steps forward slowly which made Little Night and Little Vegetable alarmed and they then pulled out their katanas.

"But... our Boss told us... weaklings have no rights to request us to keep to our promises!"

Narissa chuckled maniacally. She extended her arm and a huge swarm of blood-red bats flew out and enveloped the surroundings.

Ye Yingzi and Zhao Daniu were enveloped in it too.

"Kaboom!"

Lightning flashed!

Above the ground, the blood-red bats, the paper shikigamis and even the black chains binding Zhao Daniu turned into ashes in an instant.

"That is... lightning and thunder!"

Large amounts of burnt bats merged into one and transformed into a ravaged Narissa. She could not believe her attack was so easily destroyed.

However, Fang Yuan's thunder was a key weapon of the heavens and earth. It controlled the changes in Yin and Yang and it was extremely mighty.

Narissa raised her head and saw a human silhouette in black shirt standing on top of the tent. She exclaimed, "God of Thunder?! Didn't you enter the fog already? I am certain I cut off and isolated all forms of communications here..."

"It's the God of Thunder... the legendary leader of Dragon Team, a Calamity Grade mutant!"

Little Night and Little Vegetable looked at each other with fear in their eyes. This was especially since the magic they cultivated were mostly ghostly Yin illusionary spells which were heavily suppressed now.

From what they sensed, Fang Yuan was like a ball of light that continuously emitted a blinding light. If they even glanced at it, their soul would be severely injured.

"You all assumed... I wouldn't notice all those sentries and hideouts you all set up around the area?"

Fang Yuan waved his arm and two streaks of lightning emerged and struck the origami cranes flying in the skies at the speed of light.

"Kaboom!"

The origami cranes were ignited by the lightning and burnt to ashes.

As Fang Yuan was cautious by nature, he naturally did not want any third party or even "fourth party" to interfere when fighting against the willow tree deep in the fog. Thus, he purposely lured them out first.

Anyway, since Xi Menjian also hinted at Fang Yuan to make use of his identity to kill a bunch of foreign spies and agents, Fang Yuan managed to kill two birds with one stone this time around.

"Sir..."

The two female ninjas trembled as though they were forced to almost grovel on their knees, "We have no intentions to make enemies with you!"

The immense wave-like pressure from Fang Yuan's body crept onto the two of them and caused them to feel as though their souls were crushed.

"Haha... this is the God of Thunder?"

Compared to the two of them, Narissa's face turned red and she looked at Fang Yuan with maniacal eyes, "Such a powerful person... I really want to... suck dry his vitality. If I suck him dry, I can definitely form an immortal body!"

"Suck me dry? You?"

Fang Yuan glanced at her and casually waved his hand.

"Kaboom!"

The dark clouds in the skies loomed and a bolt of lightning split into three bolts in an instant.

Without a doubt, Little Night and Little Vegetable were struck and knocked out. However, a whirlwind appeared beside Narissa and carried her away.

"Wruuuuu! Wwrruuuuuu!"

Gale winds raged and swept away the sands and rocks, causing the atmosphere to become dimmer and more chaotic.

"Pprrrraatt!"

A tent was torn and blew into the sky.

A terrifying tornado appeared and ravaged a path through the campsite. A blonde-haired, blue-eyed Caucasian slowly walked out from it with a solemn look on his face.

"What a powerful mutant... he's much stronger than Ma Kunyuan!"

Fang Yuan watched and felt a sense of disappointment in his heart, "Just that it's such a pity... his way does not match mine!"

After all, Ma Kunyuan was a cultivator and the Thousand Year Willow also accumulated sufficient spiritual energy. Whereas, the mutant in front of him had already fully transformed spiritual force into wind attributes.

Unless Fang Yuan wanted to specialise in wind-type spiritual spells and abandon his identity as the God of Thunder to become the God of Wind in the future, else, Fang Yuan could not fully utilise this person's energy.

"Just that..."

Fang Yuan raised his head and looked towards the sky, "Tempest Jani! Your powers are already so close to Calamity Grade, just that it's a pity you still cannot reach that stage!"

"The most honourable!"

The blond-haired, blue-eyed Jani touched his chest and saluted like a graceful Caucasian aristocrat, "We have no intentions to



make enemies with you, we just hope that you can come to Golden Eagle Federation. Our evolvers need your powers and leadership!"

"Your group of western evolvers will accept me, a Middle Continent person?"

Fang Yuan snickered, "Furthermore, aren't you all Golden Eagle Federation's secret agents? How come you all defected to the mutants' side?"

"Mister God of Thunder, you are too narrow-minded..."

Seeing such, Jani could not help but to shake his head, "Us evolvers are already a brand new type of species! We are brothers and sisters, why care about race and skin colour?"

"Furthermore... don't you know the latest developments? The Federation has already formally established a contract with Black Man Society. A great era that truly belongs to evolvers has arrived! If you come to the Federation, you will receive unimaginable freedom and everything..."

"Not only that..."

Fang Yuan shook his head, "You are a terrible persuader! I reject!"

"That's a shame!"

Jani waved his arm and an invisible gale of wind swept Narissa off the ground and carried her out of the campsite.

Just when he was about to send off the pair of Japanese ninja, Fang Yuan moved.

"Kacha!"

Fang Yuan took a step and immediately, lightning flashed and thunder roared in the skies crazily which rivalled the tornado.

"Come, lightning!"

A green coloured bolt of lightning landed on Fang Yuan's body and turned into a golden armour. Fang Yuan's speed was greatly

escalated and in a blink of the eye, he appeared in front of Jani like a bolt of lightning.

# Chapter 417: Under the Tree

---

"Boom!"

Fang Yuan pushed out his palm and a flash of lightning shot out, carrying with it what seemed to be all the wrath of heaven!

"Wind!"

Jani had a solemn look on his face and raised both his hands. A green wall of wind materialised around him.

"Bump!"

The lightning bolt and whirlwind collided and decimated each other with a bang. Except, the whirlwind fell apart faster than the lightning bolt did.

Seeing this, there was a drastic change in Jani's expression, and he tried to retreat promptly.

"Too weak! Too weak!"

"Zap!"

Fang Yuan strode forward with lightning flashing all around him. All the electricity fed the Lightning Armour he was wearing and caused it to increase in size until finally, a giant figure made out of electricity was created.

"Roar!"

The electric giant moved as though it was alive and waved his hand. In response, storm clouds began to gather and grow so much that they swallowed up the tornadoes summoned by Jani.

"Ah..."

Jani then fled without looking back.

To be able to control the regional weather all by himself! Jani finally realised the gulf between him and Fang Yuan.

The electric giant bellowed and swung out a palm towards Jani's

back.

"Bang!"

The green shield protecting Jani was shattered and the bolts of lightning scorched his back.

"Impossible... how could there be a mutant this powerful in the world!"

Jani shrieked, and blood spurted from his mouth and nose. He ran past the boundary and out of the camp.

"Boss!"

In the near distance, the humongous werewolf had overturned a tank. It howled and ran on all fours to Jani's side.

"Let's go!"

Narissa transformed into a vampire bat and screamed.

"This God of Thunder... we are no match for him as of now!"

"I don't believe it. How can an amateur yellow monkey overcome us?"

The humongous wolf was not the brightest and seemed like it was going to continue challenging Fang Yuan.

'This is quite interesting. If Jani evolves one more time, he would be a good experimental subject... and this little wolf is about to die!'

Fang Yuan thoughts ended there and he waved his hand.

"Thunder, come!"

"Zap!"

A bolt of lightning fell from the sky and turn into a longsword that the electric giant armed itself with. The giant lunged forward.

"I am Jax, the most powerful of the werewolves!!!"

Jax shouted with all his might. His eyes were bloodshot and the

hair on his skin was standing on edge. He seemed to went crazy at that moment and rushed forward aggressively.

"Poof!"

A flash of red.

The electric sword had impaled the werewolf and all his internal organs were fried in that instance.

"Bump!"

The werewolf fell to the ground and all its hair retracted to reveal a white-skinned man.

His eyes were filled with hatred, but all the energy had gone out of him and his hands went limp.

"God of Thunder....."

Wu Tie came to Fang Yuan's side. His iron skin peeled back until he looked normal again.

"Jani has already left!"

Fang Yuan closed his eyes. He could no longer sense the presence of the other party.

After all, nothing could really stand in the way of wind-type mutants if they were intent on running away, unless Fang Yuan had pursued them doggedly at the very start.

"Besides this, the camp has two captives. They are probably spies from Japan. They will be under your charge!"

"Alright!"

Wu Tie did not know what else to say.

He had always found the giant werewolf very difficult to handle.

But with the coming of the God of Thunder, not only was the werewolf slain, but even the more powerful Jani and Narissa were forced to run away. Fang Yuan was truly incredible.

"By the way, God of Thunder, haven't you already gone deep into the fog?"

Wu Tie ordered his men to dispose of the werewolf corpse and asked his question.

"It's okay... if we rush over now, we can make it!"

Fang Yuan smiled charmingly in his disguise as a middle-aged handsome man. He then transformed into a lightning bolt and surged into the distance.

"So this is how powerful the Dragon Team Leader is?"

Wu Tie suddenly felt a wave of confidence. He then proceeded to clear up the damaged campsite and prepare for what was to come.

.....

"Hmm?"

As Fang Yuan rushed into the fog another time, he immediately sensed a difference.

"The density of the air... has decreased? Was it because of my duel with Jani that led it to contract? If this is the case, the tree is self-aware and can be considered a demon."

Fang Yuan kept his Lightning Armour on. Not even the white fog could penetrate it, much less the willow catkins. He travelled like a hurricane and arrived at the park.

He could hear the sound of fighting coming from ahead.

There were a number of monsters with tentacles, along with a disgusting enchanted tree tumour. It was a motley crew, and they began to attack the travelling cars.

A shimmering water curtain surrounded the cars and it was their only defence.

Another batch of creatures came in for the kill.

They were all humanoids, but they were very tall and muscular.

They had living roots extending from their bodies, and they punched the water curtain repeatedly. The array shook every time they hit it.

"We can't hold on for much longer... these parasitic humanoids are too aggressive!"

At the heart of the array, the Daoist Guo Jing turned pale. He held a little flag in his hand and nearly spat out a mouthful of blood.

"Where's the team leader? This is going to kill us!"

Red Sister called out agitatedly, and a blue mist emanated from her hands.

"Crack!"

Outside of the water curtain, a few parasitic humanoids instantly froze and turned into ice statues.

"Crack! Crack!"

After a few breaths, cracks began to appear on the ice, flesh and blood then exploded outwards. All that was left were skeletal structures made out of roots, they then quickly disappeared into the ground.

The Daoist Guo Jing was extremely disturbed by the sight.

'These demonic creatures... they seemed to have replaced the skeletal and nervous structures of their hosts with their own. The procedure of parasitism must be terribly painful... but its success would make them uncommonly strong!"

"Fire!"

At the side, Searing Flames screamed and spewed a stream of fire. All the parasitic humanoids that came into contact with it turned into fiery torches.

Most of the warriors got into formation with their guns and set up a line of defence with their firearms.

Even so, the alarming number of parasitic humanoids coming at them was threatening to overwhelm them.

Shortly after, the rows and rows of parasitic humanoids formed a thick wall surrounding the array and the travelling cars.

"If Boss still doesn't arrive, we are all going to die!"

Searing Flames began to cough violently after spewing several jets of fire in a row. He was also beginning to tire.

"The mutants outside are not to be underestimated. We must hold on....."

The Daoist Guo Jing muttered ominously.

"Kachak!"

Suddenly, there was a flash of light.

A great electric field appeared and the outburst of energy caused many of the parasitic humanoids to fall.

"Boss!"

Seating Flames actually wept tears of joy.

"You are finally here!"

"I sensed that there was danger here."

Fang Yuan strolled forward, the lightning crackling all over his body.

"Bang!"

A layer of mud on the ground exploded outwards without warning and a large python charged towards Fang Yuan.

When it was 3 metres away from him, a bolt of lightning appeared and struck out at the python.

"Crack!"

The large snake trembled and spontaneously combusted until it turned to ash.



"This willow tree is strong in terms of its reach and survivability. It is also a model for the parasitic humanoids. However, its individual strength is nothing special!"

Fang Yuan shook his head. But he was aware that it had more to do with his arrival.

Anyone else would have died in the face of an attack by the parasitic humanoid army.

"Boss!"

As Fang Yuan entered the array, three of his followers surrounded him happily.

"How are the casualties?"

"Manageable. The most pressing issue is that the ammunition does not work on those parasitic humanoids. A few of the warriors are dead and some were victims of parasitism. We've already injected them with medicine..."

Although Professor Chen had prescribed poison, victims of parasitism might keep their lives if they were injected with it shortly after.

Of course, if they had not been victims of parasitism, they would die within ten seconds of coming into contact with it.

"Mm, let's go!"

Fang Yuan commanded the travelling cars to stay together and led the way. The group managed to smash open the big door and steered into the park slowly.

When the fog cleared slightly, Guo Jing and company saw a great willow tree that had virtually blocked out the sun. Its overflowing branches looked like dragons and its trunk stretched up into the heavens. The willow branches draped down like curtains and the catkins danced about in the wind.

"Wow... so this is the thousand year old willow tree? It is huge!"

"Damn it, all our electrical devices are not working!"

A warrior shouted.

"Does this mean that we cannot use the remote-controlled explosives, but can only demolish it at close range?"

Searing Flames looked up at what seemed like infinite catskins and he felt his scalp go numb.

"Tsktsk... if I could acquire the core of the tree, I would definitely be able to carve out a magic tool!"

Guo Jing was fantasising about this magic tool when his facial expression suddenly changed.

"What is that?"

From the foundations of the tree, translucent figures began to emerge. There were men and women, old and young. The fog was dense and they had blank looks on their faces. Suddenly, they looked over.

Their focused gazes were immensely unsettling.

"This is... the people who had once inhabited this area... spirits? Demons?"

Red Sister felt a chill in her bones.

"This demonic tree can even enslave spirits?"

Fang Yuan immediately chided his men.

"What are you guys yammering about? These so-called spirits are but manifestations of electric waves and magnetic fields... the willow tree acts as a medium that allows the magnetic fields to appear, that's all!"

Fang Yuan went on.

"The failure of our electrical devices has everything to do with the large magnetic field of the willow tree. From now on, I want everyone to remain calm, because when we enter enemy territory,

our senses might be assailed by all sorts of illusions..."

As Fang Yuan spoke, he stamped a foot on the ground.

"Crack!"

A hole was blown into the ground.

Following that, they could see a large parasitic rat head that had been charred by the explosion.

Guo Jing and company could not help but let out cold breaths of air.

The implications were clear. To come into contact with the tree, they all had to face illusions and evil spirits, not to mention possible ambushes from the parasitic beasts!

The difficulty of their mission was insane!

# Chapter 418: Ignite the Explosives

---

"This place is indeed a node for spiritual energy!"

As soon as Fang Yuan saw the willow tree, he was ecstatic.

He could sense that the willow was like a black hole, sucking in spiritual energy from the natural environment around it and releasing a vibration of a specific wavelength.

Of course, from a scientific point of view, this was merely the magnetic field emitted by a living thing.

Under the usage of such a magnetic field, all living things with a consciousness started to 'revive' and hallucinations were flooding their minds.

'If this was the ancient times, they would call this a demonic tree which has the ability to recover souls... It's a pity that it is trying to confuse me with such an illusion...'

With a fiery glow in his eyes, everything became clear to Fang Yuan.

Unfortunately, around him, even the strongest-willed soldier succumbed to the overflow of hallucinations and fell to the ground.

Under the influence of the magnetic field, even his 3 subordinates seemed like they could not hold on for any longer.

This was especially so for Searing Flames and Red Sister. They did not have the proper training to strengthen their willpowers and in this aspect, they were like normal humans and were much weaker than Guo Jing. In no time, they started to waver.

"Sigh... my subordinates are all useless!"

With a sorrowful thought, Fang Yuan sent a message to Guo Jing. "Old Guo... your responsibility is to protect everyone and prepare to retreat!"

"Roar! Roar!"

"Creak!"

From the surroundings, parasites started to gather. With the help of the illusionary effect, it was extremely easy to kill a cultivator as powerful as Guo Jing.

"Understood, boss!"

With a change in his expression, Guo Jing took out a jade bottle and smashed it on the floor. "Nine days of dew, reveal the sacred god! Strike!"

"Bang!"

Steam started to form and turned into balls of white fog which then flowed into everyone's forehead.

"Whooo!"

Red Sister and Searing Flames were gasping for air but quickly regained their composure. The other warriors started to awaken and retreated out of the park.

"Puppet, rise!"

Fang Yuan waved and a streak of lightning appeared. The car filled with explosives started to move and followed behind him.

"Rppppppp!"

Streaks of lightning ripped across the park, vaporizing all the parasites and reducing them to ash.

If Fang Yuan did not attract all the firepower to himself, Guo Jing and the rest would have no chance of escaping.

"Thousand Year Willow... don't resist any more... I've seen through you and your antics!"

Fang Yuan laughed and raised his hands.

"Rippppppp! Rippppppp!"

Streaks of lightning struck from above and the willow branches that were as strong as metal rods started to break and fall to the ground. Some of them burst into flames.

"You are good at altering the environment to aid in your attack and are even more well-versed in fighting an entire army. However, I am a super powerful single entity... you cannot stop me!"

Fang Yuan took a huge step forward and a row of cars followed behind him.

With every step he took, he could feel the magnetic field caused by the willow tree intensify. Many lone souls and spirits roared and dashed towards Fang Yuan fearlessly as though they wanted to flood him by their sheer numbers.

All of these were useless!

A blue streak of lightning surrounded Fang Yuan, vaporizing all the spirits and souls which got close to him.

"Ripppppp!"

Behind him, the military truck was damaged and its tires exploded. However, it was still being dragged forward by an invisible force and continued to make its way.

Not long after, Fang Yuan arrived at the root of the willow tree and with his outstretched hand, he could touch the emerald-green tree bark.

"It's a pity... even if your magnetic field reaches an extreme, it will still not have any effect on me!"

Fang Yuan caressed the bark of the tree and sighed. "After all... this is only the miniature version of harnessing the power of the environment around you. You have yet to gain full control over it!"

Even a Calamity Grade mutant could only harness the power of a 'place'. By creating a magnetic field, they would be able to affect a

location.

However, since the power belonged to the magnetic field, it could be neutralised, reduced or even avoided!

Only by harnessing the power of an 'area' could the mutant be invincible!

If the willow tree were to continue to develop to be able to harness the power of an area, Fang Yuan would surely retreat... After all, the power of an area was the power which only belonged to a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master in Da Qian!

Without such power, these dream masters could never match up against a True Divine or True Elemental.

"If I let you continue to grow, there is a possibility that after the third or fourth occurrence... you might be able to develop the power of an area?"

Looking at the willow tree, Fang Yuan's eyes glistened.

This realm was a realm most concentrated with energy compared to the few realms Fang Yuan had visited before and could therefore support the existence of powerful beings.

Previously, the laws which governed the realm did not allow for that to happen.

Now, things were changing.

"If I can be one of the first few to harness the power of an area, even if I cannot bring it back with me, I can learn more about achieving a breakthrough to the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage..."

Fang Yuan suddenly felt inspired all of a sudden.

His natural talent and the fact that he had the advantage of having fixed stats meant that he could traverse many worlds and retain his cultivation. As long as he were to break through a certain stage, he could do so very simply in another realm so long

he had the ability to do so.

However, the difficulty of achieving breakthroughs would vary from realm to realm!

"The higher the classification of the realm, the harder it would be to achieve a breakthrough! This world is only beginning to change... The laws are muddled at the moment and I might have the chance to obtain the power of an area!"

Fang Yuan's eyes widened with excitement.

Although the Area Beings here could not compare to a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master in Da Qian, it was still powerful in its own area!

If he were to reach that stage, he could retain it in his fixed stats and return to Da Qian without having to go through the same bottleneck again!

This was sort of cheating and playing the game out of limits!

Even other dream masters would not be able to do this for they did not have Fang Yuan's special ability.

'In other words, if other dream masters were to achieve a breakthrough here, they would still drop in their cultivation as soon as they return to Da Qian. However, for me, it will be forever and I will never have the same bottleneck in any world that I go to! All bottlenecks can only restrict me once!'

"Therefore... for my ambitions, please sacrifice yourself!"

Fang Yuan laughed heartily and stretched out his right hand to grab the tree.

"Rumble!"

Lightning erupted and the Thousand Year Willow shook frantically. Its branches wavered erratically as they diverted their attention from the fleeing Guo Jing and company to Fang Yuan.

Not just that, the earth beneath the entire park split and



countless roots emerged from below. Like arms, they waved in the air like possessed demons.

"They have begun fighting. Let's go!"

Seeing this scene, the 3 other members of the Dragon Team started to flee. "According to Leader's personality, he will surely explode the willow tree as soon as possible!"

"Rumble!"

Indeed, not long after, a shocking explosion was seen from the park.

A mushroom cloud floated up and was visible to almost half of the entire city and Wu Tie was among the ones witnessing it.

At the moment of the explosion, the park was destroyed and razed to the ground. The surrounding houses shook and their windows shattered. The soil and mud started to curl up, forming a weird-looking image.

"Buzz! Buzz!"

This was only the beginning.

After a few moments, the tremendous shockwave started to spread out.

The earth shook under the shockwave as though a tsunami was crashing through it.

Although Guo Jing and company had already tried their best to flee, they were still caught by the shockwave as a layer of soil rose above them before trapping them beneath.

...

"Spit!"

After a long while, Searing Flames wriggled out of the soul and spat out a mouthful of dirt from his mouth. As he coughed violently, he struggled to speak. "We... we were almost buried

alive!"

"This is only a small problem..."

With a yellow glow, Guo Jing appeared but was in a much better state than Searing Flames. "With my Burrowing Talisman, you will not die..."

"How's our leader?"

Red Sister looked around, only to witness the complete destruction of the surroundings.

The park which once housed the willow tree was razed to the ground and a big crater emerged in the centre of where the park once was.

"Leader... he's not dead, is he?"

Seeing the dystopian scene, Searing Flames swallowed his saliva and sounded unconfident.

"In such a destructive explosion, it should be quite hard for Leader to survive..."

Guo Jing stroked his beard and rolled his eyes. "The willow tree cannot run but Leader can. I'm sure the both of you have seen how fast he can go..."

"I wonder how much of the willow tree is left after such an explosion..."

...

In the middle of the crater.

The broken branches of the willow tree laid everywhere and were ablaze.

With the streak of a lightning, Fang Yuan appeared with a shocked look. "Wow... Considering the power of such a magnitude, If I was in the epicentre of the explosion, I would be reduced to ashes too..."

The widely-spread willow tree branches were no more and a big and empty trunk stood in the middle.

Countless roots emerged from the ground only to be burnt by the flames.

A few other stumps emerged. They seemed to be drained of energy but were all out in protecting the core tree trunk.

Green lines started to flow across the trunk and roots of the tree as though it had a life of its own.

"Hehe... This is indeed a plant with a strong will to live!"

Fang Yuan landed on the hot ground and waved his hand.

"Whooooo!"

Invisible knives formed by wind appeared and the severely damaged tree trunk was sliced, revealing an emerald-green core.

Streaks of green lines started to spread towards the roots, transferring energy and life to them.

"Give me everything of yours!"

Seeing this, Fang Yuan's eyes glistened and he stretched his right hand out.

Without obstruction, the lighting-covered hand broke the green arteries of the tree before grabbing on to the core of the tree.

Just as Fang Yuan's hand landed on the core of the tree, there was an explosion!

Amidst the cries of wronged souls, an extremely powerful source of energy erupted!

"Finally! Is this your final move?"

Fang Yuan revealed a cunning smile. "Attacking with your spirit? This is what I fear the least!"

Fang Yuan was different from other mutants. After dream-traversing to many worlds before, his mind was steadfast and the

mind attack coming from the willow tree was nothing to him!

# Chapter 419: The Driver

---

Ultimately, the Thousand Year Willow was a plant. Even though it had developed a lot from the occurrences and had a mind of its own from absorbing the spiritual droplets, it was still simple-minded for the past 20 years and was at most on par with a smart beast.

Even though it might have a strong mind power, it was nothing to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan stood where he was, closed his eyes and allowed the willow tree's mind to attack him before striking back with his mind and enjoying the process of absorbing the tree's spiritual energy.

"Kacha!"

In his body, the 2nd Grade of the Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell was broken through.

The progress bar continued to fill up and in an instant, half of it was filled.

The process of absorption lasted for quite a while. As soon as Fang Yuan came to his sense, all that remained of the stump of the willow tree was a dried up piece of wood which crumbled into powder upon touch.

In his hands, he now had an emerald-green tree core which was around the size of an egg. It was translucent and let out a glow even more dazzling than that of a diamond and it seemed to be brimming with life.

"This is where the essence of the willow tree lies. However, to me, this is similar to Jani's power of the wind. All of these are external forces. Although I can absorb it, the disadvantage would outweigh the advantage. I'll just treat it as a treasure which would aid in recovery in the future!"

Examining it in close detail, Fang Yuan realised that the pure spiritual energy of the willow tree had long been absorbed by him moments ago and these were the leftovers.

Of course, to the average human, this would be a treasure which could potentially bring the dead back to life.

At this moment, Fang Yuan gazed at his stats window and noticed a huge change:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 5.0

Spirit: 20.0

Magic: 20.0

Profession: ???

Cultivation: ???

Technique: [Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell (Grade 4 (55%))]

Skill: [Medicine (Level 3)], [Botany (Level 5)], [Fiery Golden Eyes (Level 1)]"

"Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell: The 1st Grade would grant you the Spiritual Droplets Affined Body and an increase in your energy sense! 2nd Grade of Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell would grant you the ability to release spiritual energy! The 3rd Grade of Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell is complete! You now have the ability to spiritualise!"

"The ability to spiritualise... Is this my Murderous Grade skill?"

Fang Yuan was lost in his thoughts.

In actual fact, up until now, his abilities were no different compared to the Murderous Grade mutants. However, due to the fact that he was able to make full use of his ability and had too

many unpredictable techniques, he created the illusion that he was a Calamity Grade mutant. All of these were just an illusion.

"The different grades of the Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell is in fact the grading of the mutants. After all, this is a technique which I have created to suit the laws of this realm..."

Thoughts ran wild in Fang Yuan's mind.

If he was a normal person, the completion of the 1st Grade would allow him to form the Spiritual Droplets Affined Body and an increase in his energy sense. This would make him a Mortal Grade mutant.

The completion of the 2nd Grade would give him the ability to release spiritual energy and this would make him similar to Daoist Guo and Little Night before the second occurrence. He would be a Ghost Grade mutant with the ability to execute spells.

Only now at the 3rd Grade, with the ability to spiritualise, would Fang Yuan be able to have the ability to go against an entire army and the combined forces of other mutants, putting him up at the Murderous Grade.

"Spiritualise!"

With his spiritual will, Fang Yuan commanded and in an instant, he disappeared.

No! He did not disappear. There was a shadow where he once stood.

"I am here and I am not here at the same time... to make things simple, I would be able to become illusionary for a short instant and therefore dodge powerful firepower and attacks... Only with this technique of spiritualising would I be able to go against an entire country's army and have the potential to rule the world!"

If a normal person were to cultivate to such a stage, they would be able to go head-on against powerful mutants like Jani.

Since this was Fang Yuan, it would mean that his power would be multiplied and this meant even more destructive force!

"If I were to go down the line, the 4th Grade of the Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell should be the power of a Calamity Grade mutant... I still don't know how far I have to go before I can harness the power of an area..."

"However, I am already the most powerful in the entire world to be able to reach this stage! Comparatively, nobody can ever become more powerful than me, be it beasts or mutants!"

Fang Yuan clenched his fists but remained composed. "Next up... is to clear things up, right? Clear up all the nodes in the world and push my limits to the maximum before peacefully waiting for the arrival of the third occurrence!"

According to his theory, the concentration of spiritual droplets would be 4 times higher more compared to now.

At the fourth occurrence, the Spiritual King Comet would arrive and join the orbit of the Earth.

Therefore, his final chance would be at the third occurrence!

"However... in Chinese Country, I have already checked out every corner. It seems impossible to locate anything else more drastic than the mutation of this Thousand Year Willow..."

The bottleneck of every subsequent stage of the Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell would be many times more difficult than the previous stage.

With another 45% to go, Fang Yuan knew that it was still insufficient even if he absorbed another Thousand Year Willow.

With a sigh, he gazed towards the West. "Next up... I'll have to venture overseas?"

Considering Fang Yuan's identity, Xi Menjian would never allow Fang Yuan to leave the country, but Fang Yuan couldn't care less.



He had joined the research centre to gather information about the human body and sense for himself the rules of the world to perfect his theory and his cultivation.

Now, he was leaving for the same reason, which was to achieve a higher cultivation.

The path of cultivation laid in the ability for one to do whatever one wished!

Since he could leave the country with his abilities, what was there left to hold him back?

...

After a few days.

Golden Eagle Federation, Purple Finch City.

The sky was a brilliant blue and there were occasional fluffy clouds floating around.

In the outskirts of the city, on a large empty field, a huge airship was landing.

Although aeroplanes were already invented, they were still the latest technology and the price to fly an aeroplane was still much more expensive compared to that of an airship.

Therefore, if there was no rush for time, the main mode of transport for people and goods were still the usage of airships.

The airport at Purple Finch City was one of the largest in Golden Eagle Federation and there were more than 10,000 passengers and 10,000 tons of goods flowing through the airport daily.

At this point in time, an airship landed and people of all nationalities started to disembark before gazing at the architecture in this foreign country.

As the birthplace of revolutionary technology, even though it had been weakened after the world war, the Golden Eagle Federation was still standing strong and was dubbed the 'Lighthouse of the

West' in terms of culture. This attracted people from all over the world to either come here to explore and learn more about the country or even migrate here for good.

"Respectable guests, welcome to Purple Finch City. Please take your leave from the exits of the station in an orderly manner and cooperate with the customs officers. The foreign exchange and the taxis are at..."

From a loudspeaker, there was a female voice speaking in the language of the Federation.

Fang Yuan took his sunglasses down and examined the place curiously.

He had to admit that the Golden Eagle Federation was rather well-developed and was filled with a modern vibe. However, that was all to it.

"Hopefully, I will be able to find what I am looking for!"

Fang Yuan mumbled to himself as he walked towards the customs.

"Sir, please cooperate with the customs officers!"

As two white people took notice of Fang Yuan's skin colour, they gave a dissatisfied look and started to despise him. "Also... show us your travel document!"

"Alright!"

Fang Yuan replied in a fluent Federation language before presenting his passport.

Of course, the passport was fake. Although the Golden Eagle Federation would surely welcome Professor Fang with hospitality and that Fang Yuan would not need a passport and would likely be granted citizenship, he knew that with his special identity, if he were to reveal his true identity, he would no longer be allowed to leave the country.

Therefore, he had to fake his passport.

However, after glancing at the passport, the two customs officers rudely returned the passport to Fang Yuan before signalling him to quickly take his leave.

The citizens of Golden Eagle Federation were snobbish people.

They were the heart of civilisation. No matter how much they were weakened, they were still the most powerful country in the west, and one of the proudest in the world.

"Hmph..."

Fang Yuan carried his luggage and left the airport, snickering to himself.

If not for the fact that he had to keep a low profile, he would have taught those two snobbish people a lesson.

'Although I cannot physically let them look bad, it is worse now that I have released inauspicious energy in them. They would surely suffer from illnesses and diseases in the future...'

After taking his revenge, he regained his composure and walked to the road outside.

"Hey! Brother, are you from the Middle Continent?"

A white driver noticed Fang Yuan and his eyes glistened. "I am John! Are you looking for a hired car?"

To him, Fang Yuan was a fat sheep ready to be slaughtered for his money, for Fang Yuan appeared young and lost in this big city. Most importantly, looking at how Fang Yuan dressed, he might have quite some cash with him!

"That's right!"

Looking at the driver's sneaky expression, Fang Yuan thought about his previous life where those taxi drivers were out to scam others of their money.

Of course, what caught his attention more was the bloody stench coming from John.

"I want to go to Chinatown. Do you know the way there?" Fang Yuan smiled sheepishly, acting like a dumb customer.

"Of course... I grew up in the estate next to Chinatown. Take my car and I will bring you there for a discounted price of 15 dollars!"

John professionally came over and took the luggage from Fang Yuan. "Let's go... we'll be there in no time!"

"Alright!"

Fang Yuan went into an old-looking steam car and John smiled widely as he closed the door for him. "Brother... welcome to Purple Finch City!"

"Rumble!"

At the steam-powered car roared to life, Fang Yuan's sensitive ears could pick up some other voices.

'Hehe... Ratty John has picked up another business!'

'What an unfortunate foreigner!'

'Hope the Lord blesses him...'

....

'It seems like... this person is not as simple as a driver who is out to scam me!'

Fang Yuan lowered his hat and revealed a sinister smile.

As the black car honked and swerved along the road, they soon arrived at a deserted industrial estate. There were abandoned factories everywhere and old-looking warehouses.

"Is this Chinatown? Why does it seems like we are further and further away from the city?"

Fang Yuan examined the surroundings and casually asked.

"Of course, of course..."

John snickered and had a sinister look on his face as though Fang Yuan was his prey.

# Chapter 420: Investigation

---

"Get down here!"

The carriage stopped in front of an abandoned warehouse. John turned off the engine and pulled open the car door. He cackled.

"My brothers, look what I've brought you."

"Oh! God's gift!"

A few people walked out of the old warehouse. They were all in their hippie getups, hair dyed in multiple colours, tattoos on their necks and wrists, wearing skull-themed chains and rings. They all had black eyeliner on and armed themselves with baseball bats and steel pipes. They approached the car menacingly.

"Get down now, yellow skin monkey from the Middle Continent!"

A red-haired white-skinned youth dragged Fang Yuan forward and eyed him with bloodlust.

"Mm, not bad... this coolie looks healthy. Buyers will like him!"

"Lock him up, and don't forget to scrub him from top to toe!"

"Tsk tsk... before he is sold, let's not waste this opportunity!"

An effeminate hippie smiled and stuck out his tongue, which had a pearl piercing. There was an evil glint in his eyes.

"My god!"

Fang Yuan put on a cool face.

"I don't want to play with you all any longer! By capturing me, do you intend to sell me as a slave?"

He had long heard that during the period of unrest in the Middle Continent, many yellow-skinned people were taken in by the Golden Eagle Federation's sweet-talking advertisements for job opportunities abroad. They had packed up all their belongings and stowed away on illegal immigrant ships, only to find out that they

had been sold into slavery. They had become workers of the lowest level and suffered even more than they had in the Middle Continent.

Those that managed to make a name for themselves were the few fortunate ones.

"No no! There isn't any factory or mine around here that still needs workers from the Chinese country. We have a better idea. Isn't that right... Ratty John?"

"Boss Bond, let's take his luggage first. There should be quite a lot of money inside... these Chinese people are like rats; they like to stuff cash and all sorts of resources in their nests!"

John continued to smile as he looked at Fang Yuan.

"Yellow skin monkey, it is unfortunate that you have fallen into our hands. Boss Bond is right, everything you have, both your kidneys, your liver, your heart, your blood... we will sell them all at a good price."

"The black market for organs?"

Fang Yuan furrowed his brows. As one of the top doctors in the Chinese country, he was naturally aware of the progress made in medicine by the other countries.

"The medical expertise of the Golden Eagle Federation has progressed to such a level?"

"No... this isn't right, there is another possibility!"

Fang Yuan's eyes gleamed.

"Even if there is insufficient medical skill, the rejection effect from transplantation can be alleviated through the introduction of mutations..."

"What are you talking about?"

A change came over Bond's face and he immediately waved a hand.

"Get him!"

His surrounding henchmen pounced forward at the same time, and one of them even pulled out a spring knife.

"Alright, scumbags!"

Fang Yuan loosened up his body.

"I don't know how many people have suffered under you all, but it is your misfortune to have met me!"

"Asshole!"

A hippie screamed and came charging at Fang Yuan with a baseball bat.

It was a quick and heavy weapon which could deal severe damage with one blow.

"Thwack!"

The bat was stopped in mid-air by a swift grab from Fang Yuan.

The hippie was unwilling to let go of the bat and was thus swung backwards where he landed on the floor several metres away.

"Kill him!"

Bond called out loudly to his men. Beads of cold sweat lined his brows as he retreated.

Fang Yuan's performance was making him very uneasy.

"Argh!"

An obese man lunged towards Fan Yuan with a steel pipe while a hippie danced about with a knife and approached him from the other side.

Ratty John rolled his eyes but stayed behind with his boss instead of joining the attack.

"Bing bang!"

Fang Yuan surged forward, grabbed the steel pipe and tossed it



aside with the obese man still holding onto it.

"Oof!"

The knife in the hippie's hand entered the obese man's stomach as he received a crushing blow to the head from the obese man's pipe.

"Dogshit! Mutant!"

Seeing that Fang Yuan had turned around to face them, Bond and John turned tail and ran away.

Fang Yuan chased them into the old warehouse and with a throw of the steel pipe, Ratty John screamed and fell to the floor holding his thigh.

"Ahh... don't kill me! I'm just his henchman!"

Ratty John crawled backwards pathetically as Fang Yuan walked over.

"Do you know... where is the doctor in charge of harvesting organs?"

Fang Yuan asked casually.

"I don't... don't know. The boss communicates directly with him!"

"What a pity. You are no longer of any use to me!"

Fang Yuan grabbed him by the head and yanked it sideways.

"Crack!"

There was a piercing sound of splintering bones and Ratty John's head turned a full 180 degrees. Fresh blood spurted from where his head still hung partially on his neck.

"Dogshit! Dogshit!"

Fang Yuan could sense that Boss Bond went deep into the warehouse instead of escaping. He kicked over a couple of crates before snatching up a hand pistol among a large pile of cash.

As Fang Yuan approached, Bond immediately raised his pistol and took aim.

"Alright... mister, all this has been a damned misunderstanding!"

"See, there's lots of money here... you can choose to take it all, or fight me to the death..."

Bond's voice was quivering slightly.

"The Brother's Sect can tap on the influence of the Black Man Society. Even though you are a mutant, you are still a foreigner... as long as you let me leave, everything will be kept under wraps... believe me!"

"Black Man Society?"

Having heard about the largest mutant association in the Golden Eagle Federation, Fang Yuan threw out a coarse laugh.

"If your death can bring them to me, that would be best. But right now... I don't need your money yet, nor your life!"

"Zoom!"

With a flash, Fang Yuan snatched Bond's pistol away from in front of him and broke his index finger for good measure.

"Bring me to your base camp, and find me the doctor!"

Fang Yuan toyed with the pistol casually and brought it to Bond's forehead.

"You want to meet our leader? Alright, I'll bring you to him!"

Bond nodded as cold sweat appeared on his brows.

"Get on the car!"

Fang Yuan dragged Bond up the car.

"If I even sense that anything is going wrong, I'll fire immediately... you can try me!"

"Of course not!"

Bond grimaced and started the engine.

'This... is a city filled with blood and sin!'

Fang Yuan gazed out of the car windows and was slowly absorbed into his surroundings.

This trip was an impromptu one. The God of Thunder's mysterious disappearance after duelling with the Thousand Year-old Willow Tree was news that would shake up the mutant community.

There would be chaos in every ministry in the country.

Of course, Fang Yuan could scarcely be bothered by these things.

He chose the Golden Eagle Federation over the Blue Star Alliance because the vampires and werewolves had the power of their bloodline. He was not interested in the god dao of the Curia.

Also, there was something else that led him to choose the Golden Eagle Federation.

Fang Yuan opened his luggage and took out an idol of the Aquilaria Maitreya.

This artefact was originally in the possession of Guo Jing, and the second inspection he conducted managed to yield some answers.

This idol was, in fact, a key, or rather, half a key.

From the information Fang Yuan had gathered, the other half was with a collector in the Golden Eagle Federation.

The unrest in the Middle Continent was a blow to the collector community. Many prized treasures and artefacts were taken overseas.

Fang Yuan was extremely interested in this mysterious idol as well and thus wanted to get to the bottom of things once and for all.

"Your heart rate is 88 beats per minute, 17 breaths per minute...

you better keep things within this range, or I'll shoot!"

Fang Yuan had noticed that Bond kept stealing glances at him from the front, and decided to reveal the barrel to him as a gentle reminder.

'Devil... he's the devil from the Middle Continent!'

Bond laughed bitterly and extinguished the ideas he was entertaining in his mind. It was safer to just follow orders and drive on.

.....

While Fang Yuan was on his killing spree at the Brother's Sect hideout.

On a docked airship, in one of the offices.

The two white inspectors who had interrogated Fang Yuan before were called into the office, and they stared back at several solemn-looking men in black windbreakers.

"Chief!"

"So you are the two idiots who let him go?"

One of the men in black had a bad temper and gave them a hard kick each.

"What is happening?"

The security officer standing by took out his handkerchief and mopped the cold sweat off his brows.

"We are the Federal Special Investigation Bureau. We have reason to suspect that a dangerous person has entered our borders through this place! You are both to be questioned!"

A man in black windbreaker flashed his identity card.

"No way... please provide proof that you are from the Immigration authorities..."

Just as the security officer gave his weak retort, he received a

punch on his face.

"Idiot. Do you know the gravity of your mistake? You superior won't be able to protect you. Follow me to the Investigation room, or I'll arrest you for not complying with the military law!"

The man in black with a pale face was looking more threatening than ever.

"Okay... fine!"

In truth, even though news regarding the existence of mutants had already spread all over the world, but it was still very difficult for most people to accept it.

Especially for the Special Investigation Bureau, newly set up but nearly unlimited in power. They would have to cooperate with and adapt to the system.

Still, it was not a surprise that investigators of the bureau liked to throw their weight around.

Under violence and intimidation, the investigators got what they wanted shortly, that is a video recording.

"It's him!"

A few of the men in black widened their eyes and scrutinised Fang Yuan's disguise on the screen.

Of course, the video proved that was no identity proof on the passport, just one single word: "Idiot!"

"Ping!"

The chief officer in black smashed his fist onto the table. His eyes were bloodshot.

"Impudent yellow skin monkey, I'll definitely catch you one day!"

# Chapter 421: A Shocking Commotion

---

Ear-piercing metal music and a stench of alcohol filled the streets as they made their way through the small alleys.

Under Bond's guidance, Fang Yuan quickly arrived at a pub in Purple Finch City.

"Bond?"

Two well-built white people gazed at Bond before looking at a cool-looking Fang Yuan wearing sunglasses and felt that something was not right.

"He is a big buyer. I've brought him here!"

Although Fang Yuan's hands were both in his own pockets, Bond was not willing to risk his own life and could only lie. "Is Boss in the pub?"

"You're lucky, Boss is in a good mood today!"

The well-built bodyguard smiled and opened the door.

"Rumble!"

The noisy atmosphere became much louder and was deafening and pressurising.

In the pub, colourful lights were illuminated everywhere and weirdly-dressed male and females were mixed in a few metal cages. The dancers wore skimpy clothing and were performing seductive dances.

Bond made his way into the crowd and thought about escaping.

However, at that moment, a firm hand gripped on to his shoulder and the tight grip which caused him immense pain made him plead. "No... no! I'll bring you to the 'doctor'!"

"Are you still playing tricks with me?"

Fang Yuan immediately tightened his grip and crushed a few

bones.

Before he could say 'doctor', a few people could sense that something was wrong and were looking towards Bond nervously.

'How can he be still so nimble in such an environment? Could they be mutants?'

Releasing his spiritual will, Fang Yuan shook his head. "2 Mortal Grade mutants and 2 Ghost Grade mutants? Hmm... There is another Ghost Grade mutant in the secret room behind and its ability is similar to Sun Xiaohong, which should be related to quick recovery."

"Ah..."

Under the immense pain from the shattered bones, Bond started to kneel on the ground and broke into cold sweat.

"Hey! The handsome fella from the East... do you wanna dance?"

Fang Yuan could detect that a Ghost Grade mutant was approaching him. It was a pretty lady in her 20s, and she threw a seductive look at Bond.

Bond stood up and no longer felt the pain as he was in a daze.

'Is this casting an illusion?'

Seeing this, Fang Yuan sort of knew what was happening as he followed the lady to a corner with a sofa.

"Listen up... dude! I don't care who you are, but the White Pigeon Society will deal with the Brother's Sect!"

Sitting on the sofa was an old man with two bodyguards by his side. Fang Yuan could detect that there were a total of 4 mutants here.

"The White Pigeon Society?"

Fang Yuan sat on the sofa without any reservations and got himself a cocktail. "I've never heard of it!"

"We are a peacekeeping organisation, kid!"

The old man gave a compassionate smile. "The Lord has given us various special abilities, but not for us to misuse them. Mutants are ultimately still humans and therefore, we should live in peace with normal humans..."

"That's a great speech..." Fang Yuan gave a long whistle. "After that... are you guys prepared to maintain world peace? How is this related to me?"

"The Brother's Sect is not simple. It is involved in a secret plan of the Black Man Society... Therefore, we cannot be reckless!"

The lady which brought Fang Yuan here retorted.

"I'm sorry... We have yet to introduce ourselves. I am Paul and this is Lucy..."

Paul chuckled. "Lucy has a bad temper..."

"No matter who it is, anyone who has dealt with these alcoholics every day will have a bad temper..."

Lucy scoffed. "Old man... How long are you intending to collect information?"

"Soon. I've received information that there will be a representative from the Black Man Society who will meet up with someone from the Brother's Sect!"

Paul gave an apologetic smile.

"Wait a minute... Haven't the Black Man Society reconciled with the Federation?"

Fang Yuan twitched his eyebrows.

"They have only colluded with a few of the generals in the Federation Armed Forces! They are collectively working on the invention of a new weapon... Furthermore, the society leader of our White Pigeon Society knows the society leader of the Black Man Society. We know that they are insistent on forming a mutant



country!" Paul sighed.

"I see! But what has all this got to do with me?"

Fang Yuan stood up. "Since the Brother's Sect has offended me, I will destroy it completely! It's that simple!"

"Hey! Are you not listening to me? Sit down!"

Lucy glared at Fang Yuan and started to spread her mind power in an attempt to hypnotise Fang Yuan.

"Little girl, you must know that this is not how you should use mind power!"

Fang Yuan took his sunglasses down and had a mocking look in his eyes.

"You..."

Lucy's expression changed as she felt as though she had entered a scary world. At that moment, that insubstantial mind power of hers was consumed, and a dreadful force started to come her way, pulling her into a bottomless hell.

"Phew..."

It only took a few moments before this white lady turned pale. She fell to the sofa, weakened as she breathed heavily.

This was after Fang Yuan had controlled his powers. Otherwise, Lucy might just turn into his slave or even an idiot, and that was within Fang Yuan's control.

"A mind power mutant?"

Paul was shocked. "Who would've known that you are one of the rare types of mutants..."

"Hmmm, another one is here. It seems like he is from the Black Man Society!"

Fang Yuan looked towards the secret room and released his senses. With that, he could detect the traces of a Murderous Grade

mutant.

With a look of pity, Fang Yuan glared at the old man before him.

If not for the fact that Fang Yuan was here, how could the old man possibly think of capturing all of them with their collective powers? They would be considered fortunate if the people of the Black Man Society did not counterattack and capture them instead.

"No one can stop me from what I want to do!"

Fang Yuan announced his intention and walked towards the secret room.

"Stop! This is private property!"

10 over bodyguards formed a human wall and some of them even reached out for their guns.

"Scram!"

With a shout, an invisible force spread out. The glass windows shattered, the tiles on the floor flew up and a path of destruction was formed.

"Rumble!"

Such a huge commotion created chaos in the pub. All the youngsters started to scream and run towards the exits.

"Force of the mind?"

Paul looked at Lucy, not knowing what to do. "Are you okay?"

"Be careful, he is extremely powerful! He might be a 3rd Tier mutant!"

Chinese Country classified the mutants into Mortal, Ghost, Murderous and Calamity Grades. After receiving intelligence, other countries started to grade their mutants as well. Of course, they wanted to seem original and changed the naming convention.

The 3rd Tier mutants of the Golden Eagle Federation were the Murderous Grade mutants of Chinese Country. Every one of these

mutants was extremely powerful and normal mutants or police forces could do nothing to stop them.

"A 3rd Tier mutant? When did such a powerful mutant appear in Purple Finch City?"

Paul gave a sigh of hopelessness. Suddenly, a wall of sand appeared around them, separating them from everyone else. "Inform the headquarters that this place is out of our control..."

...

"Doctor, it seems like you have caused some trouble!"

In the secret room, two silhouettes walked out. The first one was a middle-aged man with green eyes. He was wearing a suit and as he walked out, he gave a cunning smile.

"After all, by doing the investment, I have already left too many traces!"

Behind him, a doctor in white robes raised his glasses. "Did the society send you here to settle all these?"

"That's right!"

The man in a suit walked forward and appeared proud. "I am Roger of the Black Man Society! Are you from the White Pigeon Society?"

"Nope... I am merely a tourist! However, doctor, your Brother's Sect had offended me!"

Fang Yuan replied with a smile and leapt towards Roger. "Get lost!"

"Bang!"

With his fist striking out, he slammed into Roger's face. Like a cannonball, Roger flew backwards and was struck into the wall behind him before becoming buried by the falling bricks.

"Brother's Sect? No! This must be a misunderstanding..."

Seeing how Roger flew out in a single punch, the doctor's expression changed and his arms waved frantically. "My special ability is in healing and I can be useful to you. I can make lots of money for you, so don't kill me..."

This doctor was a mutant who had the ability to regenerate himself. Seeing how Fang Yuan was approaching him, he knelt down.

"Bang!"

Beside them, the fallen bricks exploded and Roger's silhouette appeared. "Kid... you've angered me!"

At this point in time, Roger's body was crystal-like as though he was covered in a layer of thick ice. There were crack marks on his face.

"It's Roger the Iceman!"

Within the sand wall, Lucy shrieked. "D\*mn it! It's another 3rd Tier mutant... old thing, you almost got us killed!"

"Die!"

Roger paid no attention to Paul and his company. He rushed towards Fang Yuan and struck his fist out.

"Cccrrrrrrr!"

In mid-air, a cone of ice started to grow out, forming an icicle.

"Hehe!"

At this point in time, the kneeling doctor suddenly revealed a surgery knife in his hands. Like a snake, his arms slithered as he aimed towards Fang Yuan's throat.

As the leader of the Brother's Sect, how could he not know any self-defence techniques?

"Bind!"

Without changing his expression, Fang Yuan muttered one word.

At that moment, the doctor froze in his comedic posture as though he was being restrained by thousands of invisible chains.

Roger's attack also slowed down and Fang Yuan easily dodged it before returning another punch towards Roger's heart.

"Bang!"

The iceman flew back once more as though he was being hit by an oncoming train. Quickly, he leapt out from the rubble once more. "It's useless... with my defence, even bullets cannot penetrate me!"

"Idiot... Why do I want to destroy your defence?"

Seeing this, Fang Yuan shook his head and sighed. "Do you not know that there is a technique in Chinese Country known as 'hitting the bull across the mountain'? Oh... I'm sorry. You're an uneducated swine and must not have read much..."

"What?"

Roger had a look of confusion before his expression started to change. He held onto his chest tightly. "You..."

"Bang!!"

A dull explosion was heard.

With a shriek, Roger spat out a mouthful of blood and many pieces of ruptured organs before falling to the ground. His eyes were wide open and his death was certain.

# Chapter 422: Roth

---

"Iceman Roger... is dead?"

Inside the sand wall, Lucy, Paul and two bodyguards were stunned and stupefied as they watched the scenes unfold.

"Impossible... Roger is a 3rd Tier mutant! A powerful general in Black Man Society! He even fought back against one whole troop before..." Lucy muttered.

"Nothing is impossible... that is indeed Roger!"

Paul the old guy sighed, "Chinese Country... is really a magical country."

"Doctor... I can't help but say, your acting skills are subpar!"

Fang Yuan faced away from Roger's corpse and turned around to take the doctor's surgery knife. He pressed the knife on the doctor's eye and taunted, "Tell me... how do you want to die?"

"Wait a minute!"

Paul could not hold it anymore, "This mister... is very important to us! Please hand him over to us!"

"What you are trying to say is that, I actually have no authority to judge them?"

Fang Yuan turned around and gave a slight grin.

If Fang Yuan did not display his shocking powers, the four of them from White Pigeon Society would have swarmed to him already,

"No... It's purely a request!"

Paul felt a chill down his spine but remained composed and replied with a calm voice.

"Since it is a request, that mean means I can accept it and I can also reject it too?"

Fang Yuan casually glided the surgery knife across the immobile doctor's face, creating numerous lines of blood.

As he still had his healing special ability, the cuts on his face healed rapidly. Nevertheless, it was not a pleasant thing for the doctor when Fang Yuan repeatedly cut his face.

"This guy is a lunatic!" The doctor thought.

The doctor was struck with fear as he looked at the smiling Fang Yuan. However, he suddenly shouted, "White Pigeon Society's Paul? I know! Quick, save me... I know everything about Black Man Society's Demon Weapon Plan! I was the one who provided the capital and the preliminary experimental data!"

"Indeed... Demon Weapon Plan?!"

Lucy and Paul glanced at each other and walked forward firmly. At the same time, the two bodyguards behind with no presence whipped out two very sci-fi looking silver-coloured guns.

The two bodyguards had strong bodies and underwent strict training before. Even skilled soldiers, assassins and such were no match for them. But now, they were like backdrops and useless.

"Well, I can technically hand him over to you all!"

Fang Yuan chuckled, "But, what can I get in return?"

Paul heaved a sigh of relief, "You will receive White Pigeon Society's friendship... and of course, you will have our assistance in anything you do inside Golden Eagle Federation..."

"That doesn't sound very sincere..."

Fang Yuan threw his hand and the doctor was thrown out, "But, that shall be it! I accept it!"

"Thank you!"

Paul's expression was slightly awkward and he immediately ordered his subordinate to restrain the doctor with a pair of handcuffs. That pair of handcuffs looked very familiar to Fang

Yuan as it was the Demon Restraining Cuffs he designed.

"These Demon Restraining Cuffs were designed by a prominent scientist from your country called Professor Fang Yuan! I must say he is really a creative genius, any mutants who are 2nd Tier and below would immediately lose their abilities once they are cuffed..." Paul explained as he did not recognise Fang Yuan's disguise.

At that moment, news of mutants attacking the pub had already spread far and wide. A piercing police siren could be heard from outside too.

"Okay... we cannot clash with the police, let's leave now!"

Paul looked at Fang Yuan.

"Okay!"

Fang Yuan shrugged his shoulders. He then found a suitcase and casually stuffed large amounts of cash into it.

"Heh... greedy yellow skin man!"

Although Lucy had suffered from Fang Yuan just now, her rebellious teenage girl nature still made her sneer.

...

After they left, many policemen arrived at the pub and cordoned off the area. There were also a few forensic scientists who went to collect evidence.

Half an hour later, members dressed in black windbreakers from the Federal Special Investigation Bureau arrived too.

"Intelligence shows that... this is Brother's Sect's lair! They are one of Black Man Society's subordinate forces!"

A man in a windbreaker with a cigarette in his mouth gave a gloating smile, "A battle between mutants? I love such scenes where these wild dogs bite each other..."



"Then you definitely would not want to see the next scene!"

One of his companions took out an old-fashioned monitor and scanned Roger who was on the floor. He then immediately exclaimed, "This is... Iceman Roger!?"

"What? The Iceman who is in one of Black Man Society's high-level cadre? The one who has defences impenetrable to bullets and who could manipulate ice? Impossible!"

A few men in windbreakers walked forward and surrounded the monitor. They were speechless when they saw the face on the ground was exactly the same as the face on the monitor.

"D\*mn it! We were just tracking down a foreign mutant, why are we embroiled in this kind of matter now..."

The officer of the men in windbreakers felt extremely uneasy.

Such a matter would give his superior's superior or even any chief of the bureau a massive headache.

After all, they were the ones who were clearest about Black Man Society's strength. The Black Man Society was a powerful organisation in the legal grey areas with numerous connections, which included many congressmen and powerful generals.

"Sh\*t!" He viciously shouted, "Immediately report the intelligence and request for support!"

"Yes, Sir!" His subordinate immediately obeyed the orders and dialled his phone.

The response was unimaginably fast. 10 minutes later, a group of men in black suits arrived.

"You are all... people from Black Man Society?"

The officer from the investigation bureau frowned as he saw the group of them in their black suits.

"Yea... you don't have to investigate this matter here anymore, we will fully take over!"

A golden lion looking well-built Caucasian man spoke slowly with a deep voice that sounded naturally pressurising.

He then walked to Roger and took off his hat.

"Although Roger is the weakest one amongst our 13 high-levelled cadres, Black Man Society's name absolutely cannot be tarnished by others!"

"This does not abide by the laws... you all are just a grassroots organisation!" The officer from the bureau replied with a slight shiver in his voice and cold sweats appeared on his forehead as he remembered that man's identity.

"Ring...!"

The brick phone on the officer's hand rang, which made him involuntarily stood straight. He then picked up his call, "Officer! ... Yes, Sir! I understood!"

After he hung up his phone, he faced the man in front of him with mixed emotions and said, "According to my superior's order, from now onwards, our investigation bureau will assist you all and provide you all with intelligence and leads!"

"That should be the way!" One of the men in black suit behind the golden lion laughed and sneered in a sarcastic manner.

The faces of the personnel from the investigation bureau were red with anger but they could only bear and tolerate with it.

"Officer, the sketch is done!"

A man in a windbreaker ran out while holding a piece of facial sketch on his hand, "According to the survivors' descriptions and comparisons, the person who was here was that yellow-skinned mutant who just entered our country!"

"Let me see!"

The golden lion looking man grabbed the sketch and looked at it.

The sketch was in the image of Fang Yuan's disguise and it looked

like a shy and reserved teenager.

"Such a person killed Roger and kidnapped the doctor?"

The man roared, "He's dead meat... I, Golden Lion Barton, will rip apart all his limbs and make him wail his way down to hell!"

.....

"Demon Weapon Plan, what does that mean?"

At that moment, inside a long sedan car, Fang Yuan questioned Lucy.

"Tell him!"

Paul who was sitting in front sighed.

"We roughly know it's some sort of human experiment. The crazy scientists from Black Man Society want to artificially create special abilities and thus a mutant in order to utilise it as a weapon... and therefore, breakthrough some sort of limitations!"

Lucy continued, "That's all we know, further information has to be interrogated from the doctor!"

At that moment, the eyes of the mutant with healing abilities were still and lifeless, it was evident that he was already hypnotised by Lucy.

Lucy had also seemingly regained her confidence through what she did to the doctor. Although she still did not dare to provoke Fang Yuan, she at least recovered from her setbacks.

"Artificially created special abilities?"

Fang Yuan stroked his chin, "As expected..."

"What did you say?"

"Nothing..."

"Okay... Mister, we still do not know your name and your objectives?"

Paul turned around and stared at Fang Yuan inquisitively.

["My name is... Lei!"](#) I came to Golden Eagle Federation to look for the whereabouts of an artwork." Fang Yuan replied calmly.

"That simple?"

Lucy did not believe what Fang Yuan said at all, "For them to send you, a 3rd Tier mutant, to come all the way here? Is that artwork a national treasure from the Middle Continent?"

Even an extremely expensive national treasure would not be of much military use. In the eyes of those in authority, it would not even be as valuable as a 3rd Tier mutant.

"By handing over the doctor to you all, it means that I would need you all to mobilise all your strength to look for that collector!" Fang Yuan said straightforwardly.

"Fine... if that is your only objective, I think we can do our best to help you!"

Paul thought for a moment and asked, "Who is the collector you are looking for?"

"Eric Roth!"

"The Roth family?"

Lucy wrapped her head and rolled her eyes, "I knew it wouldn't be so simple!"

"I know he has a lot of power, looks like it's pretty substantial..."

Fang Yuan shrugged his shoulders.

"Of course... the Roth family is a renowned big family in Flor State! They have had 5 four-star generals and 3 vice presidents! They have already established the Roth Financial Group! The Eric Roth person you mentioned is its current helm!"

Paul looked at Fang Yuan with sympathy, "Lei! Give up!"

In Golden Eagle Federation, offending a financial group was even

more horrifying than offending any other normal official.

Furthermore, not only could such a large family utilise the whole Federation's strength, there would be many mutants working for them too.

Even the White Pigeon Society would not dare to have a conflict with them so easily!

"Sorry! I must have it!"

Fang Yuan crossed his arms and coldly rejected Paul's suggestion.

Same word as "thunder" in Chinese

# Chapter 423: Threat

---

"Lei... he is an interesting person..."

Very quickly, the higher-ups of White Pigeon Society received news from Paul. "Going to the Flor State to find trouble for the Roth Family?"

Within a small office, a few holographic silhouettes sat around a table and looked towards Old Paul who sat in the middle.

"That's right... he claims to be after a piece of artwork, but did not reveal the name of the artwork. Eric Roth is a well-known collector and he has over 3,000 pieces of artwork from Middle Continent alone..."

"A 3rd Tier mutant... this is unfortunate!"

Another old man rested his chin on both of his hands. "If Lei is willing to tell us about the artwork, we can probably be the middleman... Even for Roth Financial Group, it would be a good deal for them to establish good relations with a 3rd Tier mutant in exchange for a treasured artwork of theirs."

"I'm sorry... Lei is resolute in his decision... Furthermore, we know the traits of these tycoons. Once we get involved with them, we would have never-ending troubles..."

Another silhouette shook his head.

"That Lei..."

At this point in time, a white shirt man sitting in the centre started to speak. "Do we have information about him?"

"Nope! Just as we first encountered him, we have already sent our hackers to fish for information from the customs' database. Unfortunately, Lei used a fake identity..."

Paul shook his head. "Also, our representatives in Middle Continent told us that they do not have information on this

mutant!"

"Any 3rd Tier mutant with a force of the mind like this would forever be on the radar once it reveals itself... Since every country does not have information on it, does this mean that he is a newly-mutated mutant?"

The man in white shirt waved his hands. "Forget it... we shall place our priority on observing him. We shall provide him with information regarding the Roth Family, but will not stand on his side openly!"

"I understand!"

Paul nodded his head before disappearing.

"Lorita! How's the questioning session going on?"

The man in white shirt glanced towards the silhouette on his right.

It was a 13 years old young lady in a black princess dress. With her appearance resembling a doll, anyone who would see her would not be able to hold themselves back from giving her a pinch on the cheeks.

"Yawn... It's boring..."

Lazily, Lorita yawned. "I only scared him a little before being able to get him to reveal everything. It's so boring!"

"This means the Demon Weapon Plan is true!"

"Yes!"

Lorita took out her lollipop and started to lick on it. Squinting her eyes, she continued. "Even yourself and the head of Black Man Society are only at the peak of the 3rd Tier. The theorized Demon Weapon will have the ability to break through the limits and is indeed worthy to be the final weapon!"

"Although we are very behind Chinese Country in terms of research about mutants, anything as dangerous as the Demon

Weapon should not belong in this world. Furthermore, it is immoral to perform experiments on mutants!"

The society leader of White Pigeon Society came to a conclusion.

"We have no choice... Those generals in the Ministry of Defence keep harping on the fact that Chinese Country has a 4th Tier mutant, which makes the Golden Eagle Federation under serious threat..."

Another man on the left sighed. "Because of the fact that Jani had failed the previous time, we are now solely focusing on commencing the Demon Weapon Plan, even if it means cooperating with Black Man Society!"

"Where is the location of the laboratory?"

"It's in Flor State, beneath the Flor Reservoir!"

The society leader of White Pigeon Society remained silent. "Flor State... could this be a coincidence?"

...

Flor State, Ivy City.

There was the greenest city in Flor State. Gardens decked the city and complemented the many mansions and buildings here.

Although Flor State was known for its manufacturing industry, there were not many factories in sight and was one of the safest cities in the entire Federation.

Therefore, many tycoons would prefer to stay here. Even those who stayed elsewhere would buy a few mansions here to spend their perfect getaway in this charming city.

Around these rich tycoons' mansions were many bodyguards, drivers, nannies and maids, all of them in service of the tycoon's families.

A poor man's hell was a rich man's heaven. This was such a place.



"In Ivy City, you can buy anything as long as you have the money!"

A gold-plated car stopped outside a five-star hotel. A young white lady walked out proudly and stood out from the rest.

The bellboys who stood at the door took a bow and their foreheads almost touched the ground.

A red carpet was rolled from the door to the car.

The young lady walked out and stretched her hand out.

'That must be an important figure from an influential family or a tycoon...'

Under the plain sight of everyone, a yellow Chinese in a western suit walked out from the other side of the car.

Everyone was utterly stunned.

'Could they have seen wrongly? How was this possible? How can a yellow Chinese have such a socio-economic status?'

Unfortunately, amidst their inner cries, their strict training made them pay equal respects to this guest and they were perfectly hospitable.

"Is this how it feels to be rich? It's great!"

When they finally entered their suite, Lucy exclaimed loudly before starting to roll on the bed. Her face was filled with satisfaction.

"It's a pity... they are still too racist."

Fang Yuan shook his head. "To them, they believe that a yellow Chinese cannot have such a status and are not worthy of riches and respectable treatment... Also, why are you following me?"

He looked at Lucy and rolled his eyes.

After gaining satisfaction from rolling on the bed, Lucy pitifully took out a document. "Eric is the head of the Roth Family. At any

moment, he will be protected by a 3rd Tier mutant beside him. You must be careful... oh, wait, the one who has to be careful will never be you!"

After all, she had witnessed Fang Yuan destroying Iceman Roger with brute force and still had not gotten over it.

"If I get physical, will you stop me?"

Fang Yuan spoke in a mocking tone.

"Unless your destruction is too much to the point that you will harm other civilians!"

Lucy spoke solemnly. "Also, according to the order from our society leader, I will only provide you will information and will not directly help you..."

"Ding dong!"

The doorbell rang.

"Room service? I don't think we requested for it, right?"

With suspicion, Lucy picked the receiver up and her expression changed. "It's the people from the Roth Family looking for Lei... I did not betray you!"

She broke into cold sweat and knew that it surely had to be a member of the White Pigeon Society that let the cat out of the bag.

"Alright! I know it's not you!"

Fang Yuan shrugged his shoulders and squinted his eyes before opening the door. "Please enter!"

"Hello!"

A man in a suit wearing a pair of gold-rimmed glasses entered respectfully. "I am a lawyer and my name is Cyril. I serve under the Roth Financial Group and I welcome you to Ivy City, Mr Lei from the Middle Continent!"

"What's up?"

Fang Yuan sat on the sofa calmly and asked.

"I bring with me the good intentions of Mr Eric Roth!"

Cyril raised his glasses. "Mr Lei, you're here for one of Mr Eric Roth's artwork, right? Mr Eric is a generous person. As long as you are willing to sign this agreement, he will be willing to give you any artwork you like!"

Cyril passed the document over.

"Oh? To hire me as a special consultant, help him once and be rewarded with 10 million dollars, and on top of that get a yearly bonus... He is indeed very generous!"

Fang Yuan flipped through the document and was clear about the agreement. However, what he said next shocked Cyril. "What if... I don't agree?"

"Why not!"

This was the first time Lawyer Cyril had lost his composure. He was a skilled lawyer of a tycoon and represented an unimaginable amount of fortune and status.

For a person like him, it would take him a lifetime before he would even have a chance to achieve such fortune but for the person in front of him, it was a simple matter of agreeing to the terms.

Cyril could not think of any reason as to why Fang Yuan would reject the agreement.

"Blame it on my... stubbornness!"

Fang Yuan shook his head. "It seems like the deal is over. What plans does Mr Eric have?"

"He does not have any plans for we are law-abiding citizens. It is regretful!"

Cyril packed up his briefcase. "However... I heard that you have used unlawful means to enter the country and that you are under

the scrutiny and investigation of the people from Black Man Society?"

"It's a threat, I see!"

Fang Yuan shook his head. "In the end, you are only a timid mouse capable of using other people to achieve your objective. I overestimated you... Let's go!"

"Where are we going?"

Cyril froze.

"To where Eric keeps his collection!"

Fang Yuan smiled.

Among the few thousand artworks Eric had, Fang Yuan did not specify which artwork he was after. If Eric wanted to transfer the artworks to another place, it would be a troublesome process. Therefore, the artwork was likely still in its original place.

"Alright!"

Cyril was desolated as he led the way.

"This is... my Hypnotising Spell!"

Seeing this scene, Lucy held her mouth and was stunned. "How is this possible? Are you not a mutant with the force of the mind?"

"My lady!"

Fang Yuan scoffed. "Who told you that a person cannot have two special abilities? Furthermore... Why do you think that I cannot do this with the force of the mind?"

"All of these are not important. What's important is that you are trying to rob the Roth Family now, is that right? In the land of Golden Eagle Federation?"

Lucy's tongue was tied and could only react after a few moments. "Lord... Either I am crazy or the world is crazy!"

"He is only a mere tycoon and nothing much..."

Fang Yuan wore his suit and appeared as casual as a man who was about to leave for dinner. "Let's go... the quicker we get what we are after, the quicker we can leave!"

"D\*mn it!"

Lucy shuddered in fear, but nevertheless, she followed unknowingly.

Regardless, she had to finish her task. Considering Fang Yuan's power, she knew that they would at least have the ability to defend themselves should anything happen.

However, from the looks of it, this task seemed impossible.

# Chapter 424: Metalbender

---

"Mad! You must be a madman!"

Lucy got in the car. Cyril turned on the engine dejectedly and began to drive towards the Roth family's location. He looked as though he was about to crumble.

"One person against the Roth tycoons? No person in the right mind would do that!"

"Maybe....."

Fang Yuan seemed calm, but was very alert. He continued to scan the roads.

If he had not guessed wrong, Cyril was not alone. There were spies in every corner. They might have to deal with an attack anytime.

"Give it up! If we leave now, we might still be able to escape the wrath of the Federation and Black Man Society!"

Lucy tried her best to convince Fang Yuan for the last time.

"It's they who should be worried!"

Fang Yuan looked out of the window. The black car accelerated and arrived at the Ivy City suburbs.

This was where all the most opulent villas could be found. Every residential building in the area was a castle built on vast grounds. The surrounding walls were covered in green vines, which gave the place a medieval feel.

"Woo woo! Woo woo!"

Not long after, ear-splitting siren noises heralded a large assembly of police cars chasing them from behind.

A loudhailer rang out.

"The car in front, do take note! Pull over immediately and let us

conduct a thorough check!"

Bright dots appeared overhead in the night sky. They were police helicopters.

"Oh! Damn it... how did the Federal police get alerted so quickly!"

Lucy was exasperated.

"I won't hurt normal humans!"

"Please... they are the ones who want to hurt us!"

Fang Yuan shrugged his shoulders and spied a European-style castle in the distance. It was situated on lovely lands.

"Is that the Roth castle? Where Eric's treasure lies?"

"Yes... master! Eric himself can also be found there!"

Cyril drove steadily and answered Fang Yuan in a dull voice.

"Oh... should we say that he is confident, or just foolish?"

Fang Yuan's lips curled up slightly at the corners.

"Private property, no trespassing!"

At this point, the car gave no heed to the cautionary sign and maximised its horsepower, zooming right into the Roth territories.

"Shwoop!"

A blinding light emerged from the castle and climbed the sky rapidly with sparks trailing behind it. Its trajectory seemed to be preset.

"What the heck! RPG!!"

Lucy could not stop screaming.

"Lei... we're all going to die because of you!"

"It's just a bazooka!"

Fang Yuan grabbed her and flew out of the car.

"Kaboom!"

Seconds later, there were intense fireworks behind them. The force of the explosion even smashed the windscreens of the surrounding police cars.

"Suspects in front! Squat down with your hands behind your head, now! Or we'll shoot!"

A bunch of plump Federal policemen were shouting and took aim at them with their pistols.

"You won't hurt normal humans?"

Lucy looked at Fang Yuan.

"If they don't piss me off first... pity....."

Fang Yuan shrugged and flung out his right hand.

"Bang!"

A whole slab of the ground was lifted up into the air. It was thick enough to be a wall, and it flew towards the policemen.

"Ping! Ping!"

Gunshots rang out continuously, but they were obviously of no help against this overpowering attack.

The slab fell on them and drowned out their screams as they were buried alive.

"Force of mind... makes this possible?"

Lucy was scared out of her wits upon witnessing such a thing.

Suddenly, she snapped out of her trance.

"Wait a minute... why did you save me? You even swaggered out to appear in front of the police. God... I don't want to be a wanted criminal!"

"You have no choice!"

Fang Yuan giggled.

"Everyone who is taking note of these events would think that it's



your White Pigeon Society working in cahoots with me! Especially after I enter the castle and hypnotise a few fellas....."

"Devil!"

Lucy glared at him.

"You are the devil from the Middle Continent!"

"Thanks for the compliment. I'll accept it reluctantly!"

Before the castle, Fang Yuan waved his hand. The two great iron doors broke off from their hinges and flew away from the castle, kicking up a storm of dust in the process.

"It's a piece of art... it doesn't have to be like this..."

Lucy was stunned.

"You are going against the order of the Federation! No... the whole world's order! Why are you doing this?"

"Maybe... because it makes me happy!"

Fang Yuan strolled into the premises and immediately noticed that a team of well-trained guards were running out to confront them. They were of an even high level than elite soldiers and were all mutants. They all carried machine guns and began to spray bullets at Fang Yuan and Lucy.

"Ratatatatat!"

"Ratatatatat!"

Their concentrated firepower made it virtually impossible for targets to escape unless they had the ability to teleport.

Without warning, Lucy saw that Fang Yuan had put both his hands in the air and at that moment, a translucent water shield materialised.

Thousands of bronze pellets hammered on the shield but only caused it to wobble slightly. The bullets were caught in the shield like insects in a net, and they levitated strangely in the air.

"Go back!"

Fang Yuan flicked a bullet at one of the guards.

"Boom!"

A guard fell to the floor, his chest exploding in a red mist.

"Boom! Boom!"

The bullets were shot back at an even greater speed than they had emerged at from the machine gun barrels. A bloodbath thus ensued.

Deep in the castle, in a safe room, the bloodbath played out on several display screens.

"Ping!"

"Damn it"

A silver-haired old man smashed a fist on his office table.

He was quite dispirited.

After all, he thought that the terms he had offered were more than reasonable. He was actually willing to compromise some more. He did not expect the other party to exhibit such advanced insanity and to reject negotiation entirely.

"He thinks that the Roth family doesn't have any bargaining power..."

The old man muttered under his breath and lit a cigar. His face darkened, and he was suddenly determined.

"This is a challenge! A declaration of war against the Roth family. Such belligerence must be countered with all the power we can muster! I swear it on the honour of the Roth family! William!"

"Boss!"

A cheery mutant stood out from behind the old man.

"Deal with him for me!"

"Your wish is my command. But I don't think I can manage him alone. I can only try my best to fend him off until the Golden Lion Barton arrives. Also... there is the issue of your safety, Boss!"

"You don't have to worry about that!"

Eric smiled grimly.

"No one can hurt me in here... no one!"

"Alright!"

William bowed and left the room.

.....

In the castle.

The elegant structure had suddenly transformed into some sort of monster.

Traps and secret mechanisms were sprung everywhere in the building, and a large number of mercenaries were fighting Fang Yuan to the death.

Although they were no match for Fang Yuan, the intensity of the situation still made Lucy sweat profusely.

"Aren't you done yet? Don't you want the artefact?"

She saw how Fang Yuan destroyed the walls with a wave of his hand, and how the mercenaries were crushed beneath the falling concrete.

The rosewood furniture was not spared either, they were all smashed up together with the expensive vases on them.

Not only that, but a nauseating amount of blood and gore had been spilt in the halls. Even the wall paintings were drenched in dark red.

"Destroying everything in your path like that... you won't get anything by doing this....."

"The thing that I'm looking for lies somewhere deep within the

castle!"

Fang Yuan's eyes gleamed.

From the idol of the Aquilaria Maitreya, Fang Yuan could sense that the other half of the key was close by.

"In the underground vault... there are other objects giving out electromagnetic oscillations as well... seems like this collector is someone to reckon with....."

Fang Yuan closed his eyes.

"Kaboom!"

He could hear Lucy screaming as the ground they stood on gave way and they fell down to the floor below.

"Interesting....."

William walked into the messy hall, wearing a white suit with a red rose tucked in his front pocket. He began to clap slowly.

"Such a powerful force of mind... I don't think even the 2nd in command of the Black Man Society, the King of Myriad Thoughts, could beat you! Allow me to introduce myself... I am William, a metalbender... Mr Lei of the Middle Continent, I have no wish to take you on, but you leave me with no choice!"

"You are a mutant of the 3rd Tier working for the Roth family?"

Fang Yuan frowned.

"Metalbender William!"

Lucy let out another scream.

"He is one of the top mutants of the 3rd Tier. He could even trade blows with our leader in the White Pigeon Society. Roger the Iceman is a far cry from this William!"

The gap between each tier increased exponentially as a mutant went up the tiers.

At the 3rd Tier, a mutant could crush a beginner like an ant.

The leader of the Black Man Society once quelled an unrest organised by 10 mutants of the 3rd Tier single-handedly. As a result, he was recognised as the most powerful pugilist in the Federation!"

Of course, both he and the leader of the White Pigeon Society had not broken through to the 4th Tier yet.

Thus, in the world of mutant experimentation, it was said that before the third occurrence, no mutant would be able to break through to the 4th Tier. Although this was quickly drowned out by news from the Middle Continent regarding the God of Thunder, they stuck to their view. It was not entirely wrong.

After all, Fang Yuan was only at the 3rd Tier himself, and was newly minted.

Well, in contrast to others, he was a normal person and naturally had to work harder so as to rise up to the 3rd Tier.

"Shwoo!"

Even as Lucy spoke, William acted.

He waved his right hand in one fluid movement, and a smile plastered on his face.

"Psh! Psh!"

Pieces of metal, big and small, rose from the waste pile and were manipulated such that they compressed against one another to form a large steel ball.

"Not bad, he already has a well grasp of his element!"

But Fang Yuan knew something more.

This William had stripped the metal pieces down to the atom and had fused them with spiritual droplets so that they became his fluid and ever-changing weapon.

If such a person were to go back in time to the ancient Middle Continent, he would become the ultimate metalbending demon!

# Chapter 425: Compromise

---

"To be able to retribute metal meant that he has already reached the essence of his special ability and he is very close to fully mastering it... Unfortunately, he still limits himself to the way of metal..."

Fang Yuan shook his head.

"Swoosh!"

Just as Fang Yuan was observing, William, who was opposite him, had already made his move.

"Pop! Pop!"

The steel beads that were even scarier than a machine gun rattling were similarly stopped in mid-air by the layer of water membrane. The steel beads caused ripples to form on the water but ultimately could not penetrate it at all.

"Indeed... Lei! You are very strong!"

William appeared excited and continued, "Ever since I fought against the leader of White Pigeon Society, it has been very long since I met such a worthy opponent like you... hope you don't disappoint me!"

"Putt! Putt!"

Under William's control, large amounts of steel beads retreated. A bizarre change soon began as the tip of the beads became sharp and even formed spiral-like threads. The beads then surrounded and flew around Fang Yuan.

"Ding! Ding!"

As though they were searching for a weak spot, the large amounts of steel needles appeared from the skies, the ground and all directions as they flew quickly and attempted to pierce through Fang Yuan's water membrane. The surface of the steel needles

even turned orange-red due to their high speed and intense rotation. There was also an irritating smell of rust.

As Lucy watched, her pupils shrunk and she could not help but stand closer to Fang Yuan.

She was clear if this mysterious Lei could not withstand the attack of those silver needles, her outcome would not be hopeful too. She would become like a beehive after being pierced by all those needles and there would be no chance for her to survive.

"Boring... same old tricks! They're useless against me!"

Fang Yuan bragged arrogantly, as though he was a powerful antagonist.

Fang Yuan waved his arm.

"Rumble!"

William was hung upside down by an invisible force and then viciously smashed onto a brick wall.

Under the loud crashing noise, almost the entire wall crumbled.

"Crash!"

As the masonry flew apart, William was pulled again. He was then wildly smashed against the ceiling, the walls and the floor, as though a giant was grabbing onto his leg and using it as a hammer.

"Bang! Bang!"

The loud bangs even made Lucy cringe and tremor in fear.

However, immediately, she noticed something was amiss, "If I was the one under the brunt of such intense attack, I would have long become a pile of minced meat..."

The next moment, the invisible force grabbed William and smashed him into a sharp staircase corner.

"Ding!"

A crisp noise could be heard, as though steel was being hit

against.

The strong and sturdy staircase which was built from antique wood collapsed immediately. However, William patted away the dust on his body and stood up slowly.

William's body was covered with a layer of iron sheet, his defence was astounding.

"Such a close shave! If I haven't fought with Black Man's Society's King of Myriad Thoughts before, I guess I wouldn't be able to withstand such a sudden attack..."

As William recounted with trepidation, the iron sheet continued to spread across his body, including onto his brows, eyes, nose, mouth and ears.

As a 3rd Tier mutant, William's body and fitness were naturally strong. Holding his breath was nothing to him.

However, moments later, he was shocked.

Around Fang Yuan, wooden planks, bricks... and many other things were forcefully pressed together by an invisible force, as though they were flattened by a million ton compressor. A gigantic obstruction was formed and smashed towards William.

"A force of the mind at such a level?"

Even though William was protected by his iron sheet, he still ran away quickly.

Such a tremendous force would definitely severely injure him if it landed on him!

"Impossible... this is White Pigeon Society leader's level of strength!"

As William tried to escape, his face was filled with disbelief, "How could a mutant who just suddenly appeared be so strong?"

"Boom!"



However, he no longer had time to ponder about it.

A "block" was viciously smashed in front of the gates and blocked everything, sealing off his escape route.

"Boom! Boom!"

Immediately, more blocks crashed down and buried William alive.

"What a lucky guy... if I didn't have to conceal my identity and disguise myself as a mutant with a mind force special ability... a thunder spell would have easily annihilated you!" Fang Yuan thought.

As Fang Yuan thought silently, he could still feel William's spiritual aura around. Fang Yuan was lazy to execute him and his eyes glowed, "Rise!"

"Rumble!"

The ground rose and large amounts of soil were excavated. After excavating for an unknown depth, an underground warehouse appeared.

"No matter how sturdy a safe its, it would be useless once its entirety is stolen!"

Fang Yuan reached out his both hands and secretly executed his Underground Burrow Technique, "Rise!"

"Earthquake!"

"Earthquake!"

Outside, there were even more policemen gathered around. They immediately felt the earth tremoring and shouted. They then evacuated the servants escaping from the castle.

"Rumble!"

In an instant, there was yet another loud noise.

Under the astonished looks of many, the ancient castle that

represented Roth family's long history and heritage completely crumbled and caused dust clouds to billow everywhere.

Under the debris, a large warehouse made of golden alloy emerged from the ground.

"Clang! Clang!"

Fang Yuan went in front of the gold warehouse and casually lifted off the warehouse door. Numerous rare and precious artworks could then be seen inside the warehouse.

"Interesting!"

Fang Yuan walked into the warehouse with his hands behind his back. He was not interested in the mountain tall pile of gold bars and jewellery at all. His right hand then reached out and grabbed a sculpture made of aquilaria wood in the corner.

The sculpture was of an Asura with three heads and six arms. Each face had a different expression which was very vivid.

Lucy, who was at Fang Yuan's side, took a look and could no longer move her eyes away.

"Ehh... the things inside this warehouse are all pretty precious and valuable..."

Fang Yuan closed his eyes and lightly moved his hand. Two more items in the warehouse then flew to his hands.

One was in the shape of a pyramid while the other was a golden sceptre that had a blue gem embedded on it. The blue crystal was the size of an infant's fist.

"This gem... interesting..."

Fang Yuan lightly touched the gem and a hint of excitement appeared on his face, "Seems like I can use it to find another spiritual energy node..."

The reason Fang Yuan came to the West was to look for a place like that willow tree in order to absorb its strength.

"Young man! Put those things down!"

Suddenly, the door on the other side of the warehouse opened. Eric strode in with a shotgun in his hand.

"Eh? Money over life? That doesn't seem like the demeanour of the helm of a large financial group?"

Fang Yuan furrowed his brows and glanced beside him.

"Bang!"

Behind him, Metalbender William had already crawled out from the ruins. Although he was ravaged, they were all just superficial injuries. He then charged into the warehouse.

However, Fang Yuan knew this old Caucasian was not relying on this William.

"No! No!"

Eric held his shotgun firmly and pointed the barrel at Fang Yuan. His eyes were filled with some sadness, "From the moment you forcibly attacked the noble Roth family, it was no longer about some collections! Instead, it is the declaration of a fight to the death!"

Evidently, this old guy was very calm and had a great foresight.

As one of the alpha leaders in Golden Eagle Federation, if the Roth Family were to display any weakness, they would immediately be challenged by many and might even be devoured by the rest!

Hence, even if they suffered tremendous losses, numerous deaths and injuries, and even if they knew it would bring no good to the family, they would never settle before achieving victory.

"Looks like... you are very confident in settling me?"

Fang Yuan smiled slightly.

Even if Eric was holding a rocket launcher, Lucy felt he could do

absolutely zero damage to the scary Lei.

"Of course... do you think with Roth family's heritage, we would only have one William?"

Eric's face suddenly flushed red with excitement, "I will let you have a taste of my darling, Angel!"

Behind him, a little girl sitting on a wheelchair slowly wheeled out.

She looked like she was only 11 or 12 years old. She had skin as white and silky as milk, golden blonde curly hair and a pair of eyes as blue as the ocean. It was as though she was an exquisite doll.

"Angel?! She is... Oh no!"

Lucy thought of something, "If the rumours are true, there are such mutants... her special ability is to erase others' special abilities!"

"Erase special abilities?"

Fang Yuan sensed for a while and indeed, realised the girl was like a jammer that kept dispersing the spiritual droplets in the surroundings, forming a vacuum.

Moreover, such an interference even reached Fang Yuan's body as it attempted to interfere with the flow of his spiritual droplets.

If he was not a cultivator and was instead a normal mutant that did not understand how things worked, he would not be able to resist such and his special ability would be erased.

In front of the warehouse door, William had already quickly left. The iron sheet on his body dissipated at once and tiny beads of sand-like iron dropped onto the ground.

"Erasing of special abilities? Interesting!"

Fang Yuan walked forward. His Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell was used and the spiritual droplets in his body were like a mountain and were totally unaffected.

"Die... you monster!"

Eric's face was filled with exhilaration as he pulled the trigger.

"Bang!"

A bullet was shot out but it stopped in front of Fang Yuan.

"Impossible..."

Eric looked at the expressionless Angel and then at Fang Yuan. Eric was having an emotional breakdown, "Even Black Man Society's leader cannot counteract Angel's power... unless..."

"4th Tier?"

Lucy was gasping as she uttered that phrase, she looked at Fang Yuan and continued, "You are a 4th Tier mutant?"

"You're called Angel?"

Fang Yuan totally ignored them and instead, went forward to the girl in the wheelchair.

"Follow me, okay?"

The girl had a dazed expression, it seemed as though she was born like that.

"Eh... her body is very weak, she's just a normal person. Also, she's severely paralysed and intellectually disabled too..."

After Fang Yuan analysed her detailedly, he did not hesitate to carry Angel.

"You..."

The expression on Eric's face had already changed. In the end, he gave a bitter laugh and then a deep bow, "Apologies... Mister Lei, I represent Roth family and wholeheartedly surrender to you. Everything in this warehouse belongs to you..."

"No need, I am only interested in her!"

Fang Yuan looked at the Angel in his arms.

"Okay..."

Eric gave a bitter laughter and dared not have any other opinions.

Now, Fang Yuan was like a powerful person who could defeat an entire country. Once someone's power surpassed the norm by too much, any person in authority who could not annihilate him must compromise!

# Chapter 426: Tragedy

---

Eric was the leader of the Roth Financial Group and was extremely influential.

With just a few phone calls, the police surrounding the castle left in an instant.

Furthermore, many groups of construction workers promptly arrived and began restoration works for the castle. They quickly erected the tent outside the partially destroyed castle and invited Fang Yuan and Lucy to have some tea.

"This Angel..."

The rich tycoons were indeed luxurious and Lucy could not stop herself from enjoying all the delicacies.

Fang Yuan paid no attention to the food and focussed on the little girl, whose powers were to erase other's special abilities.

'It seems like her ability cannot be controlled by her own will and is always active... Furthermore, the area affected is a radius of about 200 to 300 metres. The nearer a mutant gets to her, the stronger the disturbance.

"Respectable Mister Lei..."

Eric's voice was shaking. "When I first found Angel, she was already in this state..."

Eric was afraid that Fang Yuan would wrongly assume that he had tortured this girl.

"I know..."

Fang Yuan casually picked up a piece of cake. As the girl sniffed the fragrant cake, she delightfully gobbled it up.

"Such level of maturity... She is only like a 4 to 5 years old kid. Could it be due to the fact that her special ability is too strong and is hindering her growth?"

Thinking to himself, Fang Yuan began to formulate a few plans to allow him to aid Angel in growing up properly.

'This is great... I am interested in researching on such a rare special ability.'

"There's another thing!"

Eric picked up a phone call and had an embarrassed look on his face. "The police of Ivy City will no longer find trouble with you. However, there is a group of people from the Black Man Society. They have just landed at the airport and are rushing down now. The one leading them is Golden Lion Barton!"

As soon as Eric mentioned the name, William, who was standing behind him all the while, twitched. One could tell that he had once suffered under Barton before.

Of course, now, both Eric and Lucy were not worried a single bit.

After all, to them, Fang Yuan was an almighty 4th Tier mutant. Together with Angel, the weakness of all mutants, even if the entire Black Man Society were to combine forces with White Pigeon Society, they could do nothing to harm Fang Yuan.

"Alright... I've troubled you for quite a while. It's time for me to take my leave!"

Fang Yuan toyed around with a golden sceptre in his hands. "I have one last question... Where did this blue gem come from?"

"This is... the tears of the River of West Flor?"

Eric was stunned. "This is my latest collection. The gem on it is rumoured to have been found from the River of West Flor..."

The River of West Flor was a huge river in the Golden Eagle Federation as well as Flor State. The people specially built a reservoir around it, turning it into a popular tourist destination, so popular that even Fang Yuan had heard of its name before.

"I see! It's the River of West Flor, right?"



Fang Yuan lowered his head and gave a mysterious smile.

...

"We're here... Roth's Castle!"

Not long after, a black sedan car arrived at the castle and an explosive Barton came out of the car. "No matter who it is, whoever dares to step on the toes of the Black Man Society will have to die!"

"Black Bird!"

"Don't worry, boss!"

A black pigeon landed and transformed into a human shape. "Although I am afraid of going too near, I can ascertain that the other party is still in the garden and has yet to leave!"

"Very good!"

Barton stripped his windbreaker from his body, revealing his golden muscles. "Although I don't know why they have reconciled, even if the Roth Family wants to protect him, no matter how powerful that William and his metalbending skills are, he is no match for my defence!"

In the Black Man Society, Barton was in the top five most powerful mutants. Because of his special ability, he was able to perfectly counter William's ability.

"Bang!"

However, at this point in time, a huge armoured vehicle roared to life and rushed out of the garden.

"Boss... Those people are Barton and his men from the Black Man Society!"

Lucy drove the car and her voice was shaking.

"Roll over them!"

Fang Yuan carried Angel in his arms and casually commanded

Lucy to squash Barton over like how he would squash a worm.

"That's Lei, he's in the car!"

A few investigators held their monocles up and were certain.

"Fire!"

"Bang! Bang!"

Bullets landed on the car but were deflected by a layer of water membrane and did little damage.

"Hehe..."

Barton scoffed and the hair around his body started to grow, forming a golden armour around him. Without fear, he rushed towards the armoured vehicle. "Stop!"

His defence was not only tougher than a diamond, he had already flipped the heaviest tank in the Federation before. He was like a fearless giant as he rushed towards the Humvee.

"This is... such a tragedy..."

Lucy closed her eyes and did not dare to witness what was about to come.

"Bang!"

Blood splattered everywhere, staining the car windows.

The defeated Barton flew out like a broken gunny sack. Rolling on the floor, he was subsequently crushed by the Humvee into a pile of bloodied mess.

"Is this a joke?"

"Oh Lord!"

Across the street, the entire group of men from the Black Man Society were stunned and their jaws were almost dislocated from their mouths. "Barton has been crushed to death? Is this an April Fool's joke?"

"Don't slow down, rush towards them!"

Fang Yuan waved his hands and an invisible force started to clear the bullets and obstacles ahead of the Humvee.

Lucy followed his command and sped all the way up to 80 miles an hour.

"Bang!"

"Bang! Bang!"

Lucy's hands shook and she felt as though she was playing bumper cars.

As blood spewed everywhere, Lucy had to activate the windscreen wipers to clean up the windshield. At this point in time, another mutant was helplessly ran over. One by one, the rest of them were slowly being squashed under the car.

"This is... this feeling..."

Lucy blushed and as her body shook, there was a wet stain on her pants.

"This woman..."

Fang Yuan was observing her all this while and was now speechless. 'Is this a newly discovered weird ability of hers?'

"Lord..."

In the castle, Eric witnessed everything before quickly passing down instructions to his subordinates. "Get the helicopter here to evacuate me!"

No matter how much he could explain, the fact that so many members of the Black Man Society died at his castle would bring him much trouble and therefore, he had to hide.

...

After a few hours.

A few black dots appeared in the sky and slowly landed towards

the ground.

They were wearing protective suits and appeared different from the rest.

As they examined the mess lying all around, one would still be able to see their disgusted faces through the protective glass layer of the suit.

"Barton..."

One of the higher-ups spat a mouthful of saliva as he looked at the bloodied mess. "Who would've known that he would die just like that, like a shattered watermelon... That d\*mn girl..."

"No one would know that she would end up in the hands of the Roth Family..."

Another man in a black suit sighed.

When Angel was first discovered, there was an uproar in the mutant community. Many organisations were after her, but the outcome would always be a massacre.

They would never know that all that had happened before were only an illusion and that the Roth Family was the ultimate winner.

Of course, Eric was extremely cunning and careful as well. Even though he was a tycoon, he knew that he was nothing if the Federation were to combine forces with the Black Shirt Society. Therefore, he had diligently kept the fact that he had Angel and even William was unaware of it.

"Even with this secret weapon, the Roth Financial Group is still defeated..."

"However, we have some findings. Although Angel's ability is devastating, it cannot be replicated. Furthermore... As long as one has this Separation Suit or is a 4th Tier mutant, one would be assured that one's special ability would not be affected..."

At this point in time, another member of the Black Man Society

took out his satellite phone. "Society leader... What should we do next? That Lei... he seems to have broken through to the 4th Tier!"

"In this world, no one would be able to break through to the 4th Tier before the third occurrence!"

The black figure in the screen was composed. "Other than our newest weapon! Lei's ability had indeed exceeded my expectations... Regardless if we are dealing with him or Angel, we have to quicken our plan!"

"Deliver all the remains of our members and their DNA into the Flor Reservoir! One Barton will be very useful to us!"

"It's for the Demon Weapon, right? I know!"

The man in black took a bow and his heart shook in fear.

"Sigh... I've heard so many secrets! Didn't you say that the stand of the Black Man Society is that all mutants are brothers-in-arms? And now, you want to use your own member's body for experimentation..."

Suddenly, a childish voice was heard from the side.

Lorita stood out of the shadows. She was wearing a black princess dress, red leather shoes and held an umbrella in her hands. Like a little princess on a field trip, she licked her lips and her eyes turned bloodshot. "This is... disgusting!"

"It's the second-in-command of the White Pigeon Society, Blood Lady!"

A few higher-ups of the Black Man Society had a change in their expressions. "King of Myriad Thoughts, bring everyone and leave!"

"Understood!"

One of them snapped their fingers and a huge force was felt.

In an instant, the few of them and even the broken bones and flesh on the ground started to levitate.

"Why are you in a rush? Let's play a game!"

Lorita smiled sweetly and the shadow behind her started to grow in size. As it started to spread out, it was like a beast opening its mouth and attempting to swallow the entire sky.

"Kacha!"

After a loud snap, everything reverted to normal.

"Old man... why did you stop me?"

Lorita turned around and saw a displeased old and frail looking society leader of the White Pigeon Society.

"We are not prepared. Starting the war prematurely is not something both sides would want... furthermore....."

He gazed into the direction which Fang Yuan had left and his face was filled with worry.

"Interesting... hehe... this is really interesting!"

Seeing this, Lorita felt as though she had found a new toy. "Do you feel fear from Lei's powers? That stupid man... Hmph, how dare he take away my Lucy from me. I will not let him go!"

# Chapter 427: Secretive

---

River of West Flor, Flor State

A steam yacht slowly travelled along the river. The bright and sweet voice of the tour guide lady could be heard, "Passengers... in one hour, we will reach the next famous tourist attraction, Flor Reservoir!! This is the first man-made reservoir in our Federation, it utilises 42 levels of steam valves to control the system, its water capacity..."

Fang Yuan laid on the recliners and enjoyed the views from both sides.

The river's sceneries were beautiful. Furthermore, fishes were abundant in the river.

From time to time, a few teenage girls excitedly screamed and took photos of the big fishes leaping from the waters.

"I'm right indeed! The spiritual aura of this gem is from this river stream... a certain spiritual energy node is underneath the waters?"

Fang Yuan pondered as he stroked the gem on the sceptre.

Beside him, Lucy had to dismally take up the role of a nanny as she took care of the clueless Angel.

Ever since the massacre that time, Angel did not know why she still stayed at Fang Yuan's side. Perhaps it was because she feared the troubles going back would bring about or it was because this "Lei" was too mysterious, which made her unknowingly curious.

Unnecessary curiosity usually led to the downfall of a woman!

"Sir, there's a situation!"

Suddenly, Lucy's face tensed up. A digital ringing noise rang from her body, she quickly hid in a corner to pick up the call and her expression changed even more as she listened.

"I received a request for aid, it was from Paul and Amun, the third in command! They are currently rushing towards us... But at the same time, the society has declared them to be traitors, any member who sees them must kill them immediately!"

"White Pigeon Society's third in command defected?"

Fang Yuan sipped his fruit juice and continued, "Didn't y'all White Pigeon Society say that you all were a peace-loving organisation? How come there are such ideological disputes?"

Those in the forefront leadership positions of a large organisation would have largely similar interests. As long as they were smart, they would maintain a competitive yet harmonious situation, unless they had fundamental differences and disagreements in ideologies.

"I don't know too..."

Lucy was at a lost.

This period of time where she was with Fang Yuan was her most unrestrained and liberated moments. At the same time, her beliefs in White Pigeon Society's original ideologies wavered too.

Lucy shook her head and tried to force herself to forget about all these thoughts. However, she then asked curiously, "Sir... should we save them?"

"Why should I save them?" Fang Yuan answered indifferently.

"They must have obtained some important intelligence! Or perhaps White Pigeon Society is planning to go against you?" Lucy tried to test the waters and asked.

"So what?"

Fang Yuan carefreely stood up and stretched, "Why would humans be bothered about the hostility of a few ants?"

"That's true too..."

Lucy pinched Angel's cheeks and smiled suddenly.



"With this powerful killing machine, even if the two society leaders from the black and white societies gathered, they would be killed..." This lass was too clueless, she did not know about the existence of separation materials.

Moments later, Fang Yuan looked towards the tail of the yacht and shook his head, "They're here!"

"Oh! Quick, look!"

"Evolvers!"

"Mutants!"

"They can fly!"

...

A ruckus erupted on the yacht soon enough. Numerous tourists who wished for even more chaos quickly whipped out their cameras and took photos of the silhouettes chasing after the tail of the yacht.

"Oh, they are crashing onto us, Lord!"

Lucy glanced towards the back and saw Paul controlling sand.

He ingeniously formed a speedboat with sand and was speedily escaping while chasing after the large yacht.

In the mid-air, there were three birdmen with wings that were repeatedly shooting their guns.

"Bang! Bang!"

Under the rain of bullets, Paul remained steadfast and suddenly pressed the bottom of his boat with both his hands.

"Huuu! Huuuu!"

Two large hands made out of sand extended and grabbed onto the yacht which was in front as Paul flipped aggressively.

"Zoom!"

Paul turned into a stream of black shadow at once, forming a beautiful arc as he was about to land on the deck of the yacht steadily.

Unfortunately, he sadly forgot about something, and that was Angel's presence.

Once he went past a certain boundary, his mighty sand hands crumbled immediately and turned into a rain of fine sand grains.

Paul let out a shriek as he fell from 10 plus metre above and landed on the floor. Although he had supernormal physical qualities, he was still badly smashed onto the floor and many of his bones broke.

"Paul..."

Lucy went forward nervously, "How did you become like this?"

"There's no time! I have something to tell Mister Lei immediately!"

Paul gave a bitter laughter and he replied, "Of course... most importantly, I must settle these pursuers chasing after me first..."

In actual fact, there was no need to settle them.

As they entered the boundary, one of the birdmen immediately lost its wings and screamed as he fell downwards.

Fortunately for that birdman, the two birdmen behind threw out their hooks in time and managed to save him from becoming a pile of minced meat.

After they confirmed the yacht, the three birdmen immediately turned around and flew back.

Without any protection suit, exposing oneself to Angel's special ability would be courting death!

The life of a mutant was extremely precious, how could they possibly throw their lives at such?

"What exactly is happening? Also... why did third elder, Amun, defect?"

Lucy was falling apart.

"Eh, just say!"

Fang Yuan waved his hand, "Don't worry about me!"

"No! I specially came to notify you all..."

Paul had mixed emotions as he continued, "Mister Lei... your immense power has already crossed the limits, it even drove those people from Federal Special Investigation Bureau and Black Man Society crazy. Also, your actions caused them to hasten the Demon Weapon Plan at all cost!"

"That mutant weapon thing?"

Fang Yuan was confused, "They want to quickly create it in order to deal with me?"

"Yes! Furthermore, they have already begun to undermine and disregard us mutants' human rights. They have already begun to conduct large amounts of human experimentation... No! Those aren't even considered experiments anymore, they are just using human lives to create the Demon Weapon!"

Paul broke down in tears and continued, "Even our White Pigeon Society's leader, Holy Light Charlie, has already silently consented to such practices! Elder Amun swore to stop it and fell out with him, thus, Elder Amun escaped!"

"..."

Fang Yuan remained silent for awhile and then suddenly asked, "Although the process is rather bloody and cruel, if the Demon Weapon could be created, the results might not be bad, so why are y'all opposed to it?"

"That's because you don't understand how horrifying the Demon Weapon is... It cannot be controlled at all, any means of

controlling it was not created from the start! Such a monster created through this way would ultimately become a lunatic that destroys the world... Elder Amun is already rushing to the test site at Flor Reservoir to stop them, we can still rush over to them in time..."

"Wait a minute!"

Fang Yuan knocked his head, "Based on what you said, the place where that ultimate weapon would be created is at Flor Reservoir?"

If Fang Yuan's estimation was correct, that should be where a spiritual energy node was located too.

Looks like the abnormalities in the area were already discovered and utilised.

"What? You didn't know?"

Paul's mouth was agape in utter shock.

"What the? Did you know your actions have driven so many people mad? And yet you didn't know about this experimentation lab and test site?"

"So what exactly was the point for them to hasten the experimentations and thus willingly sacrifice the lives of mutants for it?"

"Okay, since this is already the case, tell me everything that has happened fully!" Fang Yuan was all ears.

Paul was like a lost soul and told Fang Yuan all the top secrets he knew.

The so-called Demon Weapon Plan actually had a long history, it could be traced to the start of the World War.

Due to the appearance of that Unkillable Witch, although she even obliterated an entire army, she was ultimately annihilated by a missile. However, she still attracted the attention of the high-levelled authorities in the Federation and thus they began to

explore the possibility of a "Strongest Body Weapon".

Although Elder Extreme Darkness did die that time as she was bombed into dust, the timeline of her life was still dug out by the secret agents of the Federation. During the period of time when strange occurrences increased, all the activities she did and resources she collected became extremely valuable research data.

During the raid of the witch's lair, they even discovered some flesh compositions that were suspected to be from the witch's body. This made the Federation's scientists extremely overjoyed.

Hence, they specially chose Flor Reservoir's Federation laboratory to cultivate and clone it.

Whereas, the reason why they chose here?

According to Paul, it was because there was a special energy field underneath the reservoir. After altering it, it could tremendously accelerate the growth and maturity of living matter.

Furthermore, it brought about numerous benefits to experimentations regarding mutated bodies and strengthening of different special abilities. Thus, the laboratory was specially built due to this.

Based on Fang Yuan's views, these were the benefits brought about by the partial leakage of the node.

At this moment, the final "perfect body" had already reached the last stage of adjustments. Thus, this was an important reason why the test site could not be moved elsewhere.

"But... the big boss is Elder Extreme Darkness' corpse... this is really..." Fang Yuan thought.

Fang Yuan stroked his chin, "Then? Is the clone very strong?"

"No! Other than its strong restoration power, there's nothing worthy of mention!"

Paul gave a bitter laugh, "But, she has a very strange

characteristic, that is her body's 'vessel' is very strong! It can devour and absorb all sorts of mutants' genes! Especially after finding another experimental body in the Federation with the special ability of 'replication', her powers have become even stronger! She can absorb almost every special ability and use them perfectly!"

"Thus, the Federation's scientists intend to use her as a carrier for all sorts of special abilities, creating an ultimate human weapon!"

"This is the so-called Demon Weapon Plan!"

...

"So that is what it is!"

Fang Yuan nodded his head, he finally understood everything.

"Is its acceptance tolerance very high?"

Normal people, including even 3rd Tier mutants, would have their genes collapse if they were injected with other special ability genes and forced to absorb their power.

Even the mutant with the special ability to replicate special abilities could only replicate one special ability. If it wanted to replicate other's special ability, it had to 'clear' the previous records first.

However, those like Fang Yuan and Elder Extreme Darkness had very high tolerance, they could totally absorb it.

## Chapter 428: Amun

---

"At the end of the day... the people of this world are too weak..... Or could it be that Extreme Darkness and I are too strong?"

Fang Yuan gazed at the continuous stream of the river and paid no attention to those excited, emotional, fearful and stunned tourists. Filled with curiosity, he thought to himself, "Using the genes of Extreme Darkness to create a weapon in the shape of a human... The higher-ups of the Golden Eagle Federation are indeed creative! However, if Elder Extreme Darkness were to find out about them cloning her into a weapon, would she destroy this realm or destroy this realm?"

Even though they only had little of her tissues, the cloned body would still resemble her to a certain extent.

If it was Fang Yuan who realised that someone were to clone something from his tissues, he would kill all of them regardless of who they were.

"After the 3 birdmen left, the enemy's target is now this cruise ship. It will only get more and more dangerous!"

Fang Yuan came to a conclusion. "Let's get to shore before splitting up. Lucy, bring Angel to a hiding spot!"

He had his final ability to spiritualise and could even survive an atomic bomb. However, the people around him would have died in vain.

"Mister Lei... What about you?"

Lucy asked, worried about him.

"I will have to head to the laboratory at the reservoir, of course!"

Fang Yuan scoffed.

He was not interested in the conflict between the Federation and the Black Man Society. However, the laboratory was built next to a

node. What if the people were to create trouble out of nothing and destroy the accumulation of spiritual energy there?

"Alright, let's go!"

He was a person of action. Now that Fang Yuan had decided what to do, he quickly brought along the 3 other people and left the cruise ship to arrive at shore.

"It will be dangerous to stay near me, for I will attract all the bombs. Paul, follow me to the reservoir!"

Fang Yuan instructed them.

Furthermore, he had placed a secret mark on Lucy and Angel.

Although he could sort of trust Lucy's loyalty, he was still cautious and had to be sure.

Just as they left, a sharp whizzing sound was heard and bombs with fire trails behind them flew towards the cruise, accurately hitting it.

"Rumble!"

After the explosion, there were second and third waves of bombs striking the cruise ship and its surroundings, as though they were afraid that they were unable to kill Fang Yuan.

"They are still too slow!"

Sensing the vibration and flames behind him, Fang Yuan paid no attention to it and continued forward.

"Considering such an attack, with my speed and the ability to spiritualise, I can escape from the epicentre of the explosion in an instant... Elder Extreme Darkness must have died because she was over-confident and wanted to test her physical body..."

"How could they do this..."

Witnessing the explosion, Lucy and Paul were both dumbfounded. "That is a luxurious cruise ship of the Federation.



There are still a few hundred passengers on it!"

"Hehe... It seems that even the White Pigeon Society will change in desperate times under the influence of potential gains!"

Fang Yuan was not surprised at all by the attack. Bringing Paul with him, he flew into the sky and disappeared in a black dot.

...

The Flor Reservoir.

Beneath the concrete bottom of the reservoir, in an underground location of unknown depth.

An extremely packed and modernised laboratory appeared.

Around the packed laboratory, there were many cages. Captured in these cages were various mutants and half of the cages were already empty.

"Professor, how's it?"

The higher-up of Black Man Society and a few generals of the Federation were in the control station as they looked at the professor in front of them.

This professor had a weird appearance. His brain was 2 times larger than the average human and resembled a large basketball. He did not have any hair and there were many red veins around his skull, making it seemed as though his brain was exposed.

He was the most talented scientist in the Federation and was a mutant with exceptional brain power. His codename was X and it was rumoured that his brain had already developed over 50%, surpassing all other brain-developed mutants in the Middle and East Continent. He was a fiercely-guarded secret of the Federation.

"It's not too bad... After a long selection process, we finally found a suitable body! This is all thanks to you guys for bringing back Barton's flesh and tissue... Although we can clone her in other bodies, we have found out that it is best to clone her in her own

body! We can accelerate its growth as though this was its special ability... This might make it a unique soul on its own!"

The professor raised his glasses. In the screen before them, there was a circular tank.

In the tank, there was the silhouette of a small girl. She was a yellow Chinese with black hair. Her eyes were completely shut and she felt like the perfect creation.

"I shall call her 'The Angel'! She is like my angel!"

The professor's eyes glistened. "Although her appearance is human, she is totally different from us. She has unlimited potential..."

"We don't need potential now. What we need is the combat power of a 4th Tier mutant!"

A white man in a general uniform spouted unhappily.

"Of course... only by using her own body will she be able to exploit the full potential of the third occurrence... D\*mn it... The theory of the increasing spiritual energy and the traces of the comet... I don't believe that Professor Fang Yuan of the Middle Continent can outsmart me! If not for the fact that I have devoted most of my time to the Demon Weapon, I would have been the one to propose the theory!"

The big-brained professor was dismayed as he cursed to himself before giving out orders.

"Kacha! Kacha!"

Outside the laboratory, a huge mechanical arm started to move and grabbed a particular cage. The mutant who was cuffed by the Demon Restraining Cuffs in the cage started to wail, cry and plead. Regardless, the outcome was inevitable as he was being tossed into a pool in the middle of the laboratory. Within seconds, he dissolved and disappeared.

The whirring of machinery was heard and the small girl within the water tank was visibly growing in size, as though she had absorbed a certain energy from the mutant.

"I can feel the power of her soul. Although she is still in hibernation, I can feel that she is like a powerful dragon!"

The society leader of the Black Man Society, Sauron was a middle-aged bald man. He closed his eyes and revealed an intoxicated look. "She is the future of the mutants!"

"She is the property of the country!"

A disgruntled general corrected him on the spot.

"How is the progress of the programme to control her?"

"Don't worry. The chip to forcefully take control of her is already inserted into her brain. Furthermore, we have 10 other backups!"

The professor cackled. "This is a weapon which is entirely under our control. There will be no risks of losing control!"

"I don't think so!"

Charlie and Lorita calmly walked down from upstairs. "This Demon Weapon is too dangerous. We need to plan for its usage properly..."

"Haha... Charlie!"

It was as though Sauron had met an old friend as he affectionately opened his arms. "This is why we need your power! Even if our final weapon falls out of our control, by combining the powers of the Black Man Society and the White Pigeon Society, we can still keep things under control, can't we?"

"I am here because of this. However, I have a piece of unfortunate news..."

A look of sorrow filled Charlie's face. "The third-in-command within our society, Amun, is not agreeable to what I am doing and has already left the society! At this point, I believe that he is trying

his best to infiltrate this place and inform Lei about it!"

"I feel that Lei is the perfect candidate to be the Demon Weapon's first opponent!"

The big-brained professor interrupted them. "I stand firm on my view. Before the environment changes, no one will be able to breakthrough to the 4th Tier! No one!"

"Rumble!"

Just as he spoke, the entire metal shelf shook.

"Someone had intruded the laboratory!"

A general of the Federation shouted a command. "Activate the strongest defence! Professor, how long will it take to completely accelerate the growth of the body for it to mature?"

"We are already at the final testing period and we can awaken it anytime, as long as we are willing to transfer it all the energy it needs without any reservations..."

The professor answered.

"Those mutants are already useless. Destroy them and nourish the Demon Weapon!"

"That will be no problem!"

As soon as he replied, everyone in the cages was desolated and felt hopeless.

"Ahwoooooo!!!"

With a wolf's howl, a metal gate was forcefully opened and a huge black wolf appeared.

It was as tall as a few humans and had a horn on its forehead. The fur on its body was smooth and hardy at the same time and there seemed to be a force field around it. Bullets or projectiles were deflected away as soon as they came close to the wolf.

"This is not Lei... It's Amun!"

Lorita raised her finger and smiled sarcastically. "Such a naughty boy. Society leader, you need to remain here to protect this place from any accidents. I shall go out and play with it!"

A huge shadow started to spread from behind her. The shadow carried her towards the wolf.

"Lorita... Don't stop me!"

The huge black wolf started to speak human language. "We need to stop this wrongdoing!"

"I don't care about all those..."

Lorita bit her lip and smiled. "I only want you to... play with me!"

"Whoosh! Whoosh!"

Many shadows stretched out from behind her like hands, surrounding the huge wolf.

"Don't force me!"

The one-horned wolf howled, opened its mouth and bit down.

"Crunch!"

Something shocking happened!

Even something as illusionary as a shadow could break from a wolf's bite.

"Charlie, your subordinate is very powerful!"

Sauron stood on an elevated platform and watched the fight between Lorita and the wolf as his eyes glistened.

"Amun is a peace-loving person. His special ability is one of the strongest among those who can transform. I suspect that he has directly transformed to a legendary fabled beast... No, it should be the other way round where the fabled beasts are all transformations of mutants..."

After a long silence, Charlie continued with a tone filled with sorrow. "He always had a good temper and I have never seen him

raged like this before. It seems like he is now hating me to the core..."

"This is because he doesn't know anything!"

Sauron gazed at the screen, observing the growing Demon Weapon. His eyes were filled with a burning passion. "We are the future of the mutants, and we will forever be on the correct path!"

# Chapter 429: Half Plane

---

"Charlie, don't make mistakes after mistakes!"

The Armageddon Horned Wolf Amun was currently transformed and was extremely ferocious. With a swipe of his claws, a large group of mutant soldiers and elites from Black Man Society and White Pigeon Society were thrown back.

"Give up now!"

"It's too late..."

Charlie's mouth just started moving and before he could speak, Sauron laughed and replied, "Can you see the screen in the centre? The Demon Weapon has already fully matured, she's about to wake up!"

"Sauron, you deserve to die!"

Amun roared. Suddenly, it was as though he leapt through spacetime and arrived on the metal platform. The giant wolf then opened his mouth, "Twisted Devour!"

"Hruuu! Hruuuuu!"

A twisted black hole appeared and absorbed everything in an instant.

The commanders of the military, even Professor X, immediately disappeared without a sound. The metal platform disappeared too.

"Distorted space?"

"Woosh!"

At this moment, a ball of darkness appeared. From it, Sauron and Charlie walked out with an excited look on their faces, "Unfortunately, your space cannot devour my darkness... and Charlie's light!"

Compared to Lorita's mastery of the shadows, Black Man

Society's leader Sauron's special ability was different. His special ability was to manipulate the power of darkness!

"No..."

Charlie was radiating a milky-white coloured holy light. However, his expression was very conflicted, "Amun's special ability can completely devour light... it's just that you chose not to fight me. Amun, at this stage now, you are still a peacemaker!"

"I guarantee you, after the Demon Weapon is activated this time to suppress that Lei, we will immediately archive all data..."

Charlie was doing his last ditch of effort to convince Amun, "Sauron promised me..."

"Hehe... the last time, I promised you. But now, it's impossible!"

Sauron gave a mirthless laughter, "After the death of one four-star general, two lieutenant generals, six major generals and a brainy professor, Amun is now a public enemy of the Federation! Furthermore, he has displayed to the world what a mutant's fighting power would be like if it goes crazy! What do you think those higher authorities in the Federation will do regarding such an uncontrollable factor of mutants?"

Such a crazed subordinate definitely had to be killed as soon as possible.

If their power was not strong enough, they could make up for it with the Demon Weapon.

Furthermore, even if they knew doing such was like drinking poison to quench thirst which spared no thoughts about the consequences, they had to do it.

"Beep! Beep! Beep! Beep!"

Suddenly, bright red warning lights were lit up throughout the entire laboratory.

"Level X danger factor detected, annihilating it at all cost!"



A clear robotic voice resonated throughout the laboratory. Seconds later, numerous traps and cages were set free and horrifying experimental bodies were released.

"Beep!"

The ceilings opened up and revealed hundreds of guns, flamethrowers, bullets, poisons, flames, lightning... All of those items dropped down at once, it was like an attack.

"This is the base's intelligence system, Queen Bee! It has already marked us as enemies, it is even recording us and relaying it to the president of the Federation..."

A shroud of darkness appeared around Sauron which began to envelop and devour everything around it.

"What the....."

Charlie hollered, "Sauron, can't you shut down it?"

"I have no way of shutting it down too... only the generals and the brainy professor could do it... Your little doggy subordinate had already eaten up all of them..."

Sauron shrugged his shoulder with a nonchalant and powerless expression.

Charlie was suddenly horrified and shocked, "Your real motive is just to release the Demon Weapon... you treat her as the same species!"

"That's right!"

Sauron looked at the screen in the laboratory with burning passion and continued, "Just Black Man Society's powers alone are not enough to build a country of mutants! But, as long as we have her, the power of a 4th Tier Mutant, we will definitely succeed!"

"You're insane!"

Charlie looked at Sauron, it was as though he longer recognised this old friend of his, "You are totally out of your mind! You are

just a complete lunatic!"

"No, I'm just preparing to grant her freedom... just that!"

Sauron guffawed and opened his arms, "Awaken... my darling!"

"Rumble!"

Darkness spread, engulfed and broke the surrounding walls. Under the intense tremors, spider web looking cracks formed on the tank the Demon Weapon was in.

"Leader!"

Amun was no longer attacking. With his strong body, he stood in the epicentre and shouted, "Let's join hands and stop this mistake!"

"At this stage, you still accept me as your leader?"

Charlie was slightly touched and shook his head. He then calmly analysed, "There's no use, once the Demon Weapon awakens, she can most likely breakthrough to the 4th Tier. Just leave me and Sauron here will do, you and Lorita leave immediately! Don't ever come back... Also, contact the higher authorities of the Federation, if the Demon Weapon really loses control and Sauron and I cannot control her, immediately launch the nuclear bombs and obliterate here..."

"This..."

The giant wolf's brain was slightly dazed.

This place was a large reservoir, if it was bombed, half the Federation would be affected as the rivers overflowed and flooded. The damages and losses would be astounding.

"Compared to the destruction of the Federation, I believe those higher authorities would make the right choice."

Charlie gave a slight smile and did not care about what Amun was going to reply anymore. A white coloured holy light swept the giant wolf and Lorita into it and they disappeared in an instant.

"Well, my old friend!"

Three pairs of pristine white wings grew out from Charlie's back and he turned into a holy and angelic birdman, "I hope your risky endeavours does not fail, else we have to bear unimaginable consequences!"

"Rest assured!"

With burning passion, Sauron went forward to the tank and reached out his both arms, "She is so perfect, isn't it?"

"I just hope all you did would not turn into utter mistakes!"

Charlie had a cold expression on his face. As he went closer to observe, he could not help but to feel despondent.

Even he had to admit that this Demon Weapon girl was absolutely perfect, it was simply like a marvellous creation of God.

Moments later.

The tempered glass broke and large amounts of cultivation fluid flowed out.

Inside the tank, the girl who was originally asleep suddenly opened her eyes!

...

"Heh... after all, they are the Federation's scientist, they only know it is like that but they do not know why it is like that..."

Above Flor Reservoir, Fang Yuan closed his eyes and a smile appeared on his face, "They only discovered the node and thus, built a laboratory nearby to make use of the energy vapourised near it. But, they didn't know how to truly utilise it, they are really blind... Of course, if they weren't like this, I wouldn't have the opportunity."

"Hey bro, can you help us take a photo!"

"Okay! One, two, three... say cheese!"

Fang Yuan pressed the shutter and photographed this person and a black lady. He then returned the camera and advised, "If I were you, I would leave immediately because there's a horrifying calamity about to happen here!"

"Calamity? Are you a wizard? Or a fortune teller?"

The black guy laughed exaggeratedly, "Or is it some newly mutated mutant... eh, all the movies are showing such nowadays!"

Since they met by chance, Fang Yuan casually gave them an advice.

Fang Yuan took out his golden sceptre and plucked out its large gem. He then threw it forward into the reservoir.

"Ploop!"

The blue gemstone landed in the waters and formed a white coloured ripple wave immediately.

"Hey... bro, are you alright?"

The black guy was a bit shocked. After all, the golden sceptre looked really alluring, especially with that large gemstone which appeared really expensive.

"Glub! Glub!"

Suddenly, a whirlpool appeared at where the gemstone landed and it was becoming bigger and bigger.

Fang Yuan smiled and jumped into it.

"Oh my!"

"There's someone suiciding!"

"God, quick, call the police and ambulance!"

A commotion erupted above the reservoir and the black guy's expression changed as he thought of something, "Jenny... I just remembered something, we forgot to turn off our newly bought bread machine! Let's go back home quickly!"

He did not care about his girlfriend's shock and carried her and ran to the shore immediately.

"Swoosh!"

The waters were raging.

Flor Reservoir was the largest reservoir in the Federation, it was extremely deep.

As Fang Yuan went deeper and deeper, a strange feeling began to grow in Fang Yuan's heart, "Indeed... space is folded, a half plane?"

The location of that node was both inside the reservoir and not inside the reservoir. It had opened a half plane similar to the hollows in Da Qian.

Hence, it was no wonder why scientists could not confirm its location after looking for it for ten years. Therefore, they could only build a laboratory at the bottom of the reservoir to indirectly make use of the highly condensed spiritual energy leaked and vapourised from the node.

"The gemstone is a key, but the most important thing is to rely on my own strength to push open the doors!"

Fang Yuan dove deeper quickly and saw an unreal looking door that had a blue glow shining from it.

The style of the door was very antiquated. It seemed as though it had only appeared after it was drawn out by the glow of the gemstone. Also, it had a strange property, it could only be seen by the eye and could not be detected by any instruments.

"It's becoming more and more interesting... Open!"

Fang Yuan's eyes sparkled and he viciously released a wave of force. Accompanied by spiritual energy, it landed on the door.

"Woong!"

Lights flashed and after Fang Yuan reappeared, the surroundings had already completely changed.

"Eh... a half plane after all. It's so small, it's not even comparable to Golden Sun Prosperous Land..."

Fang Yuan observed this half plane that was like a void bubble.

Large amounts of currents gathered and formed the most perfect and purest spiritual force fluid. The concentration of spiritual energy reached its peak here and even formed a spiritual fog.

The entire half plane was like a small island on a pond, its land was very small.

Also, a grand and magnificent building occupied more than half of the area.

"A prehistoric civilisation?"

Fang Yuan looked at the decrepit marble palace and a few skeletons on the sides and thought silently.

The upper half of these skeletons was human while the bottom half was fish. It was exactly the same as the mermaids from the legends.

"The products of the advent of the Spiritual King Comet in the last millennium? Or even the last last millennium?"

# Chapter 430: Calamity

---

This realm was extremely weird.

The laws of physics were extremely strict and it would hinder any supernatural abilities.

Only in a thousand years with the arrival of the Spiritual King Comet, the spiritual droplets in the entire world would increase in concentration, creating many fabled beings.

The immortal cultivators in the Middle Continent, the vampires and werewolves in the East Continent and the mermaids in the West Continent were all examples.

To Fang Yuan, this was the true source of art.

Although these supernatural beings could rule the world for a moment, they would become weaker as the concentration of spiritual droplets go down and they would inevitably meet their downfall.

In a few years time, the scientists would no longer believe in the miraculous existence of spiritual droplets and would classify them as either nonsense or myths.

"This small realm filled with mostly water might be the sanctuary for the mermaids... Were they hoping to avoid the impending weakening of spiritual droplets?"

Fang Yuan shook his head. "It's a pity... The duration between arrivals is a thousand years old! They would just experience exhaustion to death just by simply growing... Until recent times, with the restoration of spiritual droplets in the atmosphere, the small spiritual array here is activated once more! Therefore, it is able to accumulate all this spiritual energy, forming this node!"

Even though it was only a mere prediction, Fang Yuan had already more or less guessed what had happened here in the past.

"Such a pitiful race, such a pitiful civilisation..."

Although the palace was already abandoned, the supernatural carvings and prints on its walls, together with some drawings and poetry would be able to tempt archaeologists from the outside world. However, Fang Yuan paid little attention to it.

The only thing that mattered to him was the accumulation of spiritual energy in this node ever since the first occurrence!

"Let's begin!"

Fang Yuan mumbled to himself and instantly became the eye of a storm.

The 10 years of accumulative spiritual energy started to flow into Fang Yuan's body in a spiral.

"This body is still too weak and small. I need it to change!"

Fang Yuan could sense that a huge and immense force was flowing through his body, causing the cultivation of his Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell to increase exponentially.

Unfortunately, at the 99.99% of the 4th Grade, he could no longer progress.

This was the limit of the outside world, the limit which western scientists were researching about.

Fang Yuan's spiritual will shook and his body instantly spiritualised. With that, he started to store huge amounts of spiritual droplets in every single cell of his body.

"This world might have its limits on the people here, or in fact, a limit on the entire environment... However, all of these are useless to me! As long as I have my fixed stats, I will be able to use brute force to advance my cultivation!"

Fang Yuan glanced at his stats window.

As his cells started to store the spiritual droplets, the value for his Essence, Spirit and Magic started to increase exponentially and did



not seem to have any limit at all.

Furthermore, his Spirit started to increase to many multiples of what it was before and had already reached the value of 40.

With his huge increments in Essence, Spirit and Magic, a huge force was slowly being formed, stimulating the bottleneck of the 5th Grade and forcefully breaking through.

"Kacha!"

After a long while, a distinct sound was heard coming from his soul.

His Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell broke through the bottleneck of the 4th Grade and entered an entirely new realm of circulation of the spiritual energy. From there, he started to radiate spiritual energy, spreading it out constantly. Fang Yuan's senses and control over his power was slowly strengthened as well.

There was a huge change in his stats:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 10.0

Spirit: 40.0

Magic: 40.0

Profession: ???

Cultivation: ???

Technique: [Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell (Grade 5 (1%))]

Skill: [Medicine (Level 3)], [Botany (Level 5)], [Fiery Golden Eyes (Level 1)]"

"Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell: The 1st Grade would grant you the Spiritual Droplets Affined Body and an increase in your energy sense! 2nd Grade of Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell would grant you the ability to release

spiritual energy! The 3rd Grade of Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell would grant you the ability to spiritualise! The 4th Grade is completed! You now have the possession of the Spiritual Arena!"

"My stats have multiplied, but my abilities are more than multiplied! Also... this Spiritual Arena..."

Fang Yuan shut his eyes and could feel the power of the arena. This power was extremely concentrated and immense, as though it could affect an entire country.

If this was the ancient times, Fang Yuan would be a God!

"Every living being has an arena. The arena is also one's force, just like how the Earth is covered in a magnetic field... In actual fact, this is the miniature version of the power of an area!"

Comparatively, the power of the arena was much weaker, but still substantial.

The secret art of how the 8 Gates Sword Array was able to manipulate the 4 Emblems Sword Array into a miniature version of the power of an area and was already an impressive art on its own.

If any dream master in the Da Qian World were to display such powers, they would surely be recruited as a potential 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master into the core team and would be trained up at all costs.

"This is... being advanced by an entire generation!"

Fang Yuan sighed.

He initially thought that he was only able to achieve the peak of the 4th Grade. Never would he have thought that his special ability to have fixed stats would allow him to break through the limit of having the power of an arena and entering into the 5th Grade.

"I have to admit that I am the most non-scientific existence in

this realm..."

Fang Yuan sighed once more.

"Kacha! Kacha!"

With this, the entire place shook and large cracks formed everywhere. There was a faint storm brewing from within.

"This is a long abandoned place. With the simple act of absorbing its energy, have I pushed it to its limits and destruction?"

His spiritual will shook and his Spiritual Arena appeared, stabilizing the entire place and preventing it from its impending destruction.

"It's a pity... I am still not a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master who is able to create a prosperous land! The Spiritual Arena can only maintain the place status quo and cannot repair it. As soon as I leave, the destruction of this place is irreversible."

Fang Yuan shook his head and did a final scan of the place. Other than discovering a few suspected mermaid eggs which had no hope of hatching, there was nothing else.

As soon as he left, the cracks started to fill the entire space and the entire place crumbled.

"Rumble!"

Amidst the storm, the final place of respite for the mermaids could no longer hold on and crumbled into nothing.

...

"Bloop!"

A huge bubble popped.

Fang Yuan soon arrived at the bottom of the reservoir.

At this point in time, the power of the Spiritual Arena expanded outwards, separating the water around him and creating a space.

"The vibration from the destruction of the place would be felt in

the real world, creating an even stronger trembling... and the direction it would head towards..."

He gazed towards the reservoir and shook his head.

At this point in time, the Spiritual Arena received a few pieces of information which piqued Fang Yuan's interest.

He quickly flew up and landed on a water dam.

As he arrived, he saw Paul screaming. He was accompanied by a black wolf with a horn on its forehead and a young girl in a princess gown.

"The people of the White Pigeon Society?"

Fang Yuan remained still in mid-air before walking towards them, fixing his gaze on Lorita.

"You are Lei!"

Lorita held her dress and paid her greetings like a demure princess. "I am the second-in-command of White Pigeon Society, Lorita! You are the one who snatched my Lucy baby from me, right?"

"Lucy... baby?"

Fang Yuan rolled his eyes and paid no attention to her. Looking at Paul and the huge wolf, he asked, "How are the both of you?"

"I'm alright! However, the Demon Weapon is now activated. Boss is combining forces with Sauron and both of them are doing the final arrangements... Mister Lei, this world needs all of our powers!"

The huge wolf respectfully spoke.

"Rumble!"

In the next moment, there was a violent tremor.

They were unsure if it was due to the changes in the underground laboratory, or the destruction of the space above it or

both. On the water dam above the Flor reservoir, it felt like an earthquake of magnitude 8.

It was as though the entire concrete dam was jumping around, and the entire place was covered in silence. Even the excited tourists who were taking pictures of Fang Yuan and the wolf realised what was happening and were screaming for their lives as they fled.

"Rumble! Rumble!"

After a few seconds, a sonic boom was felt. Like a bolt of lightning, it struck hard on the dam, breaking it.

Cracks started to appear on the road above the dam and started to widen.

"Help!"

"God..."

"Please help us!"

It was doomsday and the entire dam fell into chaos.

"Save them!"

The huge wolf Amun bit a few tourists on their backs and swung them far away.

Paul and Lorita were also trying their best to save the tourists around as they rushed towards different directions.

"Too slow!"

Fang Yuan opened his arms and a layer of earth was separated from the dam. Many people who were trapped in the layer of earth were safely delivered to a higher ground.

"Oh! Old woman, let's take a look at God!"

A black man who had just escaped from the danger zone gazed back and examine Fang Yuan. "Save our selfies, for they will be very valuable!"

"Creak!"

Cracks started to spread on the other side of the dam as well.

Finally, a hole appeared and water spewed out. A second hole and a third appeared, forming streams of water and finally, the dam crumbled.

"Rumble!"

It was as though an entire mountain had collapsed.

The entire dam was destroyed and water spewed in all directions, covering the field of sight for those still on the dam.

This was a calamity!

A few unlucky citizens of the Federation laid on the ground as they witnessed the calamity unfolding.

"This outcome is too exaggerated considering the shaking of space, right? How could it so coincidentally destroy entire Flor Reservoir?"

Fang Yuan gazed at the overflowing reservoir and realised something. "It seems like there is an ally helping us... It is likely that the entire laboratory has exploded!"

"Hmm? I've found it."

Releasing his Spiritual Arena, Fang Yuan's eyebrows twitched as he flew towards a particular direction.

"Wait for me!"

Amun and the other mutants quickly followed. Soon after, they saw two people hugging as they flew out of the water. They were Charlie and Sauron.

"We have failed..."

Both of them looked extremely pitiful. Charlie had lost both of his legs and Sauron was missing a right arm.

"We have lost control of the Demon Weapon and even the backup

chip in her brain is not working..."

Sauron let out a bitter smile.

# Chapter 431: Departure

---

"Not only that....."

Charles' face was a deathly pale, but the wound on his thigh was bleeding less now.

"She even ate some of Sauron's and my flesh so as to gain our abilities..."

"What the heck!"

Amun shouted.

"I've said it before. The Demon Weapon Plan was a terrible mistake to begin with!"

Charlie and Sauron turned to Fang Yuan awkwardly.

"Haha... maybe you brought this upon yourself?"

Fang Yuan laughed cruelly and turned to walk away.

"Mr Lei....."

Old Man Paul called out to Fang Yuan.

"What are you doing?"

"Leaving this place, of course!"

Fang Yuan answered self righteously.

"You people created a monster to deal with me... and now that you've lost control of it, you expect me to clear up your mess for you... Please, do I look like an idiot to you?"

"But... but..."

Charlie became incoherent.

"I couldn't sense her soul. It is a selfish and destructive monster that we are facing... if you let it have its way, the world will burn."

"Don't worry, Planet Earth isn't as weak as you think... at the most, only the Golden Eagle Federation will be weakened!"



Fang Yuan couldn't care less.

"Then why did you come to the Reservoir?"

Lorita looked around.

"Were you not interested in the Demon Weapon?"

"Don't get smart with me, young lady, or I'll have you strung up and whipped!"

Fang Yuan glared at her with a most fearsome look.

The little girl was terrified and sat down hard onto the floor. Tears welled up in her eyes.

"You big bully..."

"Acting cute and spoilt won't help you in any way... hmm?"

"Glug! Glug!"

In the vast and mighty flow of the river, a large number of bubbles suddenly appeared and a swirl emerged.

"It's her... she's here!"

Charlie's voice was trembling. Even Sauron gave an involuntary shiver. They were obviously afraid of the Demon Weapon.

"This feeling..."

Fang Yuan closed his eyes.

"An arena? No, it is somewhat incomplete...what is that? A deformed 4th Tier mutant? A Calamity Grade mutant?"

Even so, looking at it was a psychological torture, it was also very effective on the other mutants.

Fang Yuan maintained his cool, but Lorita reacted to the swirl like she was dealing with a tiger that had just escaped from its cage. She was extremely frightened.

An elegant figure rose up slowly from the eye of the swirl.

The lady was dark-haired and had jade-white skin. She had a face

of unearthly beauty and resembled a goddess.

Of course, what drew Fang Yuan's attention was her affinity towards nature, namely her disinclination to wear any form of clothing. She had no shame, which was to Fang Yuan's benefit.

"Damn....."

Fang Yuan wiped his forehead.

'If I told Elder Extreme Darkness what happened over here, will she hack me to death?"

This clone actually shared a 70% resemblance with Elder Extreme Darkness.

But as this sort of possession had repercussions, especially as one grows and increases their strength. The possessor's appearance would be affected and they would revert back to their original body.

Fang Yuan's current body was virtually similar to his body in Da Qian.

At this point, the Demon Weapon looked over with the innocence of a child and also with a hint of thirst.

"Thirst....."

Fang Yuan looked at the terrified Charlie and Sauron, he then understood immediately.

"She thirsts for the blood of more powerful mutants....."

From another perspective, the other party was newly born and was like a clean sheet of paper in every aspect.

Of course, she had drawn blood from the two society leaders. She already had a taste and was looking for more.

At this point, Fang Yuan could see hunger in her eyes.

"These idiots from the Federation... they actually managed to create such an impressive specimen!"

Fang Yuan pouted and turned to walk away.

"This isn't my problem. I'll only act against her if she ever threatens the Middle Continent....."

"Big brother... please don't leave Lorita behind!"

The little girl clung onto Fang Yuan's thigh with all her strength.

The Demon Weapon opposite was giving her immense pressure.

She understood that if she were to stay here any longer, she would die!

"Amun, bring Paul along with you!"

Charlie extended three pairs of wings and became an angel.

"Wrong, we have to stay here and fix it!"

"Charlie, don't drag me down if you have a death wish"

Sauron's face was pale, and he looked at his arm.

"We won't be her match and we will only be devoured by her. Have you not learnt your lesson?"

"As long as we hang in there, we can do it!"

Charlie gave an embittered laugh and light emanated from his body.

"So this is your plan....."

A change came over Sauron's face as he stretched out a palm.

"Darken!"

The powers of light and darkness clashed with each other and gradually affected the surroundings. It was like a yin-yang symbol coming to life.

"..."

Opposite, the Demon Weapon young lady was triggered by the battle between black and white. She had the same two special abilities of light and darkness, and in fact, her abilities were more

pronounced.

'When the light and darkness becomes one, a prototype arena is created? Such a fast learner... and.....'

Fang Yuan looked up towards the skies.

The spiritual arena was large and he understood that there was a missile-carrying fighter jet speeding over right at that moment.

"Is this the ultimate plan? If I stay behind, I'll be within the targeted zone..."

He gave a silent smirk and was even more determined to leave.

"Swoop!"

Fang Yuan's departure led to an instant chain reaction.

In front of Charlie and Sauron, the two colours of black and white gathered and formed a sort of giant wheel. The wheel then rolled towards the Demon Weapon.

The young lady was surrounded by an aura made up of a combination of light and darkness. It radiated a unique power that seemed to consume the world around them.

Within this huge arena, the giant black and white wheel was worn off until it became no more.

A benign smile appeared on the young lady's face and she stepped forward until she was right in front of Sauron. Her right hand reached out for him.

"Give me..."

"Die, you monster!"

Needless to say, the Demon Weapon was scaring even its creator, Sauron.

Sauron cursed and five rays of dark energy exploded from his fingers. The darkness solidified into sharp edges that were capable of cutting down everything in his path.

"Ding! Ding!"

But when he reached the young lady, he was met with her head of hair that flowed like a waterfall.

Her hair was fragrant and formed a tough black wall. Sauron's attack only managed to create some sparks on her hair, which restored itself swiftly after.

"This is... the ability of the Golden Lion Barton!"

Sauron promptly regretted his move and flew backwards.

"Holy Light - Purify!"

Just as Sauron fell into certain danger, his old friend decided to step out.

A hot ball of holy light, carrying with it the power of purification, fell on the young lady.

Immediately after, a warp appeared in space and swallowed up the ball of light.

The young lady's eyes lit up and she laughed innocently.

"I still... still want....."

"This is the Devouring ability... from the White Pigeon Society! What the hell!"

Charlie could not help but swear loudly.

"How many special abilities did you guys load into her?"

"What we can do now is to play for time!"

Sauron maintained his solemn gaze.

"Chains of Darkness!"

"Swoop!"

The ground opened up gave way to numerous black chains. They twisted about like snakes and coiled around the young lady.

"Holy Light - Barricade!"

Charlie turned bright red and began to bleed from his orifices. Still, he fought on. A stripe of light enclosed the young lady and kept her in check.

"We have to give our all in exchange for what little time we can get!"

"Ying ying?"

Within the light barrier, the young lady tilted her head and produced a weird sound.

"This... oh no! An illusion!"

Sauron was stunned momentarily but regained his senses quickly. Still, he was too late. The young lady broke free from her prison and placed a jade-white palm on his chest with a chaste smile on her face.

"No..."

Sauron gave a final scream before he was reduced into a stream of light and absorbed into the young lady's palm.

"Old friend..."

Charlie laughed bitterly and saw that the young lady had arrived before him with a look of satisfaction.

"I'll join you now!"

"Kaboom!"

There was an explosion of light. It was like a small sun had died.

"Sir....."

Amun turned around suddenly.

"No way. I can't just leave like that. I have to go back and help them!"

But seconds later, he froze and transformed into a giant wolf.

Lorita's teeth were chattering.

"She's... she's here!"

"Tsktsk... up another level? Not bad!"

Fang Yuan turned around to see a figure floating in mid-air. It was the Demon Weapon young lady.

Except that she now had a pair of wings, one black and one white, and they gave out darkness and light respectively. The colours were contradictory and balanced at the same time. It was truly an odd sight and evoked strange feelings from the onlookers.

"A demon angel?"

Fang Yuan thought out loud.

"Light on one side and darkness on the other... she has devoured two society leaders of the 3rd tier. Now, what does she want from me?"

"What now?"

Old Man Paul was the weakest among them all and had a strong urge to wet his pants.

"We'll die, we're going to die!"

"Ying ying....."

The demon angel's lips parted and shouted out something unintelligible.

"Buzz!"

Ripples were set into motion. Amun and Lorita both went blind and became completely helpless.

The angelic young lady spread her wings and moved such that she was before Fang Yuan. She looked thirstier than ever.

"Give me....."

# Chapter 432: Cleaning Up The Mess

---

"I'll give you nothing!"

With a simple thought, the power of the arena in the surroundings spiked, creating a vibration which flung the young girl backwards.

"Sigh... I did not want to fight you, as long as you don't disturb me! It's a pity..."

Even if Elder Extreme Darkness were to arrive in this world, Fang Yuan would not be afraid of her. This was only a cloned version of her.

Although she had absorbed many different types of special abilities to become what she was now, to Fang Yuan, she was merely a stronger mutant.

Without a deeper understanding of the nature of spiritual droplets and the theory of the 'arena', she would always be a partial 4th Tier mutant.

Fang Yuan took a step forward, stretched his right hand out and pulled at the young girl's hair before giving it a strong tug towards the ground.

"Rumble!"

Amidst tremors, a huge crater appeared on the ground and crack lines started to spread outwards. There were flames and magma in the centre of the crater.

"No... How is this possible!"

When Amun and company came to their sense and witnessed the fight, they were all speechless. "It's the Demon Weapon... It's the Demon Weapon!"

To them, this Demon Weapon who had just killed both society leaders had the power to destroy the world. How could it be like a



weak chicken in front of this man?

"Eh? Your head's very strong, huh?"

With another casual flick, her hair started to break. Just before Fang Yuan could deal more damage to her, she quickly activated her diamond defence. Although she was embarrassingly defeated, she did not suffer from much damage.

"Howl! Howl!"

At the same time, on the shoulders of the Demon Weapon, a tumour started to grow before forming the shape of a wolf's head. The head opened its jaws wide and bit the air.

"This is crazy... That's my powers!"

Seeing this, Amun was speechless. "When did boss take my genes and tissue from me?"

"You're a disobedient child. I'll have to teach you a lesson!"

Fang Yuan paid no attention to the wolf head. Stretching out his left hand, he held the jaws of the wolf tightly and it could no longer open it.

"Bang!"

Another fist landed on the young girl. Even with the diamond defence, the wolf head exploded into a bloodied mess.

"Too weak! You're too weak!"

Fang Yuan shook his head. "Even if you have the special ability to regenerate, your foundations are still too weak!"

A halo appeared in mid-air and the Demon Weapon in Fang Yuan's hands slipped out and floated in the air, taking up the appearance of an angel.

"Bang!"

White and black wings were spread out and the force of light and darkness was released at that moment, gathering on the palm of

the young girl.

"It's useless! With an incomplete arena, you will never be my match!"

Fang Yuan waved his hands and the invisible power of an arena gathered, which was followed by a shattering sound.

"Bang!!!"

The glow on the young girl's palm exploded and even her body was being controlled by an invisible force. She floated towards Fang Yuan.

"I've said it. Don't disturb me!"

Fang Yuan gently stretched his hand out and effortlessly penetrated through the diamond defence before grabbing on to her heart.

Amidst her warm blood, a thumping heart landing in Fang Yuan's grip. Tightening his grip, the heart exploded!

"Ying ying...."

There was pain written all over the young girl's face as she quickly retreated.

Within the hole in her chest, blood vessels started to grow back, forming another small heart.

Such a regenerative ability made it an unkillable monster.

However, she was screaming and flapping her wings this time, ready to flee.

"..."

Witnessing this scene, Lorita and Paul were speechless.

If they knew that the Demon Weapon would be so easily defeated by this mysterious Lei, it would mean that all that they had done was for nought!

Of course, Fang Yuan did not know that his actions would make

those observing him rethink about their own lives. Through the detection from the Spiritual Arena, Fang Yuan had already located the aircraft filled with explosives.

It was flying towards him and had already targeted both him and the Demon Weapon as its prey.

"Whoosh!"

The fighter jet flew past and a bomb was launched.

It was a miniature version of an atomic bomb and even Fang Yuan could sense danger from it.

"Hmph!"

With the wave of his hands, the fighter jet exploded in mid-air.

Following which, the Demon Weapon became under Fang Yuan's control as it leapt towards the atomic bomb.

"Now, those that still want to live, run for your lives!"

Fang Yuan spiritualised himself in an instant and smiled towards the other 3 mutants. "The three of you should know your boss's plan, right?"

"Oh, sh\\*t! D\\*mn it!"

Lorita's expression changed. A shadow appeared behind her. Like a hand, it grabbed her and flew out.

Not long after, behind them.

"Rumble! Ruble!"

A small mushroom cloud appeared and a bright light illuminated the entire place.

"D\\*mn it!"

Although they were already a distance from the atomic bomb, the sonic boom from the explosion still tripped all of them, causing them to tumble on the ground.

Lorita crawled up from the ground. "D\\*mn our society leader... Why did he plan this? Is he trying to kill us?"

"Don't hold any grudges against him..."

Amun transformed into a wolf and his fur started to regenerate quickly. "The two of them are monsters! I believe that even though they were struck by the atomic bomb, they would still survive!"

"You're right!"

From the side, Fang Yuan's silhouette appeared. He slowly turned from appearing illusory to lifelike and his clothing was not even affected by the explosion. "That immature Demon Weapon might not die. The federation will be plagued with troubles..."

Fang Yuan laughed.

Amun remained silent.

He knew that what Fang Yuan said was true. Just the small explosion and earthquake at the Flor Reservoir was enough to affect half of the Federation.

What more if they added a 4th Tier mutant who was out of control? Even the members of parliament in the government would be panicking.

At this point in time, Lorita received news and her expression changed. "The people of our society have sent us a message. This incident has been classified as a military ambush, and all our names are on the wanted list!"

"Sh\\*t"

Amun cursed and Old Man Paul almost fainted beside him.

Paul knew that with his limited abilities, he stood no chance against the entire country.

"Big brother!"

Lorita shifted her focus as she held on to Fang Yuan's arm. "I

have nowhere to go now, I am so pitiful..."

"Are you... begging me to take you in?"

Fang Yuan gave a helpless smile.

"Of course!"

Lorita blinked her eyes. "I can no longer stay in the Golden Eagle Federation. Why not I follow you back, Big Brother?"

Although her appearance was a young girl, she was actually very smart.

Considering Fang Yuan's status, he would surely be very influential in other countries.

Even if he was not influential, with his abilities, he would still be capable of protecting a few fugitives and allow them to lead peaceful and comfortable lives.

"This... this is possible!"

Fang Yuan rubbed his chin. "Alright... I am preparing to adopt a young child. If you can take care of her, I don't mind."

"No problem!"

Lorita gave a pleasant smile. She was like an obedient pet.

...

In the President's office of the Golden Eagle Federation.

"I have already calculated the losses of the disaster at the Flor Reservoir..."

A secretary scratched his head and presented the information to the President.

"8 states were affected, 5,000,000 people need to be evacuated and over 10 million people are injured... A few hundred insurance companies have declared bankrupt, this is great!"

The President whistled. "Just let me resign already."

This was not a mess for him to clear, but the endgame.

"Mister President!"

An advisor raised his glasses. "We do have good news. The Roth Family, Durk Family and a few other big financial groups are willing to contribute manpower and resources to mitigate the situation..."

The government of the Golden Eagle Federation were actually limited in resources. Even the control of the country's economic resources was under a few tycoons.

In other words, if the tycoons did not agree, the President would not be able to fork out a single cent to help the disaster.

"This is the only good news..."

The President laid on a reclining chair. "Tell me all the other pieces of bad news!"

"Mister President!"

A black man wearing a western suit walked in. "Regarding the creation of the person responsible for the disaster... I would like to present to you a detailed report."

"I don't want to hear of it!"

The President rubbed his forehead and forcefully composed himself. "... Alright... tell me about it. Are the two d\\*mn monsters dead yet?"

"I'm afraid not..."

The black man shrugged his shoulders and stretched both of his arms out, resting them on his thigh. "However, we have already cleared the remaining scientists involved in the Demon Weapon Plan and are ready to keep the Demon Weapon. As for 'Lei'..."

With a serious look, he presented another document to the President. "According to the latest news, the leader of the Dragon Team in Chinese Country is a fabled 4th Tier mutant - God of

Thunder. He has rarely appeared in recent times. According to our spies, he has essentially vanished..."

"Both of them are 4th Tier and are both people from the Middle Continent. Their names are extremely similar as well..."

The President was deep in his own thoughts. "What are you trying to say? That all these are the conspiracy of the Chinese Country? To begin World War Two? Hey... This is a genius thought! The weapon suppliers would thank you for it!"

"This is only a guess. Undoubtedly, the Lei which appeared on our soil is more dangerous and more out of control!"

The black man continued with a solemn tone. "I suggest we establish an office dedicated to deal with this problem. They would collect information, conduct predictions and conduct 24-hour surveillance on him..."

"All these are useless. I only want to know one thing. Can we catch or kill him?"

The President quipped with anticipation.

"I'm afraid that's impossible!"

The black man was emotionless.

"Sh\\*t!"

The President started to curse. "Oh Lord, what has this world turned into?"

# Chapter 433: Settlement

---

Word of the disastrous explosion at the Flor Reservoir soon shocked the entire world.

After all, a calamity of such a scale was rare in the entire history of Earth. After the calamity, development of the Golden Eagle Federation came to a halt.

In a moment, the international society grieved for the Golden Eagle Federation and even Chinese Country had approved of donating resources and monetary aid to the federation.

Of course, the deeper secret behind the disaster brought the federation to the attention of the other countries.

At least with the disappearance of the two society leaders, the power of the mutants in the Golden Eagle Federation was much weaker. Also, the secret of the Demon Weapon started to spread out.

After all, the usage of the atomic bomb meant that the federation could not hide anything from the other countries.

Needless to say, according to the latest investigations from the spies of the Golden Eagle Federation, who went into the epicentre of destruction without any protection and any worry of being affected, they had a shocking discovery. The Demon Weapon was not killed by the explosion.

This was a year of disaster for the Golden Eagle Federation.

However, most of it was not related to Fang Yuan.

After getting what he wanted, he brought along the two girls and discreetly arrived at the East Continent, investigating the secrets of the other nodes of spiritual energy.

With his 4th Tier abilities, he was the most powerful being in the entire world and therefore, their journey was extremely smooth.



The rate at which he improved was as much as an entire generation. As soon as he absorbed the energy from another node, he discreetly returned to his own country.

Of course, to avoid trouble, he could no longer use his identity as Fang Yuan.

With his Soul Searching Spell, Fang Yuan could create a new identity for himself as an overseas Chinese after spending some time in a few other countries.

With his passport and his investments in properties, the customs would let him in without much hindrance.

With all these conveniences and a slight alteration in his appearance, even if he were to tour the capital, Xi Menjian would not even recognise him.

He had gone through all these troubles because he did not want to fight.

Therefore, Fang Yuan picked Banyan Tree City, a small city which a distance away from the capital and discreetly settled down.

In a Chinese courtyard house.

Grapevines crawled on a wooden rack, forming a natural shade. Grapes hung from the vines and anyone who would see these grapes would surely salivate.

Fang Yuan lazily laid in the shade. There were tea and dim sum on the table beside him. He held a fan in his hands and was extremely relaxed.

"Ahh... I cannot take this any longer!"

From the room, Lorita held her dress and ran out with a face of devastation. "That Angel is an idiot! Can you imagine that she still pees on the bed even at this age? How can you make me change her diapers for her? I object to this, for this is child labour!"

"Objection overruled!"

Fang Yuan casually ate a grape hanging from the vines and squinted his eyes, "Lorita, remember to address her as Sister. Both of you are my adopted daughters..."

"Why don't we settle down at Blue Star Alliance instead?"

Lorita appeared desperate. "I cannot stand everything here! This place is so underdeveloped and Angel is especially troublesome... I cannot stand her any longer, so quickly hire a nanny to take care of her!"

"Look at your personality. How will I be able to hire a nanny without any worries?"

Fang Yuan rolled his eyes.

"Regardless, I cannot live with her. It is too uncomfortable to lose all my special abilities when I am with her..."

Lorita bit her lip.

"Hehe..."

Fang Yuan picked up his teapot and blew at it gently. "If that is so... Lorita, are you thinking of going against our agreement?"

"Going against the agreement?"

Tears welled up in Lorita's eyes as she wanted to claim that she was being duped to follow Fang Yuan.

However, thinking about how this 'demonic father' had held her and spanked her ass for being disobedient, there was fear in her eyes. Tears welled up and she was on the brink of crying. "You're bullying me!"

"Alright, don't you show me your attitude... Looking at you, even if we migrate to the Blue Star Alliance, we would still encounter troubles. Do you really want to sacrifice our peaceful and comfortable lifestyle now?"

Fang Yuan calmly replied.

Lorita was speechless.

According to her news, Amun from the White Pigeon Society had escaped to the Northernmost Point of the North Pole on an icy island but was still being located by the spies of the Federation. After a long fight, he was captured and his outcome was unimaginable.

If not for the fact that this place was Chinese Country and that she was protected by the mysterious 'Lei', Lorita would surely end up like Amun.

"But... I..."

Lorita's tears started to flow. If an outsider were to see this scene, they would think that Fang Yuan had bullied this little girl.

However, Fang Yuan knew that although Lorita appeared young, she only seemed so and her actual age was already many times more than she appeared to be.

On the other hand, Angel was truly only 3 years old.

"Alright, Angel is also pitiful... Also, after my treatment, she has the potential to recover completely..."

Fang Yuan entered the house.

In a wooden cot, Angel laid in the centre and smiled happily. "Hug..."

"See, at least she recognises me now!"

Fang Yuan pinched Angel's cheeks, took out his needle and performed treatment for her daily.

Needless to say, the treatment which this little girl had received was one that many Chinese would dream of.

After Fang Yuan's mysterious disappearance, his mysterious magical needle technique was lost and only Old Tian could use it to

half of its full potential.

Many rich and wealthy people with ailing health were searching for Fang Yuan and even did unthinkable things.

Lorita stood there and observed Fang Yuan. Her eyeballs darted around and no one knew what she was thinking.

...

After the daily treatment, Angel would fall asleep.

Lorita would get a moment of peace and would use the time wisely and do her own things.

Fang Yuan came to an isolated room, sighed and opened a safe.

The safe was hidden in the wall and was cemented to the sides of the wall. It appeared extremely sturdy. As soon as Fang Yuan entered the passcode, the door opened with a soft 'Kacha', revealing the treasures inside.

There were gems, gold, foreign currency. Fang Yuan took out a big box and opened it. There were two Aquilaria figurines carved with extreme detail.

"The Aquilaria Maitreya and the Three Headed Six Arms Asura..."

Fang Yuan sighed before releasing a streak of spiritual energy.

"Buzz! Buzz!"

Both figurines started to emit a purple glow which combined to release a faint energy.

"Although I have brought both keys together, they can only combine at the correct timing..."

Fang Yuan fiddled with the figurines and was a little disappointed.

According to his prediction, the Aquilaria Maitreya and the Asura would combine to create a key which would be able to open space.

It would be likely to open up space leading to a place similar to that of the mermaid tomb plane.

Whatever which would lie in the small plane would be likely to be the inheritances of the supernormal beings from Chinese Country. They might even be stronger than the mermaids and would be considered gods of the ancient time!

Unfortunately, even if he had the key, he could only helplessly get information of the time and the location.

"This secret plane in Banyan City will only be activated after the third occurrence... I need to enter at the correct location, correct time with the correct keys. This is unfortunate..."

According to his prediction, the higher being who had set this secret plane in place had to be more powerful than the mermaids and once harnessed power even more powerful than the power of an arena. As long as the higher being wanted to conceal the plane, it would be able to do so with ease and would only allow the plane to appear when the time is up.

"This is also related to the concentration of spiritual droplets... Must I wait for enough spiritual droplets to be around before I can open a certain door?"

Fang Yuan appeared solemn.

Through his travels around the world, he had collected a lot of information and data.

For instance, the religions in Blue Star Alliance were an interesting influence.

At least, their 'God' had once existed. Even though all the faith that remained now was already diluted, after the third occurrence, the 'God' might develop a consciousness and attain the 4th Tier immediately, becoming a being capable of destruction!

The immortals in other parts of the world were similar to this.

"Other than Elder Extreme Darkness and I, who would not be bounded by the laws of this realm, the natives in the realm would be restricted... Before the arrival of the third occurrence, they would have zero chance of breaking through."

Fang Yuan had a premonition.

The arrival of the third occurrence would throw the entire world into chaos.

"However... that is still nothing. Considering my current cultivation, I have already become more powerful than all of them and will forever be the most powerful in the world....."

Fang Yuan smiled and looked at his own stats"

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 17.0

Spirit: 45.0

Magic: 45.0

Profession: ???

Cultivation: ???

Technique: [Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell (Grade 5 (33%))]

Skill: [Medicine (Level 3)], [Botany (Level 5)], [Fiery Golden Eyes (Level 1)]"

After entering the 5th Grade, even after absorbing an entire node, Fang Yuan could only push his cultivation up by a third.

"Even if I were to put in all my effort in cultivation, I would only reach the bottleneck at the peak of the 5th Grade. I can only attempt a breakthrough with the help of the third occurrence..."

This was Fang Yuan's plan. It was simple but he would forever be ahead of the rest and would have the ability to suppress everyone.

"Furthermore... I am more and more interested in this world."

Fang Yuan rubbed his chin and revealed a mysterious smile.

In a world with harsh laws of physics and spikes in spiritual energy after a thousand years, it was indeed mysterious.

Perhaps, he could find the answer to all these happenings from the inheritances of powerful beings in the ancient times.

Even if he could not find the explanation to the happenings in this world, it still had a lot of value in experimentation.

"Of course, other than that, there is just one small problem..."

A Chinese bringing two western daughters would surely attract attention.

Fang Yuan could detect that he was already being observed and being scanned through by a supernormal force. However, it was still the same. All of these did not matter to him.

# Chapter 434: Ten Years

---

Lorita's identity was suspicious.

As a 3rd Tier mutant and a higher-up of the White Pigeon Society, her sudden arrival in China Country would surely garner attention from everyone.

However, compared to the most powerful mutant in the world who had almost destroyed the Golden Eagle Federation, she was nothing.

At the Calamity Grade, a mutant would be akin to a walking atomic bomb. Even the 3 strongest countries would not be able to do offend such a mutant for they would not be able to bear the consequences.

Fang Yuan had the appearance of a Chinese man and did not break the laws of the country. It seemed like the country could establish good ties with him.

After testing him for a few times, both parties had come to an agreement.

Fang Yuan would not disrupt the few spies observing him, but the spies would not be so dumb as to invade his privacy.

In such a delicate balance, Fang Yuan led a simple life and observed the world and the countries changing.

Unknowingly, it was the Year 1013 and the third occurrence was about to arrive.

Within Banyan Tree City, a small shop had already opened its doors.

The shop was little and was in a secluded location. Upon entering, rows of wooden carvings lined the shelves, giving the entire place an artsy feel.

Although Fang Yuan had only used to dabble in the stock market



and his earnings were enough for him to lead a comfortable life, he felt that it was too boring to just focus on his cultivation every single day.

Therefore, through his boredom, he opened this wooden carving shop.

The sales of the shop were only average and could just cover up the costs of operating the shop.

'Furthermore... Those people are smart!'

Releasing his spiritual will, Fang Yuan smiled to himself as he detected a few spiritual auras in the vicinity.

Considering his status, he gave a rude shock to Xi Menjian the moment he settled down in the country. Therefore, Xi Menjian had sent some spies to observe him, suspecting that he was Fang Yuan.

Even so, what could he do?

After displaying his ability to spiritualise and therefore attack and defend at the same time, even Xi Menjian would not dare to offend him and take him down. Xi Menjian could only continue to observe in the dark until now.

"Good afternoon, Boss!"

A young boy wearing a school uniform and scarf walked into the shop. "Are you slacking around?"

"This is adult's business. How can you call it slacking?"

Fang Yuan raised his head up from the pile of books on the counter. "Little Ming, I've told you many times that we do not loan out the carvings in the shop!"

"But... Boss, I really like these toys. Do you want me to work for you during my holidays?"

Lin Ming's eyes glistened as he spoke.

"No need!"

Fang Yuan lowered his head.

He had personally carved all these carvings, giving them a mysterious vibe. It was the epitome of artworks.

Needless to say, Fang Yuan would always add a 'surprise' to the carvings depending on his mood. Whoever who would be so lucky or unlucky to receive the surprise would be none of his business.

"Eh? Where are the two sisters?"

Lin Ming was rather acquainted with them. After their short exchange, he started to ask about the sisters.

"Piak!"

Fang Yuan rolled up the book in his hands and smacked Lin Ming's head. "Why don't you focus on your studies!"

"I am instructed by my teacher to tell them not to forget about the year-end examinations..."

Lin Ming held his head and gave a look of pity as though he was wronged.

"Oh, I've got it!"

After Fang Yuan's treatment, Angel had restored her level of maturity to that of a young girl. Coupled with the fact that Lorita was doing nothing every day, Fang Yuan decided to just send the both of them to the nearest school to study.

The appearance of two westerners caused an uproar and a commotion in the school which only subsided after the involvement of the people from the Religious Bureau.

"Both my adopted daughters are naturally gifted and I am tired of them getting number 1..."

Fang Yuan gazed at Lin Ming. "As for you, you should study hard. At least you would be able to do something well so that you can

look for a job in the future!"

"No!"

Lin Ming clenched his fist. "I want to awaken and become a mutant to join the Dragon Team of Chinese Country!"

"Piak!"

Before he could finish his sentence, he endured another hit on his head. "Ahh... Pain..."

"You're young but you're already thinking of impractical thoughts. How is your progress in your 9th Stance Exercise?"

Fang Yuan rolled his eyes.

The occurrences and the presence of mutants were already long accepted by humans.

In fact, there were already huge changes in every aspect of society.

For instance, 10 years ago, the 9th Stance Exercise was first formulated by Fang Yuan and was an exercise which many students hated the most. The initial idea of the exercise was to commence cultivation training in each and every student, but now, it was used as a test to measure the potential of every student.

Compared to the previous general exercise, the 9th Stance Exercise which Fang Yuan had designed was psychopathic. It was 10 times more complicated than the previous general exercise and would require the perfect combination of breathing techniques and mindsets.

Obviously, such an arduous exercise only eliminated a lot of people from the beginning.

"I have already practised it up to the 8th Stance. I need a few more days before I can complete the 9th Stance..."

Lin Ming clenched his fists tightly.

"Oh? This progress is rather quick! Is your family nourishing you?"

Fang Yuan casually looked away and smiled.

"Mmm, I have servings of spiritual rice every day, and 4 servings of spiritual meat every week..."

Lin Ming had a look of worry in his eyes. To his family, it was not easy to provide so much spiritual food to him.

"Alright, you are an ambitious boy. I wish you all the best for your year-end examinations..."

Fang Yuan smiled and grabbed a wooden carving before tossing it over. "Take this as a gift. Hopefully, you won't miss the final chance!"

If he could not complete the 9th Stance Exercise in High School, chances of him completing it in the future would be slimmer. To Lin Ming, this was the final opportunity to change his fate.

"Cough... Thank you!"

Lin Ming was in a daze. "Boss, I remember you as a stingy person! Why are you so generous this time? I'm not used to it!"

"Not used to it? Then return it to me!"

Fang Yuan shrugged his shoulders.

"Nope!"

Lin Ming held on to the wooden carving tightly. Unknowingly, he felt a certain connection with the carving as soon as it landed into his hands.

'Take it as my parting gift to you, for I am going to leave soon.'

Fang Yuan thought to himself before giving a serious look. "Quickly go back, your parents must be waiting for you."

"Mm, goodbye Boss!"

Seeing how Fang Yuan had turned serious, Lin Ming felt a little

afraid and politely took his leave.

"Haha! Father!"

As soon as Lin Ming left the shop, he knocked into a girl and fell to the floor in a daze.

It was a tall and blonde young girl with a voluptuous figure her thick uniform could not conceal.

Lin Ming remained dazed as he recalled the fact that he had come into contact with her just moments ago.

"Alright Angel, where have you been?"

Fang Yuan gave a look of hopelessness.

After his skilled acupuncture, Angel not only restored her ability to walk but her IQ also slowly increased.

Of course, IQ was different from real-life experiences.

Although Angel was already 20 years old, she was still studying in High School and was considered one of the slow learners.

However, Lorita was worse off than her. Because of her small size, she was diagnosed with 'Dwarfism' and had been demoted from being Angel's elder sister to her younger sister.

"Nothing much, I had a date with the beautiful winter and built a few snowmen!"

Angel replied happily and had an energetic disposition.

"Mmm, Lin Ming has especially come here to inform you about the year-end examinations.

Fang Yuan nodded his head.

"Oh, I see. Thank you, Lin Ming!"

Angel stretched her hand out and helped Lin Ming back to his feet. Although he had already stood up, he still kept his hand outstretched as he remained in his daze thinking about the soft and white hands which helped him up.

"Cough cough..."

Fang Yuan could no longer stand it anymore. With a cough, Lin Ming snapped out of his trance and left in disappointment.

"Hehe... Father, he is rather charming!"

Angel snickered and turned around.

"Mmm, where's Lorita?"

Fang Yuan shrugged his shoulders and changed the topic.

"She..... has always been hanging out with the weird mutants. I've heard that she had just joined an official society of Chinese Country and wants to help them to complete a mission..."

Angel exposed Lorita without any reservations. "She has even tried to recruit me!"

"This child will surely get herself into trouble one day..."

Fang Yuan shook his head.

However, he had placed more importance on Angel. After many years of experimentation and research, Fang Yuan had learnt a lot more and it was already worth it.

"However, I feel that Lorita is not doing anything wrong. After all, we live in Chinese Country..."

Angel quickly added. "Also, Father, the third occurrence is coming!"

"Why? Are you worried about me?"

Fang Yuan smiled.

Ever since she had become more matured, she had cemented their relationship as father and daughter either because she was full of gratitude for Fang Yuan or that she had already become closer to him after all these years. However, the way she addressed Fang Yuan was still a little unusual.

"What have you detected?"

He asked as he displayed his interest.

"Not just for me! Every mutant could feel that the bottleneck which has always been restricting them is beginning to shake... According to Professor Fang's theory on the spikes in spiritual energy, this is the symptom of the impending arrival of the third occurrence!"

Angel spoke in a serious tone.

With many supporting pieces of evidence, Fang Yuan's theories on the theory of the Big Circulation and the spikes in spiritual energy were all undisputed classics now and were continued to be researched upon by scientists.

The thesis which almost got him expelled from school was now the most widely referenced thesis. Mutant scientists would have to take it as a compulsory subject and this was something Fang Yuan did not expect in the beginning.

# Chapter 435: Occurrence

---

## 435 Occurrence

Translator:Sparrow Translations | Editor: JTJTY97

Nearing the end of Year 1014, the lives of many were not peaceful.

The third occurrence had already been proven by the spiritual energy peak theory, many mutants and cultivators were eagerly waiting for it.

Moreover, in East Continent and West Continent, end of the world rumours were rife due to the tremendous changes occurring.

Underground base, Chinese Country capital.

"Please spread yourselves out and focus on monitoring those mutants and cultivators originally registered as Murderous Grade... Each major city must be under control to prevent normal people from suddenly obtaining powers and causing accidents!"

Xi Menjian had aged a lot and white hairs could be seen on his head. Nevertheless, the might and prestige exuded from his body were even more solemn.

In order to respond to this occurrence, the country had decentralised its authority. Thus, the Religious Bureau was a massive organisation now, not only did they receive the full cooperation of local police forces and authorities, the Religious Bureau could even command the army.

With such a huge authority, its responsibilities were naturally very huge too.

"Especially in the capital, screen through everyone again! Other than our own people, even Ghost Grade mutants are not allowed to stay!"

Xi Menjian thought for a while before adding another command.



After all, after Ghost Grade was Murderous Grade, the destruction they could cause would be very huge too.

Of course, with the capital's population, it would be almost impossible to thoroughly screen everyone.

If there was a Murderous Grade mutant hidden in the capital which made use of this opportunity to breakthrough and the control was not strict enough to prevent him from using his powers... Xi Menjian dared not imagine what would happen next.

"Sigh... this matter is not what a human can control! I shall retire after finishing this term!"

Xi Menjian pondered and silently resigned. He then rubbed the area between his eyebrows and asked, "How's the Dragon Team?"

"They have already been dispatched to ensure the safety of a few chiefs..." One of the meeting attendees replied.

Even though Fang Yuan had already left, the Dragon Team was still the bureau's trump card.

"Just that... after losing the God of Thunder, we lost a force of deterrence amongst those very powerful..."

"Also, regarding the process of making the spiritual droplets detector more miniature and portable... Professor Fang Yuan easily developed it in a few months when he was here, but now, it has been years and the research department still cannot complete it..."

A few department supervisors sighed, "If only the God of Thunder and Professor Fang Yuan were still around..."

"Don't talk about these already, aren't the newly developed ones good to use too?"

Xi Menjian was having a piercing headache and he felt a bit helpless too.

Although he had some vague guesses, after being reminded of that powerful person living in Banyan Tree City, he was afraid to

use any radical or risky tactics.

Nevertheless, Xi Menjian was very clear what an exceedingly powerful mutant was capable of.

At that moment, the people and technology under Xi Menjian were not lacking at all, however, he just did not have a flagship person like Fang Yuan.

After all, before the third occurrence, no mutants would be able to break through the 4th Tier and this was the law of this realm.

"Also, that Banyan Tree City..."

Xi Menjian thought for a moment and asked a person in charge, "How's the situation there?"

"Due to the agreement with 'that person', the strength we deployed there is the weakest. Currently, the mutant group is led by Comrade Zhao Danu and the military side is helmed by Comrade Ye Yingzi!"

A middle-aged man raised his spectacles and continued, "Just that, there are some changes happening recently, we have detected the activities of a few foreign powers. Their rationales are unknown... should we deploy more men?"

Xi Menjian considered for a while before finally making his decision.

"No need! Continue with the current state! Meeting over!"

...

Not only in Chinese Country, other countries were also making their arrangements in full swing.

Accompanied by the bells of the new year, the defences were at its peak.

Blue Star Alliance.

Blue Star Alliance was an alliance formed by a few small

countries scattered inside East Continent. Their aim was to have a complete integration of politics and economies and thus becoming a large force that could compete with Golden Eagle Federation and Chinese Country.

There were only four or five member countries originally, but now, the alliance expanded to include 47 countries.

Currently, near the surroundings of Holy Mountain, Holy Blue Lion Empire.

Many people gathered for the new year pilgrimage. They were holding candles and there were at least 300,000 of them.

These were the core believers of the Curia. Inside the Platinum Palace on top of the Holy Mountain, the Pope and many archbishops in red robes silently watched the scenes outside.

"The third occurrence... this is God's prophecy, it is the time He returns!"

A bishop in a red robe spoke. His hair was all grey, he had deep wrinkles on his face and his body was continuously emanating a holy energy.

This was different from the energy of mutants and cultivators, it was a kind of mutation of spiritual energy.

From the faith of billions of believers combined with spiritual energy, the muddled holy energy formed flooded the entire Holy Mountain. The power of the bishops and pastors came from the radiation of this bundle of energy.

Fang Yuan investigated this means before, however, as the fundamental quality of this form of energy was still from a mutated energy from people's beliefs, he did not provoke it at all.

"God came from the void, divided the mountains, oceans and land, brought about light and agriculture to this world..."

The Pope narrated in a very pious way, "After He left, he

prophesied, after 3,000 years later, the Heaven above Holy Mountain would open and God will reappear!"

"If things go well, it will be this time!" An archbishop added.

The Church had also done research on the energy from religious faith.

Previously, the concentration of spiritual droplets was too low, even though faith still existed, there was no medium for propagating it. It could not be stored too and thus, it could not accomplish anything.

But now, accompanied by the resurgence of spiritual energy, the devout pastors' holy spells began to awaken. This brought about tremendous changes to the development of the Church.

"Dang! Dang!"

"Dang! Dang!"

The moon slowly rose up the night skies. As midnight was approaching, the ceremony was becoming more and more ceremonious. The believers were extremely enthusiastic and fervent, it even caused a holy wave.

Ripples of holy light could be seen with the naked eye emanating from their bodies. They continuously merged and turned into a vibrant stream of waves that washed the entire Holy Mountain.

"Praise the God, you are the bringer of light! The one and only Lord!"

The Pope and a few archbishops appeared and led the followers to begin praying.

"Rumble!"

Under the numerous praises, the milky white coloured holy light gathered and rushed to the peak of the mountain. Immediately, it opened a certain half plane and an angel-like human silhouette with three pairs of wings descended from it. It then landed on Holy

Mountain, at the core of the energy from faith.

"Angel!"

"What's that? Heaven?"

"Lord....."

Lots of believers were hyped up. As they looked at the giant Heaven vaguely emerging above the mountain peak, they were extremely excited.

In the dark, those powerful forces monitoring it had a disapproving look on their faces.

"Indeed, the Curia had something hidden!"

A man in black shirt watched the changes happening on his screen and scolded at the same time.

"A living angel? It better not be another man-made weapon created by Golden Eagle Federation..." A staff on the side guessed.

"No! I'm afraid this is real!"

There were a few companions nearby in the same ceremonious costumes who seemed to be from the nobility, their faces turned white, their eyes were bloodshot and they shook their heads, "Of course... a living angel is already a God!"

"Why would such an angel appear, this is not scientific!"

The investigators from Blue Star Alliance were at a slight loss.

"No, this is very scientific!"

A handsome youth dressed in the same ceremonious costume retorted in a sing-song way, "In the first 1,000 years, God created the world and left behind light and seeds. In the second 1,000 years, He built a beautiful palace in the skies and also left behind the prophecy of his return in the third 1,000 years... These are all recorded down by my family, they can also be found in other religious texts."

"So that means, God... has returned?"

The in-charge was furious, "You want me to type and send up such a report? Are you trying to get me fired?"

"Since mutants and cultivators have already appeared, what's so odd about a God appearing?"

The youth smiled nonchalantly, "Even if it is a God, it is just a powerful living thing... Looks like due to the low concentration of spiritual energy previously, He chose to seal himself in the heavens above the peak of Holy Mountain. Now, since religious faith and spiritual energy have increased again, He chose to awaken now and fulfill his will!"

"A God's... will, what exactly does He want to do?"

The in-charge mumbled and felt as though his mind and thoughts were about to fall apart.

...

Banyan Tree City, Middle Continent

Fang Yuan arrived at a desolated mountain.

After moving aside a huge stone, an entrance appeared at the mountainside. Inside it, the spiritual energy was extremely condensed.

"Hmm... looks like this Spiritual Gathering Array is quite useful after all!"

This was a rare opportunity. Fang Yuan immediately sat cross-legged and began to absorb with all his strength.

As time passed, a turning point suddenly arrived.

"Rumble!"

The earth shook and the array in the cave ran at its full power. White fog condensed and looked it was about to turn into dewdrops.

"The third occurrence meant yet another set of locks are unlocked..."

Fang Yuan turned into a black hole and greedily devoured everything. He also looked at his stats board at the same time.

After these few years of dedicated cultivation, the 5th Grade of his Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell had already increased and improved tremendously even though it was only slightly above 50% at first.

However, he ultimately had to stop at the bottleneck of 99.99%.

"If my calculations are correct, after arena, it would be area! If I can complete my area in this realm and bring back some of its properties, I would have no bottlenecks when breaking through to the 7th Tier of Illusionary Divine in Da Qian!"

Fang Yuan looked at his stats:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 20.0

Spirit: 49.0

Magic: 49.0

Profession: ???

Cultivation: ???

Technique: [Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell (Grade 5 (99.99%))]

Skill: [Medicine (Level 3)], [Botany (Level 5)], [Fiery Golden Eyes (Level 1)]"

"Such a pity, it's so close!"

Fang Yuan walked out of the cave and went outside.

The moon was bright and slightly hazy too as streaks of Emperor Flow Serum-like substance fell from the skies and entered the mountain streams and rivers, enlightening all living matters.

"Oh, this is really the beginning of a mythical era....."

Fang Yuan greedily took a deep breath.

Currently, in this realm, spiritual energy was already crazily abundant. If it continued, any flowers or grass, foxes, rats, snakes or ants would all become spiritually aware and become spirits!

"Chaotic times have arrived!"



# Chapter 436: Treasure Hunting

---

The arrival of the occurrences and the spikes in the spiritual energy did not only affect the humans.

If the big willow tree which almost destroyed Mountain Ocean City during the second occurrence was a standalone case, the third occurrence would not only commence the cultivation for humans. Trees, grasses, and animals alike would also be able to start on their cultivation!

A few years ago, a few exceptions had invaded the cities from the forests but now, this would only be a common sight.

Fang Yuan would no longer be surprised at the appearance of wild beasts attacking the cities.

"It's going to be soon... In another 10 years, we will know the final secret of this realm!"

Fang Yuan gazed afar and his eyes were filled with thirst.

As a dream-traverser, how would he stop before finding out the final secret of the realm?

"Of course... I have a final treasure in my hands."

Fang Yuan returned to the Chinese courtyard house and realised that there were two military personnel waiting in their uniform, a male and a female.

"Good morning, the both of you."

He smiled and looked at his old friend. "Are you here this early to wish me a happy new year?"

"That's right!"

Zhao Daniu exchanged glances with Ye Yingzi and smiled.

After many years in the service, even the honest bloke Zhao Daniu would have some accomplishments by now.

Although they had long suspected that this Lei was Fang Yuan, since Fang Yuan did not admit to being Lei, they could only continue the act and treat him like an outsider.

"Angel, prepare some tea!"

After entering the Chinese courtyard house, Fang Yuan instructed a blonde to pour tea for the two guests.

After observation, Fang Yuan could tell that the special ability of his adoptive daughter had improved, but she had not reached the 4th Tier.

As for her cultivation? Fang Yuan had long given up on it.

After all, considering her special ability in disrupting the flow of spiritual droplets, it would be almost impossible for her to absorb spiritual droplets in the air to improve her cultivation.

Even if Fang Yuan were to bring her to the Spiritual Gathering Array last night, almost half of the spiritual energy would be dispersed.

"Thank you!"

Ye Yingzi received the cup of tea from Angel and took out a red packet. On the other hand, Zhao Daniu's expression turned to one of uneasiness and Fang Yuan could tell that his special ability has been hindered.

"Alright, why are the both of you here?"

Fang Yuan took a sip of tea and knew that they would not be here for no reason.

"This... Mister Lei, are you aware of what your other daughter, Lorita, is up to?"

Looking at Zhao Daniu, Ye Yingzi gave up and directly asked.

"Why? Has she caused trouble again?"

Fang Yuan rubbed his forehead. "This is troubling. You can do

whatever you want to her and I would have no qualms about it!"

"It's not that..."

Embarrassed, Ye Yingzi quickly replied and rolled her eyes.

She was a higher-up of the White Pigeon Society, the Shadow Demon Lorita. She would be considered one of the most powerful mutants in the world, so who would dare to educate her?

"Not only did she not cause trouble, she has also worked with the humans to maintain peace in Banyan Tree City. We have even brought the Letter of Commendation and award for her!"

Ye Yingzi composed herself and continued. "However, in a recent investigation, we have realised that Lorita might be in a little bit of trouble. Therefore, we are here to inform you about it."

With that, she passed a stack of documents to Fang Yuan.

"Lorita should be locating a secret cave in Bull's Head Mountain, right? Unknowingly, that place has also attracted foreigners... Initially, the foreigners were nothing much."

Zhao Daniu added. "However, according to the insider news we have received this morning... The Curia of the East Continent had hurriedly sent out a group of elites to the mountain, led by the archbishop... Because of this, the Golden Eagle Federation and the Blue Star Alliance have also reacted and since Lorita is involved, we believe that she might be in danger."

"People from the Curia?"

Fang Yuan frowned.

Because of the fact that Fang Yuan had created a huge commotion in the Golden Eagle Federation, he chose to maintain a low profile while he was in the East Continent. However, the Curia was the largest group of mutants in the Blue Star Alliance and were against mutants such as the werewolves and vampires, and Fang Yuan was aware of all these.

"Previously, under the attack of the Curia, the evil forces had been weakened. The Curia had also formed an alliance with the Blue Star Government, sharing their intelligence with each other. One of our people sent us this!"

Zhao Daniu placed a leather box on the table. After opening it, a screen was revealed.

After a few flickers, the image of what had happened on Holy Mountain appeared on the screen.

Believers covered the entire mountain like ants. Everything that happened, including the brief appearance of Heaven, were captured.

However, after the appearance of Heaven and the arrival of The Angel, the screen went blank.

"What views do you have on this, Mister Lei?"

"There might be a half plane on the top of the Holy Mountain. It seems like something powerful was residing in it before being awakened last night..."

Fang Yuan rubbed his chin.

This was nothing surprising under such circumstances.

After all, there was already the existence of mutants and supernatural cultivators in this planet. If even the mermaids could have such a plan of creating a plane, why couldn't other species do the same thing?

There was the inheritance of cultivators in the Middle Continent and therefore, a few Heavens and Hells in the East Continent would not be surprising.

However, their technology was much more advanced than the mermaids for it to hold on for a thousand years before successfully returning to the earth at the moment of the next occurrence.

"Furthermore... The activation of such half planes seems to be

related to the concentration of spiritual droplets in the world..."

"You're indeed the mighty Mister Lei to have such knowledge in this aspect!"

Ye Yingzi's eyes glistened as though she was hinting at something.

"Only a little, only a little!"

Fang Yuan took a sip of tea. "What do you think the intention of the Curia is, now that they have entered the Middle Continent?"

"We feel threatened exactly because we don't know what they are after..."

Ye Yingzi sounded helpless. "In the wee hours of the morning today, there were warnings in almost every location. Not just about mutants, but there were a few cases of normal wild animals harming humans. Some other secluded villages even had their communication with the city cut. To speak the truth, the chief of bureau is already panicking over this and it is impossible for him to deploy troops here..."

She had a desolate look on her face.

Fang Yuan felt a little pity for her. The entire Banyan Tree City was a rather secluded city and the man in charge, Zhao Daniu, was merely a Murderous Grade mutant who had limited powers.

He could not even deal with a Lorita, let alone the foreign forces.

"Mmm, I understand now. I will pay more attention to this."

Fang Yuan nodded his head and sent his guests off as his eyes glistened.

He was the clearest about news regarding the cave at Bull's Head Mountain.

After all, the location which the Aquilaria Maitreya and the Asura pointed to was towards Bull's Head Mountain!

"This is a thousand year seal. I wonder what the ancient cultivators have left for me?"

His heart was filled with anticipation.

"Brother Fang!"

Ye Yingzi stood up. Zhao Daniu fidgeted and his eyes turned red. "Come back... The chief of bureau and ourselves cannot hold on much longer."

"Brother Fang?"

Fang Yuan appeared stunned. "Who is that? Was he your old friend?"

"Enough, Comrade Zhao Daniu! Where's your discipline!"

Ye Yingzi remained solemn and secretly observed Fang Yuan's expression. Disappointed, she pulled Zhao Daniu and took their leave.

...

"Adoptive Father!"

When the both of them had left, Angel asked with curiosity. "Are they your old friends? Does this count as revealing your true emotions?"

Her eyeballs darted around and Fang Yuan did not know what she was thinking.

"Aiyo... what are you doing?"

Fang Yuan rapped her head, making her cry.

"Don't let your thoughts run wild. Also, take out the two figurines from my safe in the room!"

Fang Yuan instructed.

"Oh."

Angel leaped playfully into the house and within a few moments,

she retrieved the Aquilaria Maitreya and the Asura.

Now, even she could detect that something was unusual with the two figurines.

A faint purple glow appeared on the surface of both figurines but did not show any signs of fading.

"Hmm..."

Fang Yuan glanced at Angel with a mysterious look. "If not for the fact that you are around, I'm afraid these two figurines would have been activated and shocked the world."

Under such a huge disturbance of spiritual energy, these two figurines could still emit the purple glow, proving that they were special figurines.

"Does this mean... these two are treasures? I know, they must be the magical equipment written in the legends!"

Angel's eyes glistened with excitement.

"You're wrong. They are merely a key!"

Fang Yuan stretched his hands out and shattered both figurines.

"Buzz! Buzz!"

From the crumbled pieces, a faint purple glow started to fuse together, forming the shape of a gem. There was a visible vibration of purple energy within the gem.

"Oh! Oh! Are we going to look for treasure?"

Angel became increasingly excited. "I'll prepare."

"No need for preparations. After all, it is just outside our house and we will reach it in a few steps!"

Fang Yuan shook his head. Controlling Angel, he made her fly up as they rushed towards Bull's Head Mountain.

...

Bull's Head Mountain.

"Roar! Roar!"

"Aw! Aw!"

Wild beasts of every species appeared. They were all huge in size and none of them feared death as they charged towards a particular party of people.

"Such cute pigs and monkeys..."

Seeing the animals, Lorita smiled and a shadow appeared around her. Like a black arm, she grabbed on to an aggressive monkey and forced it to kneel before her. "Be a good boy and I will buy a banana for you..."

She stroked the monkey's fur on its head but had a serious look on her face. 'This type of monkey was just a normal monkey yesterday. However, today, it has transformed into a monster. Its ability makes it as powerful as a Ghost Grade mutant already.'

"Ah!"

"Help!"

With a slight hesitation, a member of her party was being coiled up by a python and was stunned.

"Leader Cai, quickly save him!"

One of the group members wailed as a middle-aged man fused a small fireball before him before smashing it on the huge snake.

"Hiss..."

The huge snake was in pain and tightened its grip even more, causing the unlucky fellow to roll suffer even more and was on the brink of death.

"Hehe... Leader Cai, you will harm him instead!"

Lorita chuckled. A shadow appeared behind her and struck down like a sharp knife.



With a flash, the python was beheaded.

# Chapter 437: Predicament

---

"You're great!"

The huge corpse of the snake fell to the ground and a group of people quickly rushed forward to provide their assistance to the wounded.

One female party member made her way towards Leader Cai. "Leader, where did you get this western girl from? She's not just powerful, but also speaks fluent Chinese language!"

"I'm not too sure myself. She seems to be the adoptive daughter of a Chinese and grew up in Chinese Country..."

Leader Cai wiped his sweat from his forehead. "Regardless, since she was recommended by Brother Zhao, I can depend on her!"

Zhao Daniu was in charge of the mutants in Banyan Tree City and had a high social status. After hearing Leader Cai, the female member could only nod her head in agreement.

"Yawn..."

Lorita walked a few steps forward and covered her mouth with her tiny hand. "I'm so sleepy... Leader, have we not located the cave yet?"

"Relax, we're about there!"

Leader Cai was a little disappointed. "It was supposed to be a peaceful New Year's night and yet we have to encounter something like this to keep all of us on our toes.... We have no choice. I'm sure all of you have seen the beasts here. They are extremely powerful and especially so after last night. If we don't find the source of all these troubles, the people living in the city below will have to leave for their safety."

"Furthermore, this is a task given to us by the government. Once we complete it, we can inform Chief Zhao. Wouldn't we benefit

then?"

If not for these reasons, the group of them would not have come out at such a timing.

Of course, Lorita did not care about any of these.

As the group of them walked for a short distance, they finally arrived at a valley. In the depths of the valley, there was a huge hole.

"Hmm..."

Leader Cai took out a talisman and waved it in the air.

"Whoosh!"

The talisman caught fire and was reduced to ashes.

"This is a Spiritual Sensing Talisman which I have painstakingly requested from the Taoists. Since the talisman broke into flames just outside the cave, it will mean that the cave is filled with spiritual energy. This might just be the source of all mutations.

Leader Cai spoke with much excitement in his voice.

"There might be some sort of danger in here..."

The other party members started to hesitate.

They were unfortunate during their journey into the mountain as they had encountered attacks from many wild beasts. Even some of the party members were injured and the majority of them were already holding grudges.

"It will surely be dangerous. However, we are meant to deal with such dangers as a group, right?"

Leader Cai was indeed an experienced leader. "Those who are injured will get twice the reward while those who would die would get compensation. I would not take a single cent of reward this time!"

"You're too noble, Leader Cai!"

"Alright, I'll give it to you!"

With his words of encouragement, he had managed to bring up the morale of the group. Lorita stood by the side and rolled her eyes.

She knew that Leader Cai was putting in so much effort, not for the reward but to establish good ties with the higher-ups. Even if he were to come up with his own money to pay the compensation, he would still benefit in the long run.

"This cave seems to be a dead end..."

A female party member, Wang Xin, stood at the entrance of the cave, closed her eyes and reported.

Her special ability was unique. Like a bat, she was able to use sonar to detect her surroundings.

"Something's not right. There's movement!"

Wang Xin's expression changed. "It detected me! It's extremely quick!"

"Roar! Roar!"

In the next moment, accompanying a tiger's roar, there was a strong gust of wind coming from the cave.

To everyone's shock, a 3-metre long white mutated tiger appeared from the cave. It had a bloodied stench coming from it as it struck its paws towards Wang Xin.

If its paw were to land on her, she would undoubtedly turn into a pile of gruesome flesh and blood.

"Shadow Shield!"

Lorita flicked her finger and a shadow shield appeared before Wang Xin.

"Bang!"

The tiger paw landed on the shield, creating a noise of impact

which was uncomfortable to the ears.

"Great!"

Leader Cai cheered on and with the wave of his hands, a fireball flew towards the white tiger.

"Roar! Roar!"

The white tiger continued to roar and emitted a green soundwave from its mouth. Like a sharp blade, it sliced the fireball into two.

"Shing!"

The fireball was extinguished and Leader Cai took a few steps back. "Spiritual beast?"

A normal mutated best would at most have increased strength and speed, which was nothing much.

However, such an evolved beast which could use spiritual spells could already be considered as a demonic beast or spiritual beast and its wisdom could be compared to that of a human.

"Mmm, that's right!"

Seeing the white tiger, Lorita's eyes glistened. "What a coincidence! I'm looking to keep a white cat as a pet."

"Roar! Roar!"

Hearing Lorita's words, there seemed to be anger in the white tiger's eyes as it fiercely pounced towards Lorita.

"Shadow Bind!"

Lorita smiled as a huge shadow appeared behind her. Like a majestic dragon, the shadow slithered in the air above her before binding all four limbs of the tiger, trapping it in mid-air.

"This is impossible..."

Witnessing this scene, Wang Xin was shocked. "I'm afraid that such ability would be the fabled Murderous Grade, right? Leader, what kind of person did Chief Zhao introduce you to?"

"He only mentioned that she was a daughter of a friend..."

Leader Cai was relieved and afraid at the same time. "Chief Zhao is indeed influential. The friends he makes is on a totally different level from us."

"Hey big cat! I've you're still going to be naughty, my father will kill you for your meat..."

Lorita appeared vexed. "My younger sister is also troubling too... can you imagine that she wants to be the elder sister now... she will surely torture you if she was here."

Lorita mumbled to herself as she approached the tiger. Although she had an innocent smile on her face, it struck fear in those who were watching her, especially so for the tiger. In an instant, the tiger's fur stood on its ends.

"Therefore... you must be a good boy alright..."

Lorita patted the white tiger on its head and did not seem as though she feared the tiger from leaping on her to releasing the sharp vibrations. Suddenly, the shadow behind Lorita started to shoot sharp shadow projectiles.

"Whoosh!"

The shadow projectiles flew through an old tree trunk before blood was seen spewing everywhere.

"Mmm? Someone is stalking us, be alert!"

Seeing this scene, Leader Cai shouted and kept everyone on their toes.

What had changed the most in the past ten years since the second occurrence would be the danger of the wilderness and the conflicts within the group.

Leader Cai knew that in the wilderness, if two groups with bad blood were to meet, they would try and kill each other and no one would know about it.

Although he was all along a peace-loving person, he knew that he still had to keep his guard up.

"Rumble!"

The tree trunk fell to the ground, revealing a corpse behind which was sliced into two. It was a westerner with distinct facial features.

"A westerner?!"

Wang Xin screamed before glaring at Lorita.

'Could this be because of Lorita?'

Witnessing this scene, Leader Cai was beginning to suspect something as well. However, he could not dismiss any of the group members for no good reason and with that, he started to feel conflicted.

"Whoosh! Whoosh!"

At this point in time, a fleeting silhouette came before them.

"God loves the people of the earth!"

The person in front was a person wearing a red bishop gown. He was an old westerner who wore a silver pendant by his neck.

"This person seems like the red-robed archbishop from the East Continent."

Lorita gazed at the group of people who seemed to come from a church. "Why are you people here?"

"We are instructed by God to come here, for the future of the humans."

The red-robed archbishop gave a vague and mysterious response.

"Hehe... Why is the God of the East Continent getting involved with the issues of other continents?"

Lorita snickered.

"God... is everywhere!"

The archbishop took a step forward and gave a solemn look.

"Rumble!"

A thick holy light started to emit from his body, giving the people standing around him a sense of pressure as though a mountain was leaning on them.

"I admire your courage!"

Leader Cai was about to go on his knees but Lorita seemed unaffected. "How dare you enter the country illegally and still be this boastful in Chinese Country..."

"For the glory of the God, we can sacrifice our lives!"

The archbishop spoke in a singing tone and the holy light from his body started to intensify, forming the silhouette which resembled an angel.

"D\*mn this holy strength..."

Lorita started to display signs of discomfort and took a step back.

If they were comparing combat power alone, she would be much more powerful than the old man in front of her. However, the spiritual aura of the holy light was the perfect counter to shadow and darkness type special abilities, which made her powers restricted.

"D\*mn you old man, what do you want exactly?"

"I am instructed by the Lord to retrieve something..."

The archbishop came towards the cave and had a look of suspicion. "Why is this place open?"

"What open? Are you confused? It was always here!"

Lorita scoffed.

"It seems like you don't know about it as well!"



There was a condescending look on the archbishop's face. "Since it is as such, we need to remain here to wait for it to naturally activate itself. The few of you will have to remain here as well and will not be allowed to spread the news out."

Leader Cai looked back and frowned, preventing his group members from voicing out their objections.

He could feel a sense of danger in these crazed believers, and all of them were highly-skilled.

To achieve their goals, these believers might kill everyone they encounter.

"Old fogey, you think too highly of yourself!"

Lorita smiled sheepishly and threw her shadow hand in mid-air.

"Roar! Roar!"

The white tiger started to roar as it was being flung towards the group of believers from the church.

"Shadow Ambush!"

Under Lorita's control, long black needles started to appear in every believer's shadow before flying towards them.

"Whoosh! Whoosh!"

Two well-built men on horses grunted as they fell towards the ground.

However, that was all.

As soon as the thin needles approached the old archbishop, it melted like a sandcastle being engulfed by the waves.

After seeing his followers fall to the ground, the archbishop was infuriated. "How dare you ambush the judge of the church? I, Ingres, shall find you... guilty!"

"Holy spells?"

Lorita paid no attention to the rambling old man. However, as

soon as Ingres 'found' her guilty, she could feel that the air around her came to a halt in that instant. A powerful pressure landed on her body and all she could recall was the Church's holy spells mentioned by Fang Yuan in the past and embodied the power of mantra.

"Since you are a non-believer, you need to be cleansed!"

The archbishop remained expressionless. He took a step forward and stuck out a finger.

"Rumble!"

On his fingertip, a fireball started to grow in size and it was as though it could melt through anything.

The white tiger seemed to have sensed danger as it started to kneel on the ground, afraid to twitch a single muscle.

# Chapter 438: Secret

---

The fearsome might of the platinum-coloured holy flames incinerated the shadow immediately and arrived in front of Lorita.

"Fwoooo!"

A spark of holy flame caught onto Lorita. Lorita's silhouette ignited like a piece of paper at once as the flames burnt.

Seeing such, the red-robed archbishop remained rather emotionless. Instead, he had a slightly ugly expression on his face.

"Tsk ts... what a nasty old fellow who wants to burn such a cute girl like me alive..."

At a shadow beside it, Lorita walked out of the shadow and patted her chest. She looked like she was still rather shook and continued, "Luckily... I learned some tricks from my daddy."

Unfortunately, that was all she managed to learn.

After spending close to 10 years, she finally forcefully managed to understand and utilise some properties of shadows. She could create a few shadow clones of sorts.

In Fang Yuan's eyes, she did not have much potential and was not very capable.

"Ahhh!"

As Lorita evaded the holy flames, she launched her counterattack at the same time.

Large amounts of shadows gathered from the shadows of those from the Church and turned into all sorts of attacks.

The screams of those from the Church could be heard and a few of them collapsed.

"Sinner!"

Such a scene obviously made the archbishop enraged.

A cross-shaped glow appeared in his eyes and the shape of the angel behind him became clearer as he reached out his palm.

"Holy! The mighty God of Light, you created the world and gave light to it!"

In the surroundings, faint voices of hymns could be heard and a platinum coloured light shined as though it was subduing space.

"Ahh!"

In the shadows, a few Lorita's that looked exactly the same were squeezed out and exploded, leaving behind only the real body.

"Impossible..."

Lorita was forced to a corner and beads of sweat appeared on her face.

"A red-robed archbishop from the Curia is so strong?"

Last time, when she was with Lei at the Blue Star Alliance, she provoked the Curia once and dealt several staggering blows to them.

"I come with God's will!"

The old guy muttered again and swiped his hand with no hesitation.

In the skies, the angel did the exact same action. The platinum-coloured holy light solidified into a cage, as though it was a piece of amber that trapped insects.

"Wind!"

Just as a look of despair appeared on Lorita's face, a green coloured tempest appeared beside her. It turned into a dense storm of wind blades and with just one whirl, the giant hand of the platinum angel largely disappeared.

"Heresy! Another one?"

The red-robed archbishop eyes darted right past Leader Cai; he

did not regard him as a human at all.

"Archbishop Ingres! It has been a while since we have met!"

Another group of people arrived and they were all dressed as mercenaries. The person leading them was a well-built Caucasian man with a gust of strong wind surrounding him.

"Golden Eagle Federation's secret agent, Tempest Jani?"

Ingres furrowed his brows, "Mere mortals, how dare you all covet the treasures left behind by God? Be careful of the flames of greed, for they might scorch your soul and burn it to nothing!"

"No matter what, this lady, Lorita, is not someone you can touch."

The person who came was indeed the Jani who was defeated by Fang Yuan last time. However, compared to 10 years ago, Jani now appeared much more matured, there was also an indescribable quality that could be sensed from his body.

"Hey! Tempest Jani... you will be no match for him!"

Lorita pouted her mouth and reminded Jani snappily.

"Of course, I know the Archbishop's strength, but what if it's like this..."

Jani clapped his hands. Behind him, numerous mercenaries took out their instruments and aimed them at Ingres.

"God's energy, the power of faith, actually still requires spiritual droplets as a medium to propagate through electromagnetic waves... these jammers are the federation's latest technologies."

"Toot! Toot!"

Indeed, under the blinding red lights, Ingres' expression changed at once. The angel behind him become much more illusory.

"Tempest!"

Seeing such, Jani raised two fingers and snapped them slightly.

"Hruuu! Hruuuuu!"

Strong winds raged and they were as sharp as a blade. The illusory angel was swept into it at once.

"Hehe... little brother Jani, can't believe you have such surprises after not seeing you for a few years..."

Lorita's expression did not relax much at all. After all, Jani was from the government of the federation. She did not have much ties with him and she even fiercely fought with him a few times before.

"After gathering all the prominent scientists in the federation, ten years was like a day, there were bound to be results and rewards!"

Jani shrugged his shoulders and added, "Miss Lorita, it has been a really long time since I saw you I wonder how Mister Lei is feeling lately?"

"That pervert hasn't died yet, that's it!"

Lorita rolled her eyes and continued, "You saved me because of him, right?"

"Of course, I must show some respect to the number one mutant in the world," Jani replied in a justified tone.

Leader Cai and Wang Xin who were beside were stupefied after listening to them.

"The world's number one mutant?"

"Even the federation has to be respectful?"

As Wang Xin mumbled, she glanced at Lorita with disbelief, "Her adoptive father is such a big deal?"

"Even the federation's secret agent has to respect him, looks like it's true..."

Leader Cai's eyes lit up and then turned dark, "Unfortunately... I missed the best opportunity."

"Rumble!"

Suddenly, the situation changed again.

Under the loud noise, the angel managed to escape. Ingres walked forward with a solemn expression on his face, "You all from the Golden Eagle Federation, what is your purpose of coming here?"

"You are able to forcefully break free from my tornado?"

Jani laid his eyes on the pendant hanging on the archbishop's chest.

"You have stored some holy energy from faith in your holy equipment in advance? The Curia is really giving their all this time around."

Faith was gathered from the beliefs of many and accumulated on the God. God then gifted the energies to the servants under him.

Even though it was a religion, they were just especially loved by their God in this area. Thus, their real strengths were actually not from their own bodies.

The federation's instruments obviously had the use of blocking such a channel.

However, red-robed archbishop Ingres was different.

The holy equipment on his chest had already stored insurmountable amounts of energies from faith. Currently, it could surge out directly and he was now enveloped by a layer of pure and holy light. The angel above his head was materialised even more and emanated a grand and solemn might.

"Miss Lorita, let's join hands!"

Jani assessed the situation and immediately made such a decision.

"No need..."

Lorita looked at the skies and suddenly grinned ear to ear.

"Eh?"

Jani raised his head and saw two black spots reaching above his head in an instant. They turned into the silhouettes of two persons and slowly landed from the skies.

"Crackle!"

Immediately, all the mutant's expression changed for the worse.

They felt the special abilities in their bodies disappear and they panickedly discovered they had totally become a normal person.

Furthermore, even the angel in mid-air let out a shriek and exploded at once, turning into specks of light.

"Impossible!"

Ingres' expression changed drastically.

If Jani's actions just now were just blocking the channel of faith, now, all the holy energy in Ingres' body were being dissipated. It was extremely overbearing and forceful!

"That special ability... is that from Angel?" Jani thought.

Jani looked at Fang Yuan and the teenage girl descending from the sky. Accompanied with a smile on his face, he welcomed, "So it's Mister Lei and Miss Angel! I represent the federation and send my regards."

"Golden Eagle Federation's secret agent?"

Fang Yuan looked at Jani with an odd look on his face.

Jani appeared really respectful and did not have any tinge of awkwardness in his expressions.

Fang Yuan could not believe Jani was not suspecting his identity.

At the battle in Mountain Ocean City's willow tree previously, these secret agents were badly defeated and even lost one of their men. But now, Jani seemed to have forgotten about all these past



events.

Whether Jani really did not realise Fang Yuan's real identity or was acting like he did not know him, Fang Yuan felt Jani's character was not bad and he might be better than Lorita in the future.

"People from Golden Eagle Federation and Blue Star Alliance..."

Fang Yuan had his arms behind his back, surveyed the entire surroundings and thought, "They arrived so quickly! Did they rush over with jet planes immediately after receiving the news yesterday night?"

Even Chinese Country was inferior in having such an ability to travel through continents so quickly.

"Ingres, can you tell me what exactly is your Church after?"

Fang Yuan looked at the archbishop with a hint of expectation in his eyes.

"This question... shall be answered by me!"

Suddenly, red-robed archbishop Ingres' eyes lost his gaze at once. A golden light was emitted from his eyes instead.

"Rumble!"

Holy light descended again. That dense and holy energy was even more intense than just now.

Angel's face turned ashen at once and she felt her spell-restricting field was broken. A powerful will had descended directly on Ingres' body.

"You are the Church's God? Or should I say... the Seraph of Light awakened from the Heaven yesterday?"

Fang Yuan looked at Ingres and instead saw an angel with three pairs of wings.

"It's me!"

The seraph nodded his head slightly, "You can call me... Farquhar!"

Angel's special ability was to restrict spell and expulse all spiritual droplets. Even cultivators from the Middle Continent that had techniques that were subpar would become a totally useless person in front of her.

However, this Farquhar was evidently different.

He had the same power of the arena of a 4th Tier mutant and he forcefully broke free from the spell restrictions.

With such capabilities, he would be a legitimate deity in the ancient times!

"Farquhar! My name is Lei!"

Fang Yuan blinked and continued, "I'm not sure why you, who have just awakened, would rush here so quickly!"

"In order to inherit the inheritance of other deities!"

Farquhar was very cautious facing a powerful person at the same tier, "The return of the Spiritual King Comet also has its cycle. Why would I want to lose all my powers and become a mere mortal? Why would I seal myself and wait for the next 1,000 years to arrive?"

"Oh? What you mean is?"

Fang Yuan blinked his eyes and was interested.

"I found it..."

Farquhar scanned the people around him in the surroundings. Immediately, all the mutants below the Calamity Grade lost the gaze in their eyes and could no longer hear anything.

"I found the way to maintain the peak amount of spiritual energy forever! Not only me, the other deities in Middle Continent and West Continent had also researched about it. I have awakened in order to gather the power of everyone to complete all these and

make the entire world belong to us forever!"

Seraph Farquhar spoke in a calm manner, revealing a shocking secret.

# Chapter 439: White Jade Capital

---

Thousands of years ago in Planet Earth, spiritual energy already ebbed and flowed.

From this cycle, supernormal beings were born, and they managed to study their origins in great detail, including the existence of the Spiritual King Comet.

"It belongs to us?"

Fang Yuan smiled playfully.

"Who exactly does "us" refer to?"

"The deities of each region, of course!"

Farquhar answered without hesitation.

"More than a thousand years ago, the deities of the world foresaw calamity and decided to seal themselves. Now that I'm awake, I expect them to gradually revive themselves too."

Fang Yuan could only think about the half plane of merpeople.

Although the merpeople had failed as a race, the world was huge, and there might be remnants.

'A pity...regardless of how much is Devoured, no breakthrough can be achieved...even with the help of the 3rd occurrence...'

Fang Yuan sighed quietly and looked towards Farquhar.

"So what you mean is that in this half plane, there are elders from the Middle Continent?"

"Half plane? This is a nice term. We usually call it 'Heaven'. Staying here will greatly reduce the outflow of life energy...you Immortal Cultivators from the Middle Continent like to call it the 'Hollow and Prosperous Land'. A few might actually awaken, but definitely not here!"

Farquhar was confident.

"This line of cultivators have already made another choice, and have collectively risen to a higher realm."

'Ah, so it's a person who can't wait to lay his hands on the inheritance.'

Fang Yuan was disdainful.

'A bunch of trash. No wonder they are deities of the Curia...'

"Mister Lei. The inheritance in here is extremely important to us. What do you think of our suggestion?"

Farquhar looked at Fang Yuan, his expression unchanging.

"How do you people intend to preserve the world's spiritual energy?"

Fang Yuan asked after a period of silence.

"Simple. Since our spiritual energy come from the Spiritual King Comet, we just have to bring it to Planet Earth and keep it here forever. I call it 'Operation Grabstar', and the crux of the plan involves seizing the comet and making it our second moon. Or we could bring it down to the ground."

Farquhar made it sound like a walk in the park.

"Bring it to the ground? You intend to destroy half of the civilisation?"

Fang Yuan shook his head.

"Even if it becomes a satellite, there would be severe repercussions. Millions of lives would be lost."

"For the sake of a glorious future, we must suffer temporary loss. When the devotees do die, I will fulfill my promise and send their souls to Heaven."

Farquhar said it all with a straight face.

"So...there is something you need in the Hollow and Prosperous Land?"

"Yes, that bloodline specialises in the array techniques of the Middle Continent, and would greatly complement Operation Grabstar...tell me your answer right now."

The seraph looked into Fang Yuan's eyes.

"The true way cannot be taught!"

Fang Yuan's lips curled up slightly at the corners.

It was Farquhar's turn to be surprised.

"What does that mean?"

"I neither support it nor object to it..."

Fang Yuan continued to smile.

"I won't help you all, but I won't ruin your plans either. I do want to witness the fourth occurrence. I want to see for myself what will happen to Planet Earth after Operation Grabstar."

"Many thanks!"

Farquhar was silent for a minute. For a being of his level, he spoke from his heart and had no need to lie.

"But...the Hollow and Prosperous Land is mine!"

Having said that, Fang Yuan twirled the jade key about his hand.

"I see...the key was always in your hands!"

Farquhar nodded.

"Since you've agreed to not interfere with my plans, I can compromise..."

After all, this belonged to the Middle Continent. Farquhar had rushed over here in the hope of lucking out while the other beings were still asleep and sealed up.

But now that he had met Fang Yuan, a cultivator of the Magic-splitting stage, he decided to give in.

It was not worth it to go against a being of the same level for a

slight chance of inheriting an array technique.

"Also, after everything is in order, I would like you to come to visit the Holy Mountain...my plan will benefit all supernatural beings."

Farquhar was self-assured.

After he had said his piece, Farquhar disappeared with a burst of golden light.

"This..."

The crowd began to regain their senses. They looked around disorientedly.

"Your holiness!?"

The members of the Church were terrified and they tried to help the fallen archbishop to his feet.

"Sir...I'll take my leave!"

The archbishop stood up laboriously and bowed to Fang Yuan before walking away purposefully. He seemed to have received an order from Farquhar.

"What? You people from the Golden Eagle Federation are also interested in the treasures of the Middle Continent?"

When the Church members had all left, Fang Yuan glanced at Jani with a raised eyebrow.

"Of course...not!"

Jani laughed awkwardly and took a few steps back.

With Angel present, he was no stronger than a normal person. He would most certainly be killed if he said anything wrong.

"If that's the case, get lost!"

Fang Yuan's expression was ice cold.

"You..."

Behind Jani, several indignant mutants raised their firearms. However, before they could do anything else, their heads exploded into clouds of red.

"I don't want to repeat myself."

Fang Yuan enunciated his words slowly and chillingly.

"Alright, we'll leave now!"

Jani was sweating profusely and gritted his teeth. He gave the order to retreat.

"At his word, the Church and Federation retreated..."

Leader Cai swallowed. Upon noticing that Fang Yuan had looked over, he began to stutter.

"This...great...great sir, we shall leave immediately!"

"How can other countries covet the prized treasures of the Chinese country?"

Fang Yuan grinned.

"If you people have nothing to do, guard the frontiers for me. Rewards will be given according!"

"We will do our best for you, Sir!"

Leader Cai responded promptly.

"Excellent!"

Fang Yuan beckoned to the white tiger, and it went over to him obediently. It had become a tame cat.

"Both of you sisters, stay outside!"

He came to the mouth of the cave and commanded the white tiger to lead the way. Then he strode in.

The passage was a short one and before long, they had come to the other end of the cave. A patch of dried grass lay on the floor, with the imprint of a pot's bottom on it. Lying around were scraps



of half-eaten food.

"Open!"

Fang Yuan could not be bothered with these minor details and after casting another sweeping gaze, he took out the jade key.

"Kaboom!"

The surrounding walls began to shake and a small depression appeared in the stone. When Fang Yuan pressed the jade key into the hollow, it fused into the stone and radiated purple light that swam all over the walls.

Layers of stone fell off from the walls to reveal a glittering amethyst surface.

"Another half plane!"

Fang Yuan nodded and used his spiritual will to check for danger before stepping forward.

"Buzz!"

Heaven and earth collided and space-time was warped.

When he scanned his surroundings once more, everything around him had changed.

A palace of gold and jade stood before him. Surrounding it was a mist that seeped into the vast grounds and turned it all into spiritual fields. Everything came together to create the basic structure of a Hollow and Prosperous Land.

On the palace walls of white jade, Fang Yuan could see the name of this place.

"White Jade Capital?"

In this world, there were myths and legends of the White Jade Capital too. It was similar to talks of Heaven in the Western world. These were places where supernormal beings inhabited.

Except that this great building and the vast fields did not seem to

have any signs of life.

"Just as I thought...no one here at all, not even the remains..."

Fang Yuan explored several of the meditation rooms and alchemical chambers. He found that the equipment was arranged nicely and there were no hints of unrest. He began to understand.

"They've all broken into the void and left?"

To answer his questions, he headed straight to the main palace. He broke through the 36 restrictions guarding the place and found the heart of the structure.

"It should be here..."

Even after thousands of years, the restrictions could still repair themselves and Fang Yuan had to continue to keep an eye on them. He was sure that this Sect had managed to produce cultivators of the 4th tier and above.

When he had destroyed the last piece of restriction, he walked into the great hall.

99 dragon carvings curled around the shimmering purple gold pillars and illuminated the hall. Still, there was no one.

A lone white scroll levitated silently in midair.

Fang Yuan muttered some words under his breath and a string of his mind power made its way up to the scroll.

"We, the Jade Palace Faction..."

In the next moment, a large amount of mental information assailed his consciousness.

A normal person would have suffered a terrible headache from such a huge input, but Fang Yuan was experienced and immediately began to sort out and categorise the information. A message caught his eye.

"The person who is leaving this message behind is the Son of the

Jade Palace, the leader of the Jade Palace Faction. In one of the reincarnations of the past thousand years, their elders awoke from their sealed state and opened up the sect to the world. The Jade Palace Faction soon became immensely influential and produced countless legendary pugilists. However, following the fading of spiritual energy, several of the elders were unwilling to seal themselves up again and were greatly weakened as a result. Thus, the entire organisation voted to break into the void and leave this world..."

Fang Yuan did not know what to feel.

This sort of departure involved physical teleportation. They had no fixed destination and could only drift about in the void. This was an extreme form of exile and there was but a small chance of making it out alive.

"Also...it seems like the Jade Palace Faction had already investigated the fading of spiritual energy and were unwilling to support Operation Grabstar. They decided to leave instead, but why?"

Although the scroll left behind many detailed legacies, Fang Yuan was still intrigued by this fundamental question.

At his level of power, formulae were of no interest to him. Only the ideas of physical teleportation and breaking into the void were worthy of his consideration.

# Chapter 440: Eschaton

---

How did spiritual energy come about?

Originally, Fang Yuan attributed it to the Spiritual King Comet.

However, after Fang Yuan received the array inheritance from Jade Palace Faction and saw the path they chose, he wavered.

"Who knows, maybe the Spiritual King Comet is just a harbinger or an omen... I'm afraid the truth behinds the scene might be beyond my imagination..."

Fang Yuan mumbled to himself and unknowingly tightened his grip on the silk book.

Actually, the array Jade Palace Faction developed to target the Spiritual King Comet felt familiar to Fang Yuan.

And that peculiarity was shockingly from Sage Changli's 6 and 9 Array.

"The 6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array and 9 Heavenly Sky Net Array were the fruits of Sage Changli's lifelong labour and he has never visited this realm before, I guess all roads lead to Rome?"

"Spiritual energy... realm, really interesting!"

Fang Yuan sat on the seat of the head of the Jade Palace Faction. After ruminating for a long time, a smile finally appeared on his face.

Outside the secret cave, Bull's Head Mountain.

"Adoptive father?!"

Light shined and Fang Yuan appeared. Lorita and Angel immediately went beside him and hugged his arms.

"Eh, this hollow is the White Jade Capital in the skies, where the Jade Palace Faction based themselves in last time..."

Fang Yuan waved his hand and a door of light appeared.

"You all can go in and look for your own opportunities!"

At such a level of cultivation, Fang Yuan did not have many desires. Even the source of spiritual energy inside the hollow was dispensable to him.

If Fang Yuan did not break through to the 5th Grade of his Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell, form his area and then devour more spiritual energy, the ultimate outcome of his body would be that it would explode and die.

"What?"

Leader Cai and Wang Xin were delighted after hearing such, "We are included too?"

"Of course, after all, this cave was left behind by the ancestors of our Chinese Country for us descendants..."

Fang Yuan smiled and answered them, he felt as though he had awakened his talent of being a wealth granting child.

In actual fact, not only did he not take any of the treasures inside the cave, he even left behind many things. The things he left behind were all the wild thoughts about spiritual energy techniques he silently came up with these few years.

If any fated person were to pick it up, the outcome would be... Hehe...

"Also, regarding the mutation of the spiritual beasts here, they are most probably due to the vapourisation of spiritual energy from inside this cave. It would be no problem after I seal it again..."

Fang Yuan continued, "Although I cannot resolve the danger of beasts injuring people, your mission is completed."

"Thank you very much, Sir!"

Leader Cai thanked profusely and was slightly puzzled, "Why can't the dangers be completely removed even after removing its source?"

"This is naturally due to the spread of the original influence..."

Fang Yuan gave a cold laughter, "Previously, the increase of ferocious beasts in this area was due to the spiritual energy vapourising from the cave. But from this year onwards, the concentration of spiritual energy on our planet, on land, in the skies and around us has spiked. Thus, more and more beasts would appear and that small village at the foot of the mountain would be gone sooner or later..."

In actual fact, the situation was worse than that.

Concentrated amounts of spiritual droplets could even interfere with firearms. More seriously, it could even influence nuclear reactions.

If the powers of technology continued to decline, supernormal beings would rise above and gain the powers to crush everything.

Fang Yuan's gaze deepened as he thought of what Farquhar said.

Such a realm where spiritual energy was resurging was like a feast to them. But to the normal people or even normal organisation forces, it was truly like a calamity.

.....

Golden Eagle Federation, West Continent.

On the blue seas, a naval fleet was cutting across the waves in high-spirits like a sharp sword.

Even though the federation was met with a rare massive flood that flooded over half the country, the people of the federation who were at the peak of civilisation still rebuilt their country in ten years with their strong, pioneering and relentless spirits. Now, the Golden Eagle Federation was prospering. Not only did they fully recovered from the disaster, they were now making use of the third occurrence and the changes in spiritual energy to increase their influence and powers by forcefully deploying troops to aid smaller countries.

On the deck of a battleship, the navy Commanding Officer's chest was emblazoned with shiny insignias. He was holding a telescope and looking at the calm seas.

"Commanding Officer!"

Suddenly, an orderly soldier went forward and saluted him, "From the latest news, Westpost Country has already agreed to accept all of our federation's conditions. From today onwards, they will hand over Panda Harbour for our navy to set up our forward operating base. They will also bear all our military fees and their only request would be to assist them in annihilating the wild beasts on their soils! Currently, the president's orders have already been passed down."

"No problem!"

The white-haired Commanding Officer's face was red with glee, "Immediately send down my command, our entire fleet will rush over to Panda Harbour at full speed... those mixed-blood mutts can't even keep their own countries' soil and it's good that they handed them to our Golden Eagle Federation, haha..."

At this moment, he even sincerely thanked God for allowing the spiritual energy calamity to continue. He was even hoping for the day when other middle-tiered countries in West Continent could not withstand it anymore too. They would have to resort to begging the Golden Eagle Federation for aid and thus, they would willingly sign unfair contracts that ceded their land to the federation.

"With the current situation continuing, only three years is needed... No, in two years, Golden Eagle Federation would be able to unite the powers of the entire West Continent and become the sole overlord of the entire world?"

The Commanding Officer was very pleased and was thinking if he should host a banquet that night to celebrate with some champagne and steak.

"Warning!"

Suddenly, a piercing alarm rang, "Our radar has picked up a giant lifeform ahead!"

"A whale? Just chase it away or give it two charges of the naval mine..."

The Commanding Officer instructed as per usual. However, he suddenly realised, "Wait... if it is a normal whale, why is there a warning?"

"Rumble!"

Suddenly, a loud noise suddenly erupted from a cruiser near the outer edge of the fleet. It then exploded while sparks and flames flew.

"What happened to White Pigeon Cruiser?"

"We were attacked by an unknown force!"

"Was it a marine beast?"

The Commanding Officer grabbed onto a pole tightly and muttered.

Although mutants with special abilities had already appeared for more than ten years, the biggest trouble this invincible naval fleet had ever met on the seas was merely an enormous whale that was over 300 feet long. In the end, the whale was still blasted by a cannon.

"D\*mned marine creature! Use the water mine and kill it!"

The Commanding Officer ordered angrily. Immediately, an intense tremor suddenly spread from the deck and almost caused him to fall.

"Putt! Putt!"

Two black coloured octopuses with tentacles 300 feet long emerged from the seas. The tentacles were humongous and they



were like the palms of the God of Sea.

"Rumble!"

Their tentacles were full of suction cups and they grabbed onto a battleship and began to shake it violently.

As the tall waves crashed, a gigantic black shadow could be vaguely be seen hidden in the sea. It was as though their numerous tentacles were demons that came from hell as they continuously caused death.

"A giant octopus that is over hundreds of yards long... Oh Lord..."

The Commanding Officer shouted in shock as he felt as though the entire ocean had changed and he no longer recognised it.

"Hiss hiss..."

However, things beyond his imagination had only just started.

Accompanied by a hissing sound, a 300-yard long giant sea snake sprang out from the waters and immediately coiled tightly around one of the battleships. Large amounts of gas vapourised from its scales and in a few seconds, everyone on the ship had lost their fighting strength.

"Bang!"

There was yet another banging noise. Another destroyer was surrounded and attacked by a group of tiger sharks. The tiger sharks were over 30 feet long. Moments later, the entire ship was torn into shreds and blood dyed the ocean surface red.

"What exactly is happening? Why did the seas become so dangerous all of a sudden?"

The Commanding Officer rolled his eyes, "No... These are not beasts, they have intelligence! They were hiding deep inside the ocean for over ten years and only reappeared now!"

To humans, this was an unfortunate news.

As for the Commanding Officer of the ace battleship, he had the luck to withstand to the last moments of the fleet to witness the appearance of a sea dragon from deep within the ocean!

"Roar! Roar!"

This was a monster that was similar to the dragon from Middle Continent's mythology. It was about 300 feet long and the scales on its body were like blue gemstones that shined brightly. It had huge claws on its body and a single horn on its forehead.

The ferocious and evil marine beasts immediately gave way to the dragon after it appeared as a sign of submission.

It straightened its body and its anthropomorphic dragon eyes flashed with a hint of disdain. It opened its dragon mouth and spat out a beam of blue coloured light.

"Kaboom!"

No matter how sturdy the deck was, under the beam of light, the deck exploded and drove the entire battleship to desolation.

"The king of marine beasts? It is accumulating its strength, is it preparing to attack land? Haha... how ironic..."

The Commanding Officer laughed crazily, "I have never lost to a human in a naval war, but now, I'm dying to a monster instead..."

Under the immense sparks and flames, the entire battleship was obliterated and the Commanding Officer's body disappeared.

"Roar!"

As the giant blue sea dragon watched, he let out a satisfied roar. Other giant marine beasts also immediately followed it towards a harbour at Golden Eagle Federation.

Behind them, there were countless marine beasts with bloodthirsty looks in their eyes...

...

Blue Star Alliance.

"Due to the insurrection of marine beasts, all ocean routes are stopped?"

On top of Holy Mountain, the Pope looked at the intelligence on his hands and remained silent.

"Reports of beast attacks keep popping up everywhere. There are even cities that have lost contact?"

"Raphael!"

A holy light descended and turned into a seraph.

"Lord!"

The Pope immediately kneeled down and saluted.

"The counterattack of nature has already begun... let our believers stay far away from the forests and seas. Stock up on food and let them prepare to tide through this worldly calamity. This is a test given by God, only those who are the most staunch and resolute can go to Heaven..."

"Understood, my Lord!"

Farquhar words were holy prophecies. The Pope stood up with a solemn expression. "Everybody... send down Lord's decree to the pastors and believers!"

As the Pope watched the bishops leave respectfully, his face appeared calm. However, he secretly sighed inside his heart.

God's words made him feel a tinge of uneasiness.

To humans, such a crisis was almost doomsday.

# Chapter 441: Relocation

---

"Something's wrong!"

Leader Cai and his team had also discovered something was amiss after happily returning from Bull's Head Mountain.

"Woong! Woong!"

"Woong! Woong!"

Noises of wings fluttering rapidly could be heard from the small town in front. Large amounts of black dots gathered and they looked like dark clouds.

Faint screams were also heard from the town, it was evident that the town had already become a living hell.

"Moo! Moo!"

Suddenly, a building collapsed and a gigantic cow charged out of the house.

Originally, the cow's body was rather normal. However, after it roared angrily, its body enlarged greatly. Even its hide became much thicker and there was a layer of sparkling substance on it. Evidently, its special ability was awakened.

In spite of that, part of the "dark clouds" in the skies still flew towards the cow and landed on its back.

The giant cow shrieked numerous times and lost its footing, falling to the ground. It then rapidly became emaciated and almost became a set of skeleton in a blink of the eye.

"Those are... mosquitoes?"

Lorita's face turned ghastly as she saw such a scene, "Those are mutated blood-sucking mosquitoes!"

"Can't believe nature has evolved so quickly in one night..."

Fang Yuan remembered that the last two occurrences caused

many normal animals to accumulate sufficient resources to undergo mutation. Thus, before the third occurrence, they were just one step away from mutating and this explained why ultimately, after last night, many demons appeared.

'It's already this bad on land... what about the deep oceans that even I feared?'

As Fang Yuan thought of such, he could not help but sigh.

Evidently, the third occurrence brought about the evolution of all living matters on Planet Earth. However, such a thing was not something to be happy about for humans.

"Woong! Woong!"

After that clump of dark clouds sucked dry the mutated cow, they saw Fang Yuan and his group. It was as though they discovered their new targets and immediately darted over.

Upon closer look, the group realised those mosquitoes were the size of a thumb. Some of them were even as large as a fist. Their bellies were full and swollen, akin to a blood-red crystal.

"Detestable!"

Leader Cai shouted in anger as he opened his palms and threw a huge fireball towards the dark clouds. The fireball exploded and amber flames raged, burning numerous mosquitoes into ashes.

"Woong! Woong!"

Even though Leader Cai had such a special ability, it did not do much against the humongous cloud of mosquitoes. The dark clouds above the town split as a whole clump of them swarmed over, enveloping the skies above the group of them and causing them to feel nervous and fearful.

"Quick! Let's go!"

A single mosquito could be killed with a slap by a normal person. However, such a large torrential swarm of mosquitoes even struck

fear in Lorita and she exclaimed, "Daddy! Save me!"

"You are acting, right?"

Fang Yuan rolled his eyes and reassured, "Don't be scared, just walk right through it!"

Fang Yuan opened up his Spiritual Arena. Any mosquitoes within 10,000 feet of it would fall to the ground immediately and die.

Not before long, a layer of carcass piled on the group. The thick and dense layer of black specks and blood mixed together was very nauseating.

"Woong! Woong!"

After the cloud of mosquitoes lost many of their fellow mosquitoes, the swarm of mosquitoes immediately retreated back to its main cloud of mosquitoes above the small town. They then moved towards to east slowly as they obviously did not want to suffer any more losses.

"Thank you very much, mister!"

Leader Cai immediately thanked Fang Yuan. He then wiped the cold sweat of his face, "This is the second time you have saved us..."

"Leader!"

Suddenly, Wang Xin tugged Leader Cai's sleeve. Her ashen face was looking towards where the cloud of mosquitoes was leaving to.

"That is... towards Banyan Tree City's downtown!"

"Oh no!"

Leader Cai bid farewell and immediately left urgently with his teammates.

They were rushing to relocate and protect their families. Although before they left, they still looked at Fang Yuan as though they wanted to say something to him. However, they did not say

anything in the end.

"Hmm, still rather smart of them!"

Fang Yuan raised his head slightly as he watched them.

"If they requested anything more from me, I would have broken their legs and left them here!"

"Daddy, you're so bad!"

Lorita's eyeballs turned and she then smiled sweetly, "This mosquito swarm isn't moving that fast, with their speed, they still can reach in time to relocate their families!"

"Yea, it's time for us to return too!"

Fang Yuan snapped his fingers and the three of them lifted off the ground and rushed to the skies with astonishing speed at once. They then flew towards Banyan Tree City.

"Hmm..... looks like Zhao Daniu isn't dumb, he has already begun to prepare to fight back and relocate..."

As they flew over the city's downtown, they could see a long line of traffic slowly leaving Banyan Tree City. Furthermore, at the side closer to the blood-sucking mosquitoes, there were soldiers and artilleries stationed there, ready to shoot down the mosquitoes.

"Eh?"

At the courtyard house they stayed at, there was a person there that made Angel exclaim.

"Lin Ming?"

Angel slowly descended from the skies and looked at the high school student that had red eyes.

"It's me..."

Lin Ming's mouth was agape like a toad, "I... I saw the emergency warning and came over to tell you all to relocate quickly... Also, I finally completed the 9th Stance... You are a mutant?"

When he saw the mysterious shop owner and her two daughters descend from the skies, Lin Ming had already guessed his identity. At the same time, he felt a tinge of anguish in his heart.

If a person completed the 9th Stance, it meant that he was rather talented and could possibly awaken his own special ability or cultivate Daoist spells. However, it would still not be comparable to a mutant that had already awakened.

"Thank you, Ming! Do you have anything else? Your parents must be worried?" Angel smiled and replied.

"Also... my parents found a contact! We can follow behind the army and evacuate together... But looks like you all would not need it!"

Lin Ming scratched his head and awkwardly muttered a few sentences. Then, an expensive car arrived and began honking irritably.

"Sigh... sister-in-law, Little Ming really doesn't understand the urgency of the situation. If he still doesn't want to leave now, is he staying to become a dried up corpse? I received news that the first swarm of blood-sucking mosquitoes is reaching the downtown in two hours!"

A man that seemed like an official and who was fat as a pig with a big belly came out from the car. The moment he saw Angel, his eyes lit up and he said, "You must be Miss Angel? If you don't want to die, hurry up and evacuate this place, don't delay everyone's time."

"Uncle, they are..."

Lin Ming's face was anxious as he watched his uncle.

Lin Ming had already seen and realised this family was a group of powerful mutants, but his uncle did not know that!

Although his uncle was very haughty as he had connections to the government, he was nothing compared to the mutants.



Nevertheless, he did not want his own family to suffer.

"I don't care who they are! It's almost doomsday, there's no time to protect our international friends?"

The obese uncle smiled and his eyes glistened. It was evident that he was not a stupid person.

"Miss Angel is a smart lady, she would naturally know how to make the right choice. Although my Lin Family is nothing much in Banyan Tree City, we are still the relatives of some soldiers..."

"Sorry, mister!"

Angel grinned and continued, "I don't really understand what you mean..."

"You..."

Unspoken rules were called unspoken rules as they were not meant to be said out loud.

The fatty's face flashed with a hint of anger as he saw how this Caucasian lady was so impudent. However, he then felt rather uncertain and uneasy.

Although communications between countries had already broken off, how the future would be like was still hard to tell. Thus, the uncle did not want to accidentally offend someone he did not know well.

"Toot! Toot!"

At this moment, a whole row of ten over military trucks stopped outside. Zhao Daniu and Ye Yingzi stepped out from the truck and walked towards the courtyard house.

"Eh? They are... Chief Zhao? And Colonel Commandant Ye?"

The fatty's eyes lit up at once and immediately went forward to suck up to them, "I am Little Niu, we met before once at Purple God Hotel..."

Although the fatty uncle had some connections, the two of them were the real bosses of Banyan Tree City that held great authority. Especially faced with such a situation, they were even more crucial and held greater powers.

"You are Lin Niu?"

Zhao Daniu scratched his head and finally remembered his name.

"Eh... why are you here?"

"Oh, this nephew of mine and Miss Angel are classmates, we wanted to bring her and her family along to evacuate..."

Lin Niu was rather shocked and taken aback. More importantly, he was secretly relieved that he did not fall out with them just now.

He never imagined how well connected Angel's family was. If he really fell out with them just now, the outcome would not be something he would ever want to see. With such a thought, he almost began to drip beads of cold sweat.

"Mister Lei does not need anyone to protect him, you can retreat immediately!"

Zhao Daniu went forward to the door as though he was a door guard and held Lorita's suitcase. He then placed the suitcase in the back of the truck and said, "Mister, please!"

"Oh, just nice, I have something to ask you all!"

Fang Yuan nodded and followed Zhao Daniu and Ye Yingzi into the truck. The motorcade then horned as they began their journey.

Afterwards, Lin Niu could finally wipe off the cold sweat on his face. He stared at Lin Ming seriously, "You... I couldn't even tell! Tell me truthfully, what is your relationship with this family?"

"I..."

Lin Ming had a conflicted expression, "I don't know too. This boss is the shop owner of the wood carving shop I frequently

visit... Why did he suddenly become the VIP of the authorities?"

Lin Ming touched the carving inside his school bag and appeared low-spirited.

As Angel had such a background, the possibility of him successfully courting her was probably close to zero?

"So it's like that....."

Lin Niu smacked Lin Ming's shoulder so hard that he almost staggered as he said, "Don't worry and just chase after her boldly! I will support you!"

Lin Niu was very clear that this world was really descending into chaos.

In such a chaotic time, only military power and special abilities were the true powers!

Whether if they wanted to settle down or progress rapidly, such a foundation was needed. The appearance of Fang Yuan and his family made Lin Niu saw a glimmer of hope!

"My brother and sister-in-law... this is related to our life and death! You have to think carefully!"

Lin Niu looked at the middle-aged couple and solemnly advised.

"Rest assured, brother! We know!"

The couple agreed and completely disregarded their rule of not allowing romantic relationships at such a young age.

# Chapter 442: Xing Hezi

---

"Tell me... what exactly happened?"

The long row of cars drove steadily on the road. Even though they were military vehicles, there were still soldiers ahead clearing the way for them as they blazed through at breakneck speed.

Fang Yuan laid on the seat and closed his eyes, appearing relaxed.

"Just last night, there was a surge in the number of wild beasts in the entire country... It was as though the many demonic beasts and spiritual beasts had received a mysterious guidance to attack the big cities and villages at the same time... Even though we were prepared, we still suffered many casualties and after an emergency meeting, we have decided on Plan B."

Ye Yingzi had a serious look on her face with a slight hint of panic and her eyes were teary. "That is to give up all other cities and villages in the country and transfer the people to the 72 biggest cities so as to minimise any more losses!"

Such a large-scale retreat would result in too many sacrifices and troubles. Furthermore, the stress of overpopulating the existing cities due to the lack of security and resources could cause more problems.

Of course, before all these, the fact that half the population of the country could survive such an attack was already a blessing.

"It's doomsday..."

Fang Yuan opened his eyes and sighed.

"The Banyan Tree City isn't one of the big cities. We are therefore relocating to the nearest big city 279 kilometres from here, Huiming City!"

Zhao Daniu started to speak as well. "According to the evacuation plan, the priority is given to... the military personnel, researchers,

highly-skilled workers, and students. We will leave a platoon of soldiers to form a defence outside the city so as to delay some time for us to evacuate everybody."

Regardless, the plan would surely not be smooth-sailing and there would surely be problems arising.

Fang Yuan remained silent for a moment before inquiring further. "How about overseas? Are there any news from overseas?"

Zhao Daniu exchanged glances with Ye Yingzi before answering in unison. "Yes!"

They opened a safe and adeptly typed in the password. With that, rows of information appeared on the screen:

"The Pacific Fleet of the Golden Eagle Federation was attacked by a sea dragon and were all capsized. The marine beasts had infiltrated the port and caused thousands of deaths..."

"In the Blue Star Alliance, there was a widespread disaster and countless corpses were revive into zombies. These zombies then attacked humans and started to spread a plague! Suspected to be related to the awakening of a fabled being from the Dark Ages."

"As for other smaller countries, many of them had already lost contact with the international community. Sea lines of communication have been disrupted and even aeroplanes were attacked by flying beasts. Every country is fighting a war of itself... These are the information that we can gather while our communication services are still up."

Ye Yingzi explained before laying out a few pictures.

"The widespread disaster in Blue Star Alliance?"

Fang Yuan rubbed his chin. "Farquhar will resolve that. Looking at the Golden Eagle Federation, it seems like they have plagued with troubles... the Sea Dragon King?"

Examining the pictures, Fang Yuan could see a particular sea

dragon attacking a port.

Its body was about 100 metres long and its scales shimmered a brilliant blue. The single horn on its head and the sharp talons on its body all struck fear in others.

"According to the report, this sea dragon had displayed abilities to gather power among the marine beasts. It is suspected to have a high IQ and had once controlled a storm, wiping out an armed battalion of soldiers from the federation... According to Professor Fang's grading system, we should classify it as a Calamity Grade mutated beast!"

Ye Yingzi spoke in a strict tone.

"Oh? The Golden Eagle Federation is still surviving and even have the ability to use its nuclear weapons?"

Fang Yuan asked with curiosity.

"It's not that... After unleashing havoc on seven other ports, the sea dragon was being put to a stop by the Mutant Bureau of the federation. They have used this weapon!"

Zhao Daniu took out another photograph.

Although this photograph was blurred, a vague silhouette of an angel with white and black wings could be deciphered as it faced the sea dragon.

"It's her..."

Fang Yuan smiled. "It seems that as the Golden Eagle Federation was filled with chaos, they have finally discovered a weakness of her. Could they have used the chance to keep her under control?"

If the real Elder Extreme Darkness had returned to the realm, she would be able to wreak havoc with her powers.

However, the Demon Weapon was only a newborn young girl and was still rather immature. Therefore, she could still be dealt with.

However, with the looks of it, the Golden Eagle Federation had

barely kept it under control and used it in the final battle against the sea dragon.

It was unknown as to how much the Demon Weapon had grown since the past few years and the third occurrence.

"In conclusion, this is no longer a country's problem, but the doomsday of the world..."

Ye Yingzi concluded with a final sentence. "The doomsday of humans! We need to stand together to prevent our extinction! At this point, we should put down all our differences and work together. What do you think, Mister Lei?"

Her sharp eyes glared towards Fang Yuan and her intentions were simple.

At this stage, the country was already in dire straits. To have any hope of survival, they would surely be willing to work with a person who had once betrayed his own country. Furthermore, Fang Yuan had only gone missing and could not be considered betraying his country.

She could not make such a decision herself, and not even Xi Menjian could instruct her. This had to be the intention of the higher-ups of the country.

"I am full of admiration for Professor Fang Yuan..."

Fang Yuan smiled. "I believe that at such a crucial point in time, all humans need to work together to face the disaster! Who knows, Professor Fang Yuan might just appear anytime!"

"That's great!"

Zhao Daniu held Ye Yingzi's hands tightly and brimmed with tears of joy.

"F\*ck..."

Witnessing this scene, Fang Yuan rolled his eyes. "When did the two of them... finally get along with each other? They must be

being rewarded for being close to me!'

In reality, even before this exchange, Fang Yuan had already planned for the return of 'Professor Fang'.

In the White Jade Capital, although Fang Yuan had learned the essence of arrays from the Jade Palace Faction, most of the arrays would require the efforts of many people and resources so as to be cast across the entire Chinese Country.

If he wanted to try out the 6 and 9 arrays of Sage Changli, he would have to spread the extent of the array to cover an entire world.

Therefore, it was still rather advantageous to make use of the influence of the country to carry on with his preparations.

...

Huiming City.

This was a big city of Chinese Country. Since ten years ago when Fang Yuan had proposed the theory of the four occurrences, the entire manufacturing industry of the country started to accelerate and professionals started to chart out the way ahead to be prepared for the future. The arrival of such a doomsday had led to certain changes in the industry.

The roads were widened and buildings were expanded in size. Many huge warehouses were built in locations that were geographically easy to defend and hard to invade. Furthermore, defences were being upgraded and essentially, the entire city had undergone a transformation, becoming a huge Doomsday Base.

On the arrival of the third occurrence, Chinese Country had increased the number of soldiers in this city and they had successfully defended a few waves of attacks from wild beasts. From then on, the city had the mission to start accepting refugees from other cities and villages.

If one were to observe from the sky, one would realise that



Huiming City resembled a big black hole, constantly taking in refugees and vehicles in all directions.

"There are wild flying beasts ahead, they are the mutated species of eagles!"

In the row of vehicles from Banyan Tree City, a horn started to blast. "Ready all defences, be alert against ambushes!"

In an instant, machine guns started to point towards the sky ahead. The survivors in the area, be in soldiers or civilians, had already trained themselves to be able to hide without a noise within the bunkers. All of them held on to their firearms tightly.

"Chirp! Chirp!"

After 10 minutes, a flock of black flying beasts flew across the sky, covering the ground.

They had already detected the group of vehicles ahead. However, they quickly left and everyone heaved a sigh of relief. It was unknown if they had left because of fear or the fact that they had sighted another target.

"They've finally left... let's move on!"

Zhao Daniu wiped the sweat from his forehead and commanded the vehicles.

"Looking at the direction in which they are flying towards, it seems that they have just escaped Huiming City..."

Ye Yingzi started to guess. "Furthermore, I have observed that some of them among the flock were injured. They must have lost their previous fight in the city and were therefore fearful of attacking large groups of humans."

"This seems to be the case!"

Fang Yuan altered his looks to his original look as he gazed towards the leaving flock of birds. His expression started to change.

From the mutated huge eagles, he did not detect wounds from bullets or cannons. Instead, he had detected traces of spiritual force.

"This feeling... could it be the power of the arena?"

In a single thought, his expression changed once more. "The spiritual energy is getting more and more concentrated. Are more and more beings gaining the power of the arena?"

This was not possible.

According to his predictions, the only possibility was that an old powerful being had just awakened.

How difficult would it be to breakthrough from the 3rd Tier to the 4th Tier? Lorita would be a prime example to illustrate the difficulty in doing so.

Fang Yuan guessed that if both society leaders of the Black Man Society and the White Pigeon Society were still alive, they would probably have a chance of achieving a breakthrough.

"Professor!"

Ye Yingzi placed her phone down. "We have established communications with Huiming City. They will send their people out to receive us!"

If they were normal refugees, it would already be lucky if the city would accept them.

However, this was a group of important people from Banyan Tree City. Coupled with the fact that Fang Yuan, who was such an important person, they had to give them special treatment.

"Is that so? I'm looking forward to it!"

Fang Yuan rubbed his ears.

After restoring his original looks, Lorita and Angel were stunned beyond words.

The most depressed would be Xi Menjian. He would surely give him a good scolding over the phone and capture him before transporting him back to the laboratory and keeping him there for life - if only he was just a mere Professor Fang Yuan.

However, his identity as the God of Thunder and the world's number one mutant was enough to strike fear in anybody.

"They're here!"

From the horizon, the silhouette of a city appeared and refugees and vehicles were flooding into the city. Fang Yuan gazed towards Huiming City.

From there, a silhouette of a human flew from the sky and after a chirp, it flew straight towards them.

"Who is Brother Fang Yuan?"

As the silhouette arrived above the vehicles, Fang Yuan could roughly make out an old Taoist holding a whisk. This Taoist seemed like a revered Taoist. "I am Taoist Xing Hezi!"

"I see, it's Brother Xing Hezi!"

Fang Yuan flew up as well and glanced down at the group of people observing them before smiling. "Let's look for a private place to talk, shall we?"

"That's great!"

This 4th Tier cultivator was obviously waiting for Fang Yuan in the city. As soon as he heard Fang Yuan's request, he immediately agreed to it.

# Chapter 443: Flying Star

---

From the air, it seemed like the whole Huiming City had become an army camp.

Most of the structures were lined up in rows. The layout of the buildings reminded one of collective dormitories. The living conditions were probably not the best.

But this organisation made the most sense, considering that there were millions gathered in the city.

The good thing was that the hierarchy remained intact.

Xing Hezi was a Calamity-grade cultivator of the 4th tier, and was also appointed as one of the national consultants. Thus, he was given a villa to stay in.

Outside, a small stream gurgled underneath a little bridge.

"Please take a seat!"

Xing Hezi showed Fang Yuan to a stone chair underneath a pine tree, and poured a cup of clear tea for him.

"My friend, would you care for some of the Cloudy Mountain Tea that I've brewed?"

"Many thanks!"

Fang Yuan picked up his patterned teacup and took a small sip. His eyes lit up instantly.

"Fragrant and refreshing. The aftertaste lingers and carries a sort of worldliness..."

"Worldliness...well said!"

Xiang Hezi stared at the pond, and suddenly laughed bitterly.

"A dream that lasts a thousand years. The next time I wake up, I will be the only person left in the whole Flying Star Sect. Even now, in this country, I've managed to contact only a few...sigh,

friends and enemies of the past are long gone. This feels so strange! But I'm thankful for you. I am heartened to know that I have a successor..."

He was experienced enough to tell that Fang Yuan was not simply a talented chap, but a legend who attained all that he had through hard work.

Fang Yuan achieved the unthinkable without proper guidance and in an environment lacking in spiritual energy. He was one of a kind, a prodigy that only appeared once in a hundred thousand years.

"You flatter me..."

Fang Yuan took another sip of the spiritual tea and exchanged more niceties with Xing Hezi. Through conversation, he managed to learn more about Xing Hezi's background.

Xing Hezi was the founder of the Flying Star Sect. In the last thousand year cycle where spiritual energy ceased to flow, he sealed himself up in ice and moved to his Sect's Prosperous Land.

The Flying Star Sect's external influence had not declined and was developing even up till the present. It was still a force to be reckoned with.

Through his social connections, he was able to communicate with the government hierarchs and was given the position of national consultant.

Of course, it was but a case of mutual benefits.

"Are there many people like you in the Chinese country, my friend?"

Fang Yuan asked his question after a moment of silence.

"To unlock the Prosperous Land, one has to be able to expend an enormous amount of energy. During my time, not many people could do that...of all the factions and organisations in the pugilistic

world, there was only a handful. Even among those who did make it to the Prosperous Land, only a few made it..."

Xing Hezi looked slightly lonely.

"Only about three to five individuals are truly formidable in the Middle Continent...it's the same for the West."

He went on to explain in great detail the layout of the world.

True experts of the Divine Refining Grade were Area Beings with mutations of the 5th Grade.

As for Fang Yuan and Xing Hezi, they were both at the peak of Divine Returning Grade, the 4th Calamity Grade.

The layout of the Western world was no different to that of the Middle Continent. Common deities were of 4th grade, and more powerful deities were of the 5th!

'So it seems that Farquhar was once of the 5th grade...but his faith suffered and declined after having been sealed up for years, and now, he has barely made it into the 4th grade...'

There was a glint in Fang Yuan's eye as he turned to look at Xing Hezi.

Who knew, but Xing Hezi might actually be concealing his true abilities. He could have been a master of the Divine Refining Grade once, but fell to the Divine Returning Grade because he had been weakened by his seal.

In this world, there were only theoretical realms that will remain myths forever.

"Right...have you obtained the array techniques of the Jade Palace faction?"

Xing Hezi breached the question in the middle of their hearty conversation.

"Yes...Farquhar told you?"

Fang Yuan glanced at him.

"In terms of maintaining the world order, we share a common objective with him!"

Xing Hezi replied blandly, which made him hard to read.

"Of course, we are in charge of operations over here in the Middle Continent! The Jade Palace Faction is one of the most prominent sects around. How can its succession fall into the hands of an outsider. If you take over, it would be your destiny."

"Oh, so this is how it is."

Fang Yuan gave a flicker of a smile.

"Of course, this is the only arrangement. We need your help!"

Xing Hezi snapped his fingers, and an array that enveloped everything materialised in the courtyard.

Fang Yuan became more serious after seeing this secretive attitude from Xing Hezi.

"Please go on!"

"Farquhar has told you about Operation Grabstar?"

Xing Hezi smiled.

"They have assigned their people in the Eastern and Western Continents. As for the Middle Continent, it is up to us...I have designed a 9 Halls Flying Star Array, and all you have to do is to help me revise it!"

Xing Hezi then produced a piece of jade.

Fang Yuan received it and pressed it to his forehead. He saw a map of the Middle Continent that had shimmering dots and connecting lines drawn all over it. It was all very mysterious."

'It is exactly as we thought...'

When he inspected the dots in greater detail, he gave a sour laugh.

'The 72 cities of the Chinese country were all included. Had it been part of the plan all along? Offering to help out with the defence systems and secretly hiding the arrays within...wait a minute, they began work 10 years ago. Seems like these people had a level of influence that was deeply entrenched. They were playing the long game!'

It took no guessing. He knew the people who were responsible for all of these. It must be the work of the cultivators and supernormal beings.

These people were willing to pay any price in order to bring spiritual energy levels to what they were in mythical times!

"What do you think, my friend?"

Xing Hezi asked with a smile.

"Very interesting. I'll have to go back and study it in greater detail before I can give you an answer!"

Fang Yuna replied earnestly.

"Yes, yes. Please do!"

Xing Hezi was satisfied and waved his hand happily.

This had implications for the entire world. Harnessing the power of the comet and designing an array that would be compatible with those of the other two continents. This was an enormous yet intricate task. Fang Yuan did not want to jump to an opinion quickly for fear of giving the wrong advice.

He had to go back and do some further research to demonstrate his sincerity.

Of course, Xing Hezi had never doubted Fang Yuan's loyalty to the plan.

After all, if Operation Grabstar fails and spiritual energy levels fall, the world would become a lifeless place again. The experts of the Divine Returning and Divine Refining grades would have to go



into a deep sleep, or they would age rapidly and die. By maintaining the current situation, all the supernormal beings could live like kings.

One could betray their status, but not their interests!

-----

They were both experts of the 4th Calamity Grade, and were famous scientists, authorities on mutant research. Fang Yuan enjoyed a treatment that was even better than Xing Hezi's.

When he arrived at Huiming City, the authorities gave him a villa to stay in as well as guards that worked for him round the clock. They accommodated every request of his.

If there was not a possibility of Fang Yuan being transferred to the capital, they would have built a research lab for him.

"Wow! Father, have you thought through it?"

Lorita examined the modernist villa and the servants around her. She nodded in satisfaction.

"This is how the nobles live."

"Sigh...how would we know if we are not one of them?"

Fang Yuan shook his head and let Angel and Lorita choose their own rooms. He then walked over to the study and immersed himself in research.

Armed with the knowledge of Sage Changli and the legacy of the Jade Palace Faction, Fang Yuan was the ultimate authority of array techniques in this world.

"Interesting...all paths lead to Rome indeed!"

After a sweeping glance, Fang Yuan could confirm that the 9 Halls Flying Star Array designed by Xing Hezi was similar to some of Sage Changli's ideas.

"The foundations of the array lie in the Middle Continent and

there were 81 array eyes, 59 of them lying within the Chinese Country..."

On the Middle Continent, although the Chinese Country was the hegemon, it was not the only country.

There were some details that had to be address outside of the country.

"There are no more major alterations to be made, just a few little tweaks here and there."

Fang Yuan had discovered that the greatest limitation of the 9 Halls Flying Star Array was that it was unable to cooperate seamlessly with the arrangements in the other two continents and operate at its maximum potential.

This chink could potentially lead to the failure of the entire plan.

It was fortunate that Fang Yuan was talented and well-learned. He casually altered the array and offered a few suggestions. This was enough to impress Xing Hezi, who had nothing but praise for him.

Before they knew it, five days had passed.

During this time, refugees streamed continuously into Huiming City. It was said that half of the Chinese Country had fallen and become part of the wilderness.

Of course, the Golden Eagle Federation suffered even more. The marine beasts had invaded the country via the rivers and allied themselves with the spiritual beasts on land. The government was broken and reduced to guarding a few key cities.

The Blue Star Alliance was not doing well either. The 9 Headed Cerberus responsible for the spread of the plague had appeared. The government had joined forces with the Curia and sent out their elite soldiers, and even Farquhar himself turned up. But they only managed to injure it and were unable to prevent its escape. Now, it was taking revenge and laying waste to cities in the Eastern

Continent.

This information was provided by Zhao Daniu, and Fang Yuan remained indifferent.

Today, however, Ye Yingzi and Zhao Daniu had brought him a special guest.

# Chapter 444: Conflict of Interests

---

"It has been ten years. How are you, chief?"

Looking at the white-haired Xi Menjian holding a cup of tea before him, Fang Yuan asked him how he was doing. From the corner of his eye, he could see Zhao Daniu and Ye Yingzi furiously exchanging glances.

"I'm blessed enough to be still surviving from all these exhaustion!"

Xi Menjian blew gently at his cup of hot tea.

Fang Yuan admired him for his determination and patience.

At the arrival of the third occurrence, on such a doomsday like this, as the chief of the Religious Bureau, Xi Menjian had the control of all the mutants in Chinese Country and would, therefore, be extremely busy. The stress that he was facing was also more than anyone could imagine.

Under such circumstances, he either had an ulterior motive or was crazy to take the time to visit his old subordinate.

However, Xi Menjian didn't seem like a crazy fellow, which means only one possibility was left.

"Initially... why did you leave?"

Xi Menjian gazed at Fang Yuan for a long while before opening his mouth.

"Because of a discovery..."

Fang Yuan started to spout some nonsense. "I detected a trace of a supernormal civilisation thousands of years ago, and located it at the Golden Eagle Federation! If I want to conduct experiments there myself, surely all of you would not allow me to do so. Therefore, I could only leave without telling you."

It was a terrible excuse.

However, as Xi Menjian recalled the traces of Lei and all the happenings in the Golden Eagle Federation, he could not deny that everything fitted perfectly like puzzle pieces.

"... Regardless, welcome back to the organisation!"

Xi Menjian had a complicated look on his face as he passed a document to Fang Yuan. "From today onwards, you will be the special consultant of the country and you shall enjoy the highest privileges... Hopefully, you will do the country and our people proud."

"Oh?"

Fang Yuan smiled. "It's about this. I almost thought you would immediately assign me to another task or another research project."

"We are not rushing for any research to be done right now, and even more for taskings..."

Xi Menjian let out a bitter smile. "Everywhere in the country is in chaos! Everywhere will need all the help they can get! Even so, we cannot deal with everything!"

Unless Fang Yuan could split himself into a few billion clones, he would also be helpless against a catastrophe as huge as doomsday. Therefore, he could only protect a few important nodes and forgo the rest.

The two of them gazed at each other and remained silent for a long time.

"The two of you, leave the room!"

After a long while, Xi Menjian ordered for the two people behind him to take their leave.

After Zhao Daniu and Ye Yingzi left, Xi Menjian started to fiddle with a contraption.

'Is this a jammer?'

Seeing this, Fang Yuan twitched his eyebrows as Xi Menjian started to explain himself. "As a 4th Tier mutant... If you are unwilling to let others eavesdrop, they will not be able to hear our conversation, right?"

Xi Menjian was being extremely cautious.

"Don't worry, no one would dare to..."

Seeing this, Fang Yuan smiled. "Who are you guarding against? Xing Hezi? He has long left Huiming City... Even if he were to be still in the city, he would not try to eavesdrop us and make me unhappy."

"Sigh..."

Xi Menjian laughed. "That old demon who hibernated for a thousand years would only cause us distress. Comrade Fang Yuan, the organisation has a very important task for you!"

"Important task?"

Fang Yuan appeared confused. "I've been living in seclusion for the past 10 years and may no longer be loyal to the country. Why are you willing to task this to me?"

"We have no choice, for you are the only suitable person to be able to do this!"

Xi Menjian stood up and took a deep bow. "Please protect the humans!"

"Protect the humans? What a heavy responsibility..."

Fang Yuan turned solemn. "What have you guys discovered?"

"A huge shadow has been lurking in the darkness. Even the chaotic development years of Chinese Country couldn't destroy it. Instead, it started to recover at a quicker pace and has already infiltrated the government..."

Xi Menjian spoke in a deep tone. "Now, even I wouldn't trust my subordinates any more..."

Fang Yuan could understand where he was coming from.

The Black Hand was an organisation formed by the powerful sects in Middle Continent thousands of years ago. Most of the people in the organisation had the ability to cast spells or possessed certain special abilities. They would surely be the most powerful bunch of people as soon as the spiritual energy in the surroundings reaches a maximum. Since the Religious Bureau was recruiting members at that time, they would be foolish not to join the bureau to cause trouble from within.

"This is at most fighting for their own rights. What's there to say about protecting the humans?"

Fang Yuan sighed before probing further.

"What do you think? Those old demonic people have a totally different mindset from us, modern people! Who knows, that old fogey might just want to push us back into the dark ages and the developing years..."

Xi Menjian continued. "If not for this worry, our leaders would not have been so decisive. However, after investigation, we realise that those high-tiered cultivators, including Xing Hezi, have attempted communications with those evil beasts. This is especially so for Xing Hezi who had once secretly met with the Sea Dragon King.

Fang Yuan broke out in cold sweat.

Needless to say, a country could potentially become very powerful if it were to utilise all its resources.

Xing Hezi had looked down upon the mortals and was not careful in this aspect.

"Therefore... I've especially come to plead you to investigate this matter thoroughly! As soon as you realise Xing Hezi performing acts of betrayal to the country, deal with him immediately! Stop his plan! If you require, you may tap on all the resources of the

country!"

Xi Menjian assured.

"But... why me?"

Fang Yuan remained silent for a while before posing his final question.

"Because you are 100% local Chinese and is one of us. Therefore, our thinking will be similar!"

Xi Menjian let out a bitter smile. "This is actually just the reason on the surface. What's important is that you do not have a record and have never contacted the other species before. Furthermore, I do not have anyone else I can look for..."

Looking at his back view as Xi Menjian took his leave, Fang Yuan was deep in his thoughts.

This was where the conflict of interests between the two species laid.

As a normal human, although they would benefit from the increasing spiritual energy, a doomsday scenario would have them prefer to return to the old days. Days where the streets were not as safe, but the humans would still be in control of the world due to scientific advancements. Now, it was the survival of the fittest, but a hell for all species.

However, other supernatural beings, especially cultivators, would prefer a world rich in spiritual energy, for it would be their heaven.

In the process, many normal humans would be sacrificed but that would merely be the natural way of how things would work.

Facing the conflicts of interests, cultivators would stand together for a common objective of taking over the world. Therefore, Xing Hezi was not afraid that Fang Yuan would go against the cultivators.



Therefore, from a certain angle, there were opportunities for peace talks with the Sea Dragon King and the 9 Headed Cerberus.

"It was never a fair fight, to begin with... the alliance of supernatural beings are like giants, and the resistance of normal humans are like ants!"

Fang Yuan sighed.

It was easy to understand the situation. In such a doomsday scenario, those with the ability would be the ones in power.

Even if one were to be the leader of the country, if one was not a mutant or a supernatural being, one would have limited ability to protect oneself. How would one be able to survive any disaster then?

Furthermore, even without going head-on with the higher-ups, those tycoons and head of financial groups would want to survive as much as possible.

If Xing Hezi was a little smarter, he could easily make these people get rid of the higher-ups.

Therefore, Xi Menjian could conclude that there were no other people he could look for. To be a little more extreme, anyone in power within the country could no longer be trusted.

"This is how pathetic normal humans are... They can only get sacrificed but cannot do anything about it. They don't even have the rights to know what's happening..."

Fang Yuan walked towards the window and gazed at a few buildings in the vicinity as well as the group of humans which resembled ants. With that, he fell into silence.

"Even ants will resist. Among the normal humans, there are still people like Xi Menjian and not all the leaders will succumb to the pressure. This is the final hope of humans..."

Fang Yuan looked at his own palms.

Just a few moments ago, Xi Menjian had placed this hope into Fang Yuan's hands but did not even make Fang Yuan promise anything. With this, it was obvious how much hope he had this time.

The circumstances were worse than most people could imagine.

Even Xi Menjian had to put his life on the line!

"Father!"

Not long after, two girls ran towards Fang Yuan. "What did that uncle talk to you about?"

"Nothing much, he just posed a difficult question to me!"

Fang Yuan shook his head. "Also... I have been preparing to leave the country for awhile. Take care of the house!"

"Leave the country? To where?"

"Dancing Country!"

...

Outside the huge city.

Xing Hezi waved his whisk and the force of the stars started to descend, forming a huge hand which effortlessly smashed a Winged Tiger into a pile of bloodied mess.

After accomplishing his feat, he did not stop. Amidst the cheers of him being the saviour of the world, he quickly took his leave and felt good.

"It's done!"

After travelling out a huge distance, Xing Hezi was shrouded in a layer of fog and stopped at a cliff.

"Kacha! Kacha!"

One of the cliffs in the surroundings crumbled and a pair of eyes were revealed. They were staring right at Xing Hezi.

"The array has been completed. Next would be the blood sacrifice activation. Occasionally, send a few people to attack the city. It doesn't matter which direction you attack from."

Xing Hezi started to give his instructions.

"That person..."

The eyes in the cliff gave of a tremor and a few images appeared in mid-air. They were of Xi Menjian and Fang Yuan.

"What have you detected? Hehe..."

He Xinzi laughed. "Is he trying to establish good ties with other highly-skilled people to deal with us? He would never understand that regarding this, all cultivators are united. Even Farquhar who would require the faith of others is also with us on this! What's more, this person is a cultivator with the strength of his own! Even if Zheng Qizi were to revive, I'm afraid he would also be together with us on this."

"He has gone to Dancing Country!"

The giant pair of eyes paused for a moment before continuing.

"That's great! There are 3 array eyes in Dancing Country. Who would've thought that Brother Fang Yuan would be so proactive in this!"

Xing Hezi laughed. "I know that Xi Menjian is secretly gathering people. However, this is not what he really wants. Now, secretly observe Fang Yuan in the dark to see if he is perfecting the array or destroying it. You can feel the Earth Meridian, right? Can't you tell?"

# Chapter 445: Blood Sacrifice

---

Dancing Country.

This country laid to the West of Chinese Country and was the second most powerful country in Middle Continent. The common religion of the country prayed to the God of Brahma.

Unfortunately, at the arrival of the third occurrence, there were no signs of the awakening of the God of Brahma. Instead, there were a few disciples of Brahma who had cultivated special abilities of their own, leading the lives with the motto of 'Everyone can be Brahma'. With that, they were making preparations to become the God of Brahma themselves.

However, before they could reach that stage, the world had already started to experience disasters all around. Natural disasters and waves of attack from wild beasts were enough to wipe out almost 90% of the population. With the reduction in the number of believers, the act of becoming the God of Brahma became a joke.

"The people of Dancing Country are really careless. This is an actual array eye and yet, they've polluted it with the corpses of 10,000 people!"

From the air above a bay, Fang Yuan slowly appeared and shook his head as he witnessed the numerous corpses lying around. "Although the array eye requires blood sacrifice, it's not in this form..."

He slowly descended and started to investigate the breadth of the earth in the area.

"Mmm... Xing Hezi's initial preparations were rather good. This array eye is extremely suitable and the breadth of the earth here is thick and concentrated..."

A fiery glow appeared in Fang Yuan's eyes and with that, he had

already peered through the earth and was observing the centre of the eye.

"With water, the Earth will be formed... This place is even more suitable to cast the 6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array!"

Without another thought, he released his invisible power of the arena, allowing it to seep through the earth. With that, he was able to slightly alter the flow of energy within the earth. In perfecting the array eye, he had also smuggled something of his own into it.

"Bloop! Bloop!"

Corpses floating in the nearby river started to bubble. A demonic-like alligator that was 10 metres long floated up to the surface of the river. It had a weird body shape, 8 legs and as it observed Fang Yuan, it remained calm.

"This alligator... The peak of the Murderous Grade? Is this a guardian beast placed here by Xing Hezi and his company?"

Since the alligator did not disturb him, Fang Yuan paid no attention to it. He crossed his legs and sat in mid-air as he increased the flow of energy into the earth.

It was harder to alter the design of the array eye than to simply destroy it.

The good thing was that to Fang Yuan, it was only a small problem.

After a while, Fang Yuan's face started to twitch as he suddenly gazed to the side. "Who's that? How dare you peep at me?"

"Rumble!"

Fang Yuan had limitless powers and with a single thought, the earth beneath him split and a huge eye made of rock flew out.

This eye was as brown as soil and seemed as though it was being carved by a single piece of rock, making it look mysterious.

However, Fang Yuan could detect a certain spiritual will coming

from it. Furthermore, it had the spiritual aura of life in it.

"How can you detect me! This is impossible!"

The spiritual will exclaimed and started to go crazy. "You are just a mere highly skilled person in the Divine Returning Grade. How can you detect my Thousand Rock Eye? You must have some secrets!"

"Id\*ot!"

Fang Yuan's reply to him was unforgiving streaks of lightning.

"Kacha!"

The skies gave way, unleashing purples streaks of lightning which struck onto the eye without mercy.

The eye exclaimed and cracks started to form on its surface. "You cannot kill me!"

The spiritual will coming from the eye was panicking. "My actual body will look for you to seek revenge! Furthermore... I am also a member of the Hidden Cultivators Sect and this is just a routine surveillance!"

"The Hidden Cultivators Sect?"

Hearing this name which struck fear in Xi Menjian's heart, Fang Yuan snickered. "Why didn't Xing Hezi mention about you to me?"

"Why should we let you know about the Hidden Cultivators Sect's secret?"

The rock eye relentlessly countered the argument and Fang Yuan could guess that this person must be a person of status within the Hidden Cultivators Sect and could be a leader of sorts.

"Is that so? It could be that you are too scared of me..."

Fang Yuan smiled. "For instance... your physical body is too severely damaged or you are not yet fully awaken and only have a consciousness right now, is that so?"

"So what if that's true?"

The rock eye realised that it could no longer hide itself after all that had happened and decided to give up. "Although my physical body is still asleep, it will surely be able to awaken. You are a member of the Hidden Cultivators Sect as well you have been doing your job. I have seen that you have been focusing on repairing the array and I now formally recognise you as one of us."

"I never need any recognition from anybody for the things that I do!"

Fang Yuan's gaze turned cold. "Furthermore... I hate people who spy on me!"

"This is not good!"

Witnessing Fang Yuan's attitude, the rock eye started to scream as though it was attempting to activate a certain spell to leave.

No matter how fast he was, Fang Yuan was quicker.

"Bang!"

Fang Yuan took a small step forward and struck his fist out. Immediately, the rock eye crumbled into many pieces.

"Ah... you!"

A vengeful voice was heard from the rock which slowly faded away.

'If I don't give him an excuse, how can I deal with him in the open?'

Fang Yuan gave a sinister smile. "It's your misfortune for you to meet me today."

...

"Ah..."

Just as the rock eye was crumbling, within a prosperous land, the mountains started to shake and cracks were forming.

"Roar! Roar!"

A deep grumble was heard from underground.

"I can feel that part of my magical clone has disappeared!"

Within the cracks, an infuriated voice started to roar. "Who dares to destroy my magical clone, you must be seeking death!"

...

In the Golden Eagle Federation.

Within one of the cities along the river, flames broke out as marine beasts and land beasts were gathered together, appearing submissive to a long and blue silhouette in the middle of the river.

The entire city had already turned into a war zone filled with blood and corpses everywhere.

Thousands of corpses were piled up into a small dark hill and red blood oozed down from the hill. There was a foul and nauseous stench coming from the mess in the city.

"This is enough... A blood sacrifice of such a scale should be enough to lay the foundation for one of the array eyes..."

Beside the blue dragon, a rock eye quipped with satisfaction but suddenly, its voice changed.

"Kacha!"

On the surface of the rock eye, cracks began to appear and streaks of blood filled the cracks.

The rock eye was bleeding!

"What's happening to you?"

The Sea Dragon King turned around and glared at the rock eye.

"Nothing much, just one of the magical clones being destroyed!"

The rock eye shook a little before stabilising. "In fact... If you are willing to, the array masters of the Hidden Cultivators Sect will



very willingly help you!"

"It's alright. Compared to you guys, I trust my species more!"

The Sea Dragon King curled his body up and had a mocking look in his eyes. "Even if the quality of our spiritual eye is unable to meet the expectations, killing more humans and sacrificing them will do the trick."

"Very well!"

The rock eye did not seem to have any objections against such a merciless ferocious beast who had no regard for human life. Instead, it was encouraging the dragon. "In the alliance at the east, Farquhar has already initiated Operation Grabstar. The power of the Flashing Words and Stars Array is also sufficient. With the 3 array eyes of the 3 big continents in place, our plan is halfway done. I'll still have to trouble you to activate the one within the ocean, brother."

"It's a small thing!"

The Sea Dragon King shook his head. "Even if we activate these arrays, we still need to let them run for another 10 years. We still have to guard against those who would try to disrupt them!"

"Haha, don't worry about this, Brother Dragon!"

The rock eye's spiritual will sounded happy. "With the completion of the array eyes, the array would constantly absorb natural energy from the surroundings and come together as one, making it almost impossible to destroy... As long as we can sustain it for a certain period of time, as long as all the array eyes on the earth are activated, these array eyes will then be able to restore itself even after destruction. It will still be able to work if more than half of it remains and will be immune to attacks from humans!"

"This is great!"

Before the Sea Dragon King could think of what to say next, he

raised his head up and roared. "Roar! Roar!"

The weather started to change. Although the Sea Dragon King was only a water dragon, with its current abilities, even a single roar would be able to make all the beasts in land and water submit to it.

"This is..."

The rock eye was stunned and as it gazed towards the sky, it quickly burrowed underground and disappeared.

"It's really quick... A human indeed!"

Seeing this, the Sea Dragon King raised its head up proudly as it attempted to display its might.

"Whoosh! Whoosh!"

Without doing anything, the water in the river started to pick up and rise, creating tsunami waves of 10 metres in height and submerging the entire city in it.

No, it was not accurate to say that it was submerging the city.

To put things into perspective, the Sea Dragon King had manipulated the water to protect the array eye firmly.

"Bang! Bang!"

In the next moment, numerous nuclear bombs appeared in the sky, landing on where the city once was and flames started to break out.

"Rumble!"

From the explosion, even the air in the vicinity shook.

However, no matter how powerful the explosion of the nuclear bomb might be, under the protection of the Sea Dragon King, the entire array eye was only slightly chipped and was not severely damaged.

"This is... the lack of creativity!"

The Sea Dragon King started to swim around on the surface of the ocean before spitting out a streak of blue energy.

"Kacha! Kacha!"

In an instant, a layer of white frost started to appear on its body before spreading towards the city, freezing everything within it.

"The ice frozen from my dragon aura will be tougher than steel and will not be easily destroyed... Of course, the foolish people from the Golden Eagle Federation might not even have a clue as to what I am doing."

The Sea Dragon King flew into the air and gazed towards somewhere far.

Not long after, a black dot appeared at the horizon. In a shockingly fast speed, it flew towards the dragon with its black and white wings. It had the appearance of an angel.

"Every time I see you, I am reminded of the birdman from Blue Star Alliance. You're making me pissed off!"

The Sea Dragon King hollered and his powerful energy wave started to spread out. With the swing of his head, a streak of blue light was shot out.

"Buzz! Buzz!"

Before the Demon Weapon, light and darkness fused together, forming an extremely powerful power of the arena.

The blue streak of light flew into the mix and was being sucked in by a black hole in the middle of the glow. In an instant, it disappeared.

"To speak the truth... I am also pissed of at the other birdmen from federation!"

The Demon Weapon flew forward and a high pitched voice resembling an Oriole was heard, stunning the Sea Dragon King. "Not... Not right, you are different from what you were last time!"

Who are you exactly?"

"I am still me!"

The pretty face of the Demon Weapon smiled. "I have merely absorbed an external piece of my soul, regaining some memories which I used to have."

"External soul? Is that legend true?"

The Sea Dragon King froze. "That we are not the only world in the entire universe?"

# Chapter 446: Otherworldly

---

"This world... is not the only one of course!"

The angelic girl replied with a sweet and innocent voice. She looked child-like and yet cunning, her beauty was truly paradoxical.

Perhaps in some small realms, this truth could never be discovered. Even their most powerful beings could only live their lives muddle-headedly without ever knowing such.

However, this realm was different!

In terms of its natural source, this realm was only inferior to Ancient Realm which Fang Yuan had been to. It could support the existence of Area Beings, which was equivalent to 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters.

Area Beings could create prosperous lands and grasp the secrets of their environments. Thus, it was natural for them to easily realise the truth of their realm.

In Ancient Realm, the witches discovered traces of otherworldly demons. Thus, in this realm, those who were extremely powerful naturally had some understanding on the real side of the realm.

This sea dragon was the sole remaining member of the outer seas water dragon species. It had already cultivated and formed its water dragon body in the last millennium. It had survived till now by luck and was like an old monster, hence, it naturally knew more secrets.

"Absorbed a soul fragment? That means... an otherworldly demon is trying to possess you?"

The Sea Dragon King looked towards the angel of light and darkness with eyes full of caution.

After all, regarding such matters deep within the soul level,

unless she willingly opened up her sea of consciousness fully, the Sea Dragon King would never know the truth.

"It's all smoke and mirrors! Perhaps it's absorption or perhaps it's a merger of both sides to become a new character! Why are you being so serious?"

The Demon Weapon young girl chuckled. Her laughter had a child-like innocence and was beguiling at the same time, it could really charm anyone.

"I can recall some segments of that otherworldly demon's memory. It seems like this body was her original body, this explains why I'm so harmonious with it..."

The young girl patted her chest and continued, "Also, it was such a close shave... If I hadn't devoured a very interesting mind special ability, I might have been fully possessed..... Oh right, you don't know the meaning of 'possess'? That means a soul forcefully occupies another body. Ever since I devoured that soul fragment, I am gaining a bunch of weird knowledge frequently."

"In the past millennium, I had already taken on the shape of a human, travelled across the east and west and I was even admitted into a faction. I obviously do not need you to explain to me about this kind of matters."

The Sea Dragon King was rather fearful and suspicious.

Originally, this Demon Weapon young girl had the strength of a 4th Tier mutant and had multitudes of special abilities which even gave the Sea Dragon King a headache.

But now, in her new body, the Demon Weapon was even more unpredictable and unknown.

"Now that I have a new life, how about I call myself 'Extreme Darkness'? This is the name the otherworldly demon gave me!"

Young Girl Extreme Darkness cackled, "I love this name too."

"Cough cough... then I wonder what does Extreme Darkness want to do next?"

The Sea Dragon King was extremely alert.

From the previous nukes, it could be told that this young girl was still on the federation army's side.

"I want to..."

Young Girl Extreme Darkness furrowed her brows as she hesitated, "I don't know..."

She knocked her brains frustratedly, "Ever since I absorbed that piece of soul, although I had already secretly escaped from the control of the federation and also became smarter, many of the memories are still in bits and pieces, only a few parts... Nevertheless, there's a persistent thought that keeps resounding in my mind, it is 'let me harvest this world'! Do you know what this means?"

"I don't know... but it definitely isn't anything good."

The Sea Dragon King kept silent.

An otherworldly demon that had to harvest the world in its mind constantly was definitely scarier than the doomsday now.

Now, the Sea Dragon King was more believing of this young girl that she was not really an evil demon but it was just due to the spiritual awareness of her body.

"Since you don't know, go and think about it slowly!"

Young Girl Extreme Darkness was not very bothered as she replied, "Before I fully understand it, I don't want to leave the federation. After all, I don't have to worry about my meals or anything, I can have whatever I want... They begged me to come over now just to drive you away only! Even if I don't come, I guess you were preparing to leave too?"

"Of course..."

The Sea Dragon King smiled awkwardly, "However, does Miss Extreme Darkness know about the secret pact between the powerful ones of this world?"

"Secret pact? Are you talking about this array eye?"

Extreme Darkness pointed to the city frozen in ice below her.

"You can tell?"

The Sea Dragon King twitched and its tail involuntarily smacked about.

"Smack! Smack!"

Nearby, the transparent silhouette of a person immediately shattered into pieces. Its blood and flesh froze into ice before it shattered into tiny shards.

"I can naturally tell, I knew it from the memory of that otherworldly demon too..."

Extreme Darkness smiled gently, "Unfortunately, I only have a little impression of it, I can't even remember much. Also... thanks for helping me get rid of this fly!"

"You're welcome! From now on, I recognise your authority inside the Golden Eagle Federation, as long as you are in-charge of taking care of this array eye, the marine beasts can immediately return to the deep ocean!"

To these beings high above everyone else, everything and anything could be settled with just a talk.

The dry land was nothing to the Sea Dragon King, thus, he immediately gifted Extreme Darkness such a big present.

With such high stakes, even if the treachery was discovered by the federation, there was a lot of room for negotiation.

"Plop!"

After finishing that line, the Sea Dragon King plunged into the



water and disappeared in an instant.

Extreme Darkness stayed at her original spot and waited for a while.

"Crackle!"

Beside her, a layer of soil cracked open and a pair of rock eyes emerged, "Friend, I, Thousand Rock Lord, was wondering if you are interested in joining the Hidden Cultivators Sect?"

"Hidden Cultivators Sect!?"

The corners of Extreme Darkness' lips immediately lifted to a slight smile, "I have no problems with it and I have lots of intelligence to tell you, but in return... you should tell me the truth behind this world's spiritual energy!"

"Haha... you are indeed quick and decisive!"

The rock eyes shined as it agreed with no hesitation, "Deal!"

...

"How did the so-called spiritual energy come about? It is definitely not explained by just a Spiritual King Comet..."

After they reached an agreement, the rock eyes began to narrate, "To all of us, that Spiritual King Comet is merely an omen. The spiritual energy is a gift from a higher dimension world!"

Extreme Darkness's gaze wandered off as though she associated it with something.

"That's right, our world is not the only world! The dimensions have their own ways of functioning. On a certain day millenniums ago, two worlds began to overlap, or should I say, the dimensions began to infiltrate each other. Thus, spiritual energy began to spread to our world, causing all these magical things!"

The Thousand Rock Lord spoke in a stern voice.

"Infiltration of dimensions?"

Extreme Darkness bit her lips.

"Naturally, a higher dimensional world cannot coincide with a lower dimension world. However, it can radiate power to it... This spiritual energy is the basis to all! Thus, the common goal of the members of Hidden Cultivators Sect is to make use of the return of the Spiritual King Comet this time around to anchor on to that spiritual energy world. This will allow our world to be under the infiltration of higher dimension spiritual energy forever!"

The Thousand Rock Lord spoke with fervour.

"Dimension? Am I afraid this word should be changed to 'realm'? A realm beyond ours? Trāyastriṃśa?"

Extreme Darkness immediately understood.

In the Middle Continent of this realm, there had always been legends about realms beyond this realm. In actual fact, that was the description of a higher dimension world.

"I never thought you would know all these!"

Thousand Rock Lord was slightly surprised, "I originally wanted to say it a way more suitable for westerners, but I didn't expect you to be so well-versed in cultivations."

"But... this is just one-sided wishful thinking from you all..."

Young Girl Extreme Darkness bit her lips as she thought of something.

"It's not wishful thinking! A realm beyond ours really exists!"

Thousand Rock Lord's expression turned extremely solemn at once as he continued, "Us leading cultivators, or should I say, us pioneering cultivators have more or less received the guidance and influence of the realm beyond ours before! Even some subsequent cultivators who cultivated to the peak also vaguely sensed the will of the realm beyond ours! As long as we can bring about the advent of this Spiritual Realm, we would gain boundless benefits! Eh?"

Suddenly, the rock eyes' spiritual will began to flicker and became unstable.

"Thousand Rock Lord?"

Young Girl Extreme Darkness was shocked and looked at the rock eyes.

"Ahh... you dare?"

The spiritual will of Thousand Rock Lord shrieked and suddenly exploded, disappearing without a trace left behind.

"Sha! Sha! Sha! Sha!"

On its spot, numerous cracks appeared on the pair of rock eyes and began to widen, it then turned to a pile of sandy soil in the end.

"That is... He got destroyed?"

Extreme Darkness grabbed a handful of rock dust with a very odd expression on her face, "What a useless old man who can't even speak clearly..."

...

"It should be here, right?"

Time went slightly ahead.

In Chinese Country, Fang Yuan was holding a shattered piece of the rock eyes and arrived at a picturesque spot.

The place was secluded, birds sang in the area while flowers blossomed. There were even very little traces of ferocious beasts in the area. It was really a natural prosperous land.

Fang Yuan smiled and arrived before a cliff. He held the rock with both his hands and raised it.

"Open!!!"

"Kaboom!"

Dark clouds loomed in the skies, lightning flashed and thunder roared crazily.

4th Tier powers began to gush out without reservation and immediately caused tremendous changes to happen on the face of the cliff in front of Fang Yuan.

"What are you doing?"

"Rumble!"

On two sides, large amounts of crushed rocks rolled down and two divine statues of Green Rock Giants appeared. Their bodies were covered with moss and vines as they had guarded here for extremely long.

"Scram!"

Fang Yuan casually punched twice. Although his small figure was no match to the giant stature and build of the two of them, the two giants trembled under the punch and froze on their spot.

Not before long, pieces of rocks crumbled from their body and numerous cracks appeared on their faces.

"Crackle!"

The rock wall cracked and revealed a door to the prosperous land.

Fang Yuan took a step in and immediately arrived in a bizarre place.

The ground was uneven and rugged, its surface was barren and covered with lots of rocks in all sorts of weird shapes.

"Junior! How dare you bully me like that?"

Under the earthquake, a thunder-like voice could be heard.

A giant fissure appeared on the ground and numerous rocks piled together and formed a giant. The giant was over 100 feet tall and its body was covered with carvings of eyes. The arena's immense

power immediately engulfed the plane!

# Chapter 447: Destruction

---

"Thousand Rock Lord? I see you have possessed the rock!"

Fang Yuan's body shook and started to grow in size. His spiritual arena started to spread and his body remained in mid-air as he glared at the rock giant.

Needless to say, this was the last-ditch attempt at preserving his own life.

Everyone knew that legendary animals like the dragons and phoenixes would have a long lifespan.

The Sea Dragon King did not hide in any secret place. He merely went into hibernation and had successfully woken up after a thousand years.

However, the beings of elements would live even longer than these legendary animals.

To these beings, a few tens of thousands of years would past in the blink of an eye. They only required the support of the element to be able to live on forever.

The only catch was that such beings were extremely rare in this realm, even rarer than dragons.

The Thousand Rock Lord was fortunate enough to have detected the life in this rock and successfully possessed it.

However, everything was understandable. After all, the Thousand Rock Lord was a true ancestor and was even more senior than Xing Hezi. If he did not possess the rock, he would not have been able to live until now.

"How does it feel like to become a rock? It's terrible, isn't it?"

Fang Yuan started to mock the rock giant.

After all, it was different from normal legendary beings. By having a life like the elements, the Thousand Rock Lord now had

to live a life different from humans, and could no longer have the sense of touch.

Even the strongest-willed cultivators would be tormented under such an experience.

"You're courting death!"

The Thousand Rock Lord was enraged.

As he roared, a rough-looking face appeared and a pair of ferocious rock eyes glared towards Fang Yuan. With the wave of its hands, a 10-ton rock started to smash down.

"Break!"

Fang Yuan slicked his finger out as though it was a sword.

A flash of sword radiance flickered!

This sword radiance was not strong. However, as soon as it came into contact with the rock, it started to fill up the cracks in the rock before slicing it into two neat pieces.

This was neither the fastest strike nor the strongest strike, it was merely just right!

"Great swordplay!"

Even the Thousand Rock Lord praised Fang Yuan for his techniques. "With such skills, even without spells, you could already be the most highly-skilled martial artist in the world! Who are you?"

The sword technique appeared simple but was sophisticated in its own ways and was the product of years of experience. It could not be simply understood by the average person.

The only possibility was that this person had stored wisdom!

"Possessor? Or are you a demon from another world?"

Possessors were highly-skilled natives who had reincarnated into another form, while a demon from another world simply meant

that this person would be the enemy of the entire world!

"Regardless of who I am, is there really any difference?"

Fang Yuan scoffed. "Either way, you are going to die today!"

"You don't know what you're saying!"

The Thousand Rock Lord remained composed. Suddenly, all the eyes on its body started to shine as though they had all come alive at once. With that, they were then shut at the same time.

"Whoosh!"

In the next moment, as the Thousand Rock Eyes opened, golden rays started to fill the entire place.

"Rumble!"

Fang Yuan waved and streaks of flames appeared. As the flames came into contact with the golden rays, they froze for a while before solidifying and turning grey. The solidified rocks fell from mid-air and shattered as they smashed onto the ground.

"Is this... Rock Transforming Glow? The potential of this rock is indeed great... unimaginable!"

After all, this world was still a world with strict laws of physics. Even though the spiritual energy might increase, it would still only be for a short period of time. Technological advances could do little to make the elements last longer.

Fang Yuan could not imagine how such a powerful rock giant could have come to life in the past.

Of course, a more pressing issue would be the ever-growing golden glow.

"Spiritualise!"

With his spiritual will, Fang Yuan became an illusionary shadow.

"Whoosh!"

The Rock Transforming Glow pierced through the flames and



landed on Fang Yuan's body. It froze for a moment before illuminated straight through.

"The spiritualisation of my body is a type of transformation to become an element. According to the people from the East, this is the combination of nature and man... Compared to my short moment of spiritualisation, the Thousand Rock Lord is constantly part of nature. If I allow it to grow stronger and restore its powers, the consequences are unimaginable."

Fang Yuan froze in mid-air and appeared serious.

The purpose of his visit was to kill and loot.

However, the discovery of the Thousand Year Rock was indeed a huge problem for Fang Yuan.

"If it already has so much power while it remains injured, would it be at the Divine Refining Grade at its peak?"

Fang Yuan's expression as he started to speak to the rock giant. "Who would've thought that a Divine Refining Grade powerful being had to abandon his body to become such a dumb thing? If you let your enemy know about this, I think he would be extremely shocked!"

"Who are you? Who are you exactly?"

The Thousand Rock Lord glared at Fang Yuan. It was as though its glare could burn through anything and was enough to give anyone the shivers.

"I am Fang Yuan. You should have died long ago. Why are you still trying to pathetically survive until today?"

Amidst his own laughter, Fang Yuan stretched out his hand. "Nine days of lightning, Hear my command! Strike!"

"Ripppppp!"

Streaks of lightning started to dance in the sky. Suddenly, they came together and took up the shape of a majestic-looking

lightning dragon which flew down.

With a huge destructive force, the lightning struck mercilessly on the rock giant.

"Pa! Pa!"

Rock eyes started to explode one by one and terrifying screams were heard.

The Thousand Rock Lord took a few steps back and his face was filled with disbelief. "Lightning? How can you control the lightning in my territory?"

"Even though this place might be built by you, it is not your area and therefore, you have no control over its power!"

Fang Yuan stretched out both his hands. "Come here, lightning!"

"Rippppp!"

9 lightning dragons appeared in the sky and fused together to form an elaborate array.

"I have an array here. It is cast after years of experimentation. If you can survive under it, I shall let you off today!"

The 9 Dragons Lightning Array isolated the Thousand Eyed Giant in it. After hearing Fang Yuan's voice, the Thousand Rock Lord's expression changed and he became panicky. "Five Elements Burrow, protect me!"

"Rumble!"

"Rumble!"

Even though the Thousand Rock Lord had been severely injured, it was still ultimately the owner of this place.

Together with the traits of a rock, it was a simple task for it to harness the energy from the rocks around.

Within moments, four walls emerged from the ground, forming an extremely strong defence which protected the Thousand Rock

Lord in it.

This defensive layer was connected to the earth and was not only impregnable but could also be repaired within moments by absorbing energy from the ground. The only way to break through the defensive wall was to strip up the entire piece of land.

"You're a reckless boy. I would like to see how you will die later on!"

Thousand Rock Lord hollered.

However, in the next moment, it turned silent as though its neck was being gripped.

"Strike!"

Together with the activation of the 9 Dragons Lightning Array, an invisible force started to spread across the place.

"Buzz!"

A white glow flashed across and the strong force exploded. Although it was not a strong explosion, any wall, element or even spiritual energy disintegrated into nothing after coming into contact with it.

"Whooosh!"

Amidst the explosion, the rock wall crumbled, revealing a shocked Thousand Rock Lord.

In the next moment, the 9 lightning dragons started to roar and rush towards it.

"Ripppppp!"

The lightning streaks exploded and cracks appeared on the giant's body, with the glow of lightning seeping out from these cracks.

"This is... the power of an area..."

The Thousand Rock Lord screamed. "No! I'm not convinced! This

is not possible..."

This voice became softer and softer. Finally, there was silence.

Amidst a thick black smoke, pieces of rocks started to fall off the rock giant and the original size of the giant was slowly reduced.

"Destruction from the 9 Dragons Lightning Array! It seems like the effect is not too bad, isn't it?"

Witnessing this scene, Fang Yuan snickered. "It is relatively powerful to be used in combat."

Initially, with the protection of the land, the Thousand Rock Lord would not have been so easily defeated.

However, Fang Yuan was not stupid. He started off with his killer move to chase away the spiritual droplets in the vicinity and thereby cutting off the support the Thousand Rock Lord would otherwise receive from the land. With that, he could deliver his strongest blow and the Thousand Rock Lord would have to receive the blow without any preparation.

Such an array with the ability to chase away spiritual droplets was developed after studying Angel's special ability.

Although her ability was only as powerful as a 3rd Tier mutant, Fang Yuan had complemented it with an array, allowing it to even affect a being with the power of the arena.

"Of course... it still has its limitations! Firstly, it is still unable to affect all special abilities. I had intentionally tweaked it to target ground-type abilities just now and supplemented it with lightning. Since lightning is able to counter earth, I managed to successfully pull it off just now..."

"Also, as a cultivator with a special ability that relies on spiritual droplets in nature, considering the ability of the Thousand Rock Lord, if not for the fact that it was over-confident in its own defence, it could easily have avoided death if it remained alert, like how I did it before... Of course, this might be due to the fact that he

had abandoned his human body!"

If the Thousand Rock Lord was still a human cultivator, Angel's special ability might not have affected it that much.

However, it was now an incarnated being of element. Although it could now live for an extremely long time and was strengthened with the properties of rock, it had now become dependant on nature for its powers and therefore, it would be much more affected.

"Rumble!"

It was as though the sky was falling to the ground and the mountains were crashing down.

A huge rock giant turned into powder after Fang Yuan's attack and as it fell to the ground, there was a mini earthquake.

From the tremor, a faint golden glow flickered before disappearing.

"Whoosh!"

As thunder roared, Fang Yun quickly made his way towards the glow and stretched his hands out. With that, a golden crystal landed in his hands.

"How dare you run!"

Looking at the human face in the crystal, Fang Yuan laughed.

After their encounter, how could Fang Yuan let the Thousand Rock Lord leave so simply?

"Ah... this is impossible. I am a Fate Soul and have a lot of fate energy. How can I die here?"

Within the crystal, the face of Thousand Rock Lord started to scream. "I don't believe this! I don't believe it at all! The souls of the other worlds, I offer myself as sacrifice... Please enter!!!"

# Chapter 448: Spiritual Realm

---

"Spiritual Realm?"

As Fang Yuan listened to the incantations from the crystal, his eyes moved but he did not stop it immediately.

Fang Yuan had his suspicions earlier before.

The advent of the Spiritual King Comet merely marked the peak in spiritual energy. It would be ludicrous if the Spiritual King Comet could really supply an entire realm with spiritual energy.

Hence, the existence of a "Spiritual Realm" was certain and this "Spiritual Realm" was continuously providing this realm with spiritual droplets. This was extremely similar to the dream master's source world which dream masters were painstakingly searching for!

After realising such, Fang Yuan immediately confirmed to himself that this realm was of great value!

This value was even greater than that of harvesting the source of this realm!

"I can directly use this realm as an experiment to see how Da Qian World would be like in the future... Of course, the premise for all these would be the existence of a real 'Spiritual Realm'!"

Fang Yuan lobbed the crystal and it floated in mid-air. The crystal was then pierced by a sword essence.

"Ahh..."

A hysterical scream could be heard, followed by an extremely reluctant and sad sounding wail, "There's no use... the rite has already started, no one can stop it!"

"So, you have no value left!"

Fang Yuan waved his palm and flames spread, burning a certain grudging soul into ashes. Fang Yuan's spiritual will even peeked

out to greedily devour all of the opponent's memories.

The technique Fang Yuan used was a dream master technique which forcefully extracted Thousand Rock Lord's life experiences.

In an instant, numerous scenes flashed in Fang Yuan's mind rapidly:

In front of a motley door on a mountain, an honest and sincere looking youth had knelt for three days and three nights. He was in yellowish brown clothes and he had a small frame.

"I must be accepted into Thick Earth Sect and become an immortal cultivator!"

The scene then changed. The youth went through numerous hardships and was finally accepted into the sect. His cultivation progressed rapidly and in mere 50 years, he was already at the peak, high above many. His gaze locked as he thought, "The flourish of spiritual energy would at most last a hundred years, once the millennial tribulation arrives, all disciples must immediately hibernate in the prosperous land and be subjected to the heavenly fate!"

In the next moment, after a millennium worth of vicissitudes, it was the beginning of a new era.

However, at that moment, the Middle Continent was in a downfall. Whereas, the East Continent and West Continent were favoured by the heavenly fate as the age of discovery soon began.

The middle-aged man was already gradually becoming older and weaker; he no longer had that energetic look in him as he thought, "No... although I had already broken through to the Divine Refining Grade and my cultivation is reaching the levels of the pioneers of the sect, under the tumultuous changes, everything would go down the drain? Even with 300 disciples and elders, I would be the only one left after 1,000 years and after yet another 1,000 years, who can still escape from mortality?"

At that moment, the Thousand Rock Lord's heart was filled with a fear of time.

In order to achieve longevity, Thousand Rock Lord researched the classics in his sect and swept through the records of cultivators. He secretly turned into a ruthless person that wiped out all resources in order to look for the methods to escape the tribulation of death.

"Haha... there's always a way out!"

Finally, in a declining small sect with a rich heritage, Thousand Rock Lord finally discovered the legend of the Spiritual Realm.

"As long as the Spiritual Realm is anchored on and the two worlds overlap, Planet Earth will definitely become the paradise of cultivators! It will allow us to breakthrough and achieve longevity!"

The Thousand Rock Lord was incredibly excited but was also filled with regret as it was too late. The Spiritual King Comet had long passed and the amounts of spiritual energy already began to drop. Thus, he no longer had the opportunity in this cycle.

Whereas, with his lifespan, he could not even live until the next cycle.

"Hate! Hate! Hate! Hate the heavens for being unjust! Hate the earth for being unfair!"

The Thousand Rock Lord was enraged. In the end, he did not care about the consequences and began killing many as a blood sacrifice in hopes of achieving contact with the faraway Spiritual Realm.

As he was closer to his deathbed, the Thousand Rock Lord's means became even crueller and he did not care about his own body at all.

He had some plans. Even if he was not successful in summoning the Spiritual Realm, he would not choose to seal and hibernate



himself at his last phase of life. He would forcefully break the world's membrane and fly into space in search of a lifeline in the space-time turbulence.

At last, heaven helped those who helped themselves.

Fang Yuan's expression became tenser as he watched the scene.

Space was broken and filled with the remains of living things, it was like the Asura hell. A giant mouth opened wide and greedily devoured everything.

"Spiritual Realm?"

Inside the Thousand Rock Lord's burning gaze, a mighty will suddenly descend.

As it was travelling across realms, this will did not stay for long. The will only left behind a message which said, "In order to open the two realms, everything must be obtained." The will was then immediately attacked by Planet Earth Realm and collapsed.

Just at the moment as the will collapsed, space and time warped and a bit of yellowish-brown coloured spiritual light was transferred over and landed on the ground. It immediately absorbed the essence of the ground and turned into a sparkling gemstone.

"This is... the core of the life of an elemental being? Haha!"

The Thousand Rock Lord held the crystal tightly and laughed maniacally, "With this, what is mortality to me? I just have to wait for the next millennium and I can definitely complete the grand plan of drawing over this Spiritual Realm and directly become a Sage!"

Afterwards, in order to complete his possession, the Thousand Rock Lord opened up a secret prosperous land with his Divine Refining Grade ability. This was because the process of possessing would cause him to become extremely weak and thus, he had to guard himself during this process.

Nevertheless, the Thousand Rock Lord's luck was pretty good. After he succeeded, he managed to live until now after all.

Although his magical powers had greatly fallen and he only had the abilities of a Divine Returning Grade cultivator due to the 1,000 years seal and possession process, as long as he was given another 1,000 years, he could definitely regain his original level of cultivation.

Hence, after the Thousand Rock Lord awakened his 4th Tier abilities, he could no longer bear it anymore. Thus, he sent his magical clones all over the world in preparation to receive the greatest reward from the Spiritual Realm.

However, he never expected to meet Fang Yuan, his killer who badly defeated him.

...

"What an unlucky fellow!"

The Thousand Rock Lord's memory was like a huge treasure chest. However, Fang Yuan did not want to delve deeper into it anymore.

This was because, in front of him, although the crystal was already pierced, it still completed some sort of sacrificial ritual due to what happened previously.

"Bang!"

The yellowish brown crystal exploded into powder. Concurrently, a giant crack in space appeared. It was pitch black inside and it was like hell as it devoured everything inside the small plane.

"Submit to me!"

"Offer the entire world to me and you will receive everything you want!"

"Rumble!"

At the same time, a mighty will suddenly descended! It was as though this will was extremely far away and separated by an unknown amount of light years. After it was transmitted here, it was still vast as ever and brought about a might so strong that it could crush everything.

"Submit!"

"Submit!"

"Submit!"

"Open up your heart and mind and accept the gift from the heavens!"

...

Waves of wills repeatedly crashed into Fang Yuan's heart.

Inside Fang Yuan's body, the originally immense spiritual force did not move at all. Instead, it was as though it was adding fuel to the fire.

At such a moment, Fang Yuan could only rely on his own personal will and spiritual will!

Thankfully, Fang Yuan was a dream master and traversed through numerous realms before. Therefore, he was very experienced in this area.

No matter how intense and fierce this will was, Fang Yuan's mind remained unwavering and still.

'It doesn't matter if you are the heavenly fate of another realm! A realm's will! By traversing across dimensions, your might will be greatly reduced! Furthermore, you will be counterattacked by this realm!'

Fang Yuan had some understanding of Planet Earth's heavenly fate too.

The physical laws of Planet Earth were harsh and thus, its fate was naturally hard to be discerned.

After all, fate represented divinity! In order to maintain the doomsday world, nature could not blatantly interfere. This was like how a king enacted laws; after the laws were put in place and became rules, even the king himself could not easily violate these laws.

However, just because it was not easy did not mean it could not be violated! It was a matter about whether the price was willing to be paid!

Furthermore, even though the emergence of spiritual energy brought about all these magical powers, to Planet Earth Realm's will, wasn't it removing its shackles?

Therefore, Fang Yuan was certain that since this Spiritual Realm's heavenly fate had already invaded Planet Earth and had already agitated the will of Planet Earth Realm. Thus, Planet Earth Realm's will become more vigilant and might even counterattack.

As long as Fang Yuan could withstand it for a short period of time, he would be perfectly fine and unscathed.

If Fang Yuan did not calculate and predict such, he would not have dared to suddenly attack Thunder Rock Lord and directly face this foreign will.

'But... there's something I can finally confirm, and that is the existence of the Spiritual Realm! This realm that is at a higher energy level than that of the Planet Earth Realm... it might even be at a higher dimension!'

Fang Yuan was extremely elated and excited inside his heart as he just unveiled the secrets of this realm.

Outside, after the will which was roaring at Fang Yuan saw how he remained steadfast, it suddenly changed.

Inside Fang Yuan's sea of consciousness, all sorts of seductions appeared one after another.

Mythical goddesses appeared and they were extremely gorgeous

and captivating. Fang Yuan felt as though he became a God and was worshipped by thousands of deities. Suddenly, Fang Yuan then felt his body had achieved eternity as he was immortal.

'Since the violent ways didn't work, it has turned to softer ways?'

A slight smile appeared on his lips. "Unfortunately, I'm a lone wolf! I only eat the prey I catch by myself! No matter how much you are willing to offer me, I don't want to lose my freedom!"

"Rumble!"

Moments later, everything in the surroundings disappeared.

Fang Yuan scanned all around him and felt uneasy at once, "Oh no!"

In what was originally the prosperous land, numerous cracks appeared in the skies and an annihilating storm raged. It was as though there was a wrathful and furious will outside that was breaking into the prosperous land and attacking the giant crack in the space inside.

"Kaboom!"

Under the roaring noises, a giant hole opened up in the prosperous land and revealed the dark clouds looming in the skies outside.

Numerous purple coloured lightning gathered that flashed amongst the grey clouds. There were like pairs of purple eyes that kept merging together.

Suddenly, the ground tremored and a green coloured flash of lightning landed.

"Oh no... this is violet coloured! It's violet lightning!"

Fang Yuan felt a chill down his spine. Even if the lightning was not targeting him, he still felt an impending sense of great danger that made him immediately ran for his life as fast as possible.

"Boom!"

Numerous cracks appeared on the cliffs outside and they suddenly exploded.

Under the loud explosion, Fang Yuan's ravaged silhouette could be seen escaping from it.

Fang Yuan turned back and saw the space quivering. He could vaguely see a hillside prosperous land that had countless holes in it. Green coloured lightning swept across crazily and was swarming towards that crack in mid-air.

In the next moment, an invisible force calmed everything. It was as though what Fang Yuan had seen just now was just an illusion.

"This realm's will had made its move and directly destroyed that prosperous land and obliterated that foreign will!"

Fang Yuan had some thoughts as he watched.

Planet Earth Realm's will had its homeground advantage while the opponent merely projected its will over. This projection was not even comparable to the true body of the will, thus, it would naturally be easily destroyed.

But what would happen if the two realms coincide and there were no more advantages?

# Chapter 449: The Encounter

---

"What... What's happening?"

Fang Yuan crossed his legs and sat on the ground. After regulating his breath for a moment, he noticed a streak of fire rushing towards him from the horizon. Xing Hezi's silhouette slowly appeared.

As soon as he found Fang Yuan, he waved his whisk. The power of the arena started to spread out. Darkness covered the skies and stars started to appear. "Do you have any explanation for this?"

"This person is spying on me and is trying to harm me. Therefore, I killed him! This is my explanation!"

Fang Yuan flew up into mid-air and snickered.

"Are you trying to oppose the Hidden Cultivators Sect?"

Xing Hezi glared at Fang Yuan.

"What do I have to gain if I oppose the Hidden Cultivators Sect? I am still supportive of Operation Grabstar."

Fang Yuan shrugged his shoulders. "All of this is because of the personal feud I have with the Thousand Rock Lord!"

After retrieving the Thousand Rock Lord's memories, Fang Yuan was enlightened about the existence of the Spiritual Realm. To the powerful beings of this realm, this was no secret.

Furthermore, those powerful beings who were able to attain the Divine Refining Grade were extremely rare. Most of them had, in one way or another, felt the will of the Spiritual Realm and might have even received assistance.

Even Fang Yuan had to fear if he were to go against such a powerful organisation.

"Personal feud?"

Xing Hezi was suspicious of Fang Yuan's excuse. However, his expression changed and the glitter from the stars around started to dim.

"That's right... I have discovered a shocking secret as well! This Thousand Rock Lord had another identity exactly one thousand years ago, and that is the Bloodied Demon!"

Fang Yuan's face was filled with a sense of justice. "This person has caused trouble then and is looking to create trouble now. I have killed him and he deserves it!"

With the Thousand Rock Lord's memories, it was extremely simple for Fang Yuan to accuse him of anything. Whatever Fang Yuan said would surely be the facts.

"Tsk... It's him!"

Xing Hezi appeared shocked and bowed towards Fang Yuan. "This Bloodied Demon has once wiped out 13 families and sacrificed hundreds of innocent citizens. Never would I have thought that he would become the Thousand Rock Lord. Brother, for helping us kill him, you will surely gain good karma!"

"It's nothing much..."

Fang Yuan acted humble but inside, he was chuckling.

How would the powerful beings of the Hidden Cultivators Sect not know about the Thousand Rock Lord's true identity?

Since they were all powerful beings, they would know that his lifespan would slowly decrease and he would soon lose all his spiritual energy. Therefore, they did not care much about him.

This was why Fang Yuan could bring this matter up in order to explain for his own actions.

To speak the truth, no matter how important Thousand Rock Lord was in the past, he was but a dead person now.

Would anyone be so dumb as to offend Fang Yuan, this Divine



Refining Grade cultivator over a dead person? Hehe... Fang Yuan was, after all, a person who had just killed another Divine Refining Grade cultivator and himself, unharmed! Would Xing Hezi think of becoming the next to be killed under Fang Yuan's hands?

Xing Hezi had no thoughts of offending Fang Yuan. Instead, he agreed to everything Fang Yuan said and started to criticize everything the Thousand Rock Lord did in the past.

"Brother Xing Hezi, don't worry! The damage to the array due to the death of Thousand Rock Lord will be rectified by me!"

There were no more problems as soon as Fang Yuan made this promise.

Both of them were on good terms before taking their leaves. However, their thoughts were entirely different from their attitude towards each other.

"Sigh... this is pitiful..."

Fang Yuan stood in mid-air, gazed at the blue sky and sighed.

Because of the traits of Planet Earth Realm, 99% of the powerful beings in the realm were ruthless and were ready to bring in a higher-tiered realm to coincide with their own realm without considering their own realm's will.

Planet Earth Realm's will must have felt so helpless, right?

To Fang Yuan, regardless whether the wills were strict or composed, they were all too predictable.

To an epiphanic realm, the will would surely be offended and would conjure lightning strikes to deal with these delinquents. Even if it was not able to destroy these rebels, it would still be able to keep them under control and warn anyone else who would harbour the same intentions of going against the realm.

However, Fang Yuan felt that Planet Earth's will was helpless, even more helpless than the will of Da Qian.

"It seems that the will of Planet Earth is stubborn... the powerful beings in the realm will not be dealt with if they do not explicitly display their intentions to oppose the will of the realm, and that is bad news for the realm... When they rebel and escape, I'm afraid it will be too late. What a pity..."

With a heavy heart, Fang Yuan returned to Huiming City and went to meet up with Xi Menjian.

"How's it?"

Xi Menjian wore a mysterious outfit of a servant and only came out to meet Fang Yuan at night.

As soon as he saw Fang Yuan, he became increasingly nervous.

He was still the weakest among all of them, to the extent where Xing Hezi would not even care about him. It could also be the fact that Xing Hezi was keeping him alive on Fang Yuan's behalf. Otherwise, he would not even be able to survive until now.

"I have visited most parts of Chinese Country. Life is scarce everywhere!"

Fang Yuan arrived at a secret room and sighed. "I have also looked into the various shelters within the array. Most of them are built for a defensive purpose and most of them are adapted a little. Therefore, it should not be built to destroy the city!"

Fang Yuan did not speak the entire truth.

"Is that so? Then that's good..."

Even so, he was still frowning.

He knew that although the array was not built for destructive purposes, it did not mean that it was entirely safe. In fact, Fang Yuan had already hinted to him about the usage of the array.

"The transference is almost complete. The wild animals out there should not be able to infiltrate the city..."

Xi Menjian mumbled to himself.

The plan which took ten years centred around the usage of these huge cities as bases. Now that the plan was in progress, it was almost impossible for the country to undergo any changes in the plan.

"Do you think we can only hope for them to be friendly towards us? Hehe... this is an irony!"

Xi Menjian laughed.

"We actually do have a plan!"

Fang Yuan smiled and revealed a mysterious look.

...

On the East Continent, in a church.

"This feeling..."

Sitting on a golden chair, Farquhar gazed towards the direction of the Middle Continent. "The will of the Spiritual Realm... is it here again?"

He walked out of the hall and gazed downwards.

Buildings were built around the Holy Mountain. It resembled a refugee camp as it was filled with people. Everything was chaotic.

All these people were loyal believers who lived under the Holy Mountain to receive blessings. They came from every part of the East Continent.

At the arrival of doomsday, even cults would be able to survive, what more for a Curia with a real god leading it?

Not just that, the disease which the 9 Headed Cerberus had spread throughout the continent had pushed many to lean towards the Curia as they seek for a cure.

At this point in time, governments were failing and the Curia had become the most powerful organisation of the East Continent. Even the Blue Star Alliance would have to rank second now.

"Mortals... Life is fleeting. In times of danger, people would not dare to hold on to positions of power and authority and would rather become cowards..."

Witnessing this scene, Farquhar was not too happy.

Among the many powerful beings, he was also on the side of humans for he had many human believers. However, all these were useless.

The reason for his existence was to increase the spiritual energy of Planet Earth.

Without the existence of spiritual droplets, his faith would not be able to gather so many followers, which would translate to his godly powers.

Therefore, even Farquhar had to be supportive of Operation Grabstar to lead both worlds into an overlap.

Of course, to the new powerful beings, Farquhar would not tell them the truth. He would only mention the Spiritual King Comet but would say nothing about the existence of the Spiritual Realm.

"This is a sign of the Spiritual King Comet! It is also a new beginning!"

"At the arrival of the fourth occurrence, where the Spiritual King Comet is the closest to Planet Earth, we can activate the array to commence the operation... This is only the first step. This is akin to aiming our harpoon at a whale in order to catch it. Next up, we will have to make use of the huge amount of energy which would arise from the occurrence of the Spiritual King Comet to break through the membrane in order to allow the Spiritual Realm to merge with Planet Earth... This is the true Operation Grabstar, the true aim of the Hidden Cultivators Sect!"

Farquhar continued to mumble to himself. "After merging the two realms, Planet Earth will retain its current condition and the spiritual energy in here will never go down. We can make use of

this accomplishment to gain recognition in order for the new realm to accept us!"

To Gods, recognition was power! Recognition was authority!

This was the reward the Spiritual Realm could give.

The will of the Spiritual Realm was different compared to that of Planet Earth's. It was much more flexible. If it were to recognise a powerful being, the being would become a god, the ultimate achievement rumoured in the legends from the East!

"Now... the will of the Spiritual Realm is about to arrive at the Middle Continent!"

Farquhar could feel that time was rushing.

Behind him, 3 bright wings were radiating as they started to absorb holy light around him.

Furthermore, the fourth pair of wings was illusionary and was about to form.

3 pairs of wings meant that a god would have a 4th Tier special ability.

4 pairs of wings meant that a powerful god would have the ability of a 5th Tier mutant!

In the East, this would be considered the Divine Refining Realm. A person of such power would be able to create a prosperous land, and the collective way to address such a person would be an Area Being!

"In crucial moments, the will of the Spiritual Realm would always appear to bring together the powerful beings of this realm... even the natives of this world, werewolves or even the 9 Headed Cerberus have once benefited from the powerful will of the Spiritual Realm. I wonder who is going to become stronger this time in the Middle Realm?"

Farquhar was lost in his thoughts. Behind him, the illusionary

pair of wings started to absorb the power of the faith. However, it still dissipated in the end. It was evident that Farquhar had yet to restore his full might.

Even so, he was still undoubtedly the most powerful being on Holy Mountain and the leader of all.

"I wonder who is here?"

The holy light illuminated the entire mountain. Farquhar felt a slight sense of fear as he detected the presence of another Area Being.

"You can call me... Extreme Darkness!"

The space around the holy mountain started to distort and a young and beautiful girl emerged and arrived before Farquhar. The pair of white and black wings behind her and her captivating beauty caused Farquhar to be in a trance.

In the next moment, Extreme Darkness spoke in a sweet voice. "I have brought my goodwill intentions as well as the friendship I have with the vampires and werewolves... Furthermore, I have a secret about this realm!"

# Chapter 450: Approaching

---

"A secret about this realm, this is interesting!"

Farquhar looked at the wing of darkness on the young girl and continued, "I don't have any animosity with the ancestors of those two races. The so-called battle between light and dark is merely a delusion of mortals..."

Farquhar paused for a moment and changed the conversation topic. "Of course, we're all at the same tier and I am still filled with respect. I wonder what are you going to tell me and what do you want in return for it?"

"The two ancestors of vampires and werewolves are willing to help you suppress the 9 Headed Cerberus as a token of sincerity."

Young Girl Extreme Darkness spoke in a very calm voice, "This is because the 9 Headed Cerberus is an agglomeration of utter chaos and destruction! Its existence will only bring trouble and impede the rest of us!"

"I fully agree with this point!"

Farquhar's face turned sombre but he still nodded his head.

Although they were all 4th Tier mutants too, after all, some living things could not be communicated with at all. They only knew how to cause destruction, wreak havoc and pursue death.

Unfortunately, the 9 Headed Cerberus was one such fabled creature.

Furthermore, its restoration and regeneration powers were extremely indomitable. Even if one of its head was chopped off, another head would grow out immediately. It caused a huge furore in the previous millennium and there were rumours that it created the Black Death which caused the death of countless people in East Continent.

It was unexpected that this 9 Headed Cerberus could survive till now even after being sealed by many other powerful beings.

Such a seal was to protect it, but to wear it down.

The fact that the 9 Headed Cerberus could withstand the seal for 1,000 years even when there was a lack of spiritual energy in the atmosphere made many deities afraid of it.

"And then... you all wouldn't be helping me for no reason, right?"

A golden glow was emitted from Farquhar's pupils.

"In return, I hope you can help me deal with someone in Middle Continent."

A slightly complex gaze flashed pass Young Girl Extreme Darkness' eyes as she spoke.

"Who is it? Your enemy?"

Farquhar was slightly interested.

After all, He was very clear about the origins of this Demon Weapon. He knew she was just 10 years old and other than being defeated badly once, she did not have any bad blood with anyone else.

"Sort of..."

The young girl waved her arms and a light screen appeared in mid-air. On the screen, there was a silhouette of a teenager which suddenly split into two, turning into Fang Yuan and Lei.

"The two of them are actually the same person, which is Fang Yuan!"

She pointed to Fang Yuan who was in a white coat and continued, "I was once badly defeated by his transformation, Lei! Thus, I hope I can receive your aid!"

"Although Middle Continent was downfalling in the recent millennium, it is still a continent with a rich history and heritage.



This is especially so regarding their cultivators and cultivation. Many deities were born on this continent and there were even many powerful gods who created dimensions... Even if only a few of them have survived, their strength is still extremely frightening..."

Farquhar continued, "One of their organisations, Hidden Cultivators Sect, is even trying to partner with the powerful beings of this entire world! I didn't agree to them... but, we do not have any differences nor ideological clashes with them. We even cooperated with them during the construction of the array."

"Even if the bunch of you are working towards the same goal, it is still important to have a clear leader among us!"

Extreme Darkness continued with an ulterior meaning in her words, "Why don't us non-cultivators form an alliance? Be it Operation Grabstar or the continued competition in the new world, we still need to be represented by an organisation for our voices to be heard!"

"This suggestion is not bad!"

Farquhar stroked a ring on his right finger as he thought.

"Once the alliance is formed, we need to sacrifice a powerful being in order to send a warning to the rest! And there's no better target for this than this person!" Extreme Darkness said gravely.

"Oh? Why?"

Farquhar seemed to be slightly surprised.

"Based on the latest intelligence, he has some disagreements and differences with Hidden Cultivators Sect due to some matters. If we make our move on him now, he would not be able to react quick enough to counterattack!"

The young girl smiled and added, "Furthermore... this Fang Yuan is not even 30 years old yet. He is the novice amongst novices and has no relationship with any godly or demonic level friends. His

own strength is very weak."

"Just these don't provide enough reason why you are going after him."

Farquhar lived for so many years and naturally accumulated extraordinary experiences and intelligence. "Also... the relationship between this Fang Yuan and Hidden Cultivators Sect is on the verge of breaking? But he isn't being punished for it? This means he must be possessing extraordinary power! You didn't tell me about this clearly."

"Not bad..."

The young girl gave a bitter laugh and replied, "This was because my information was not clear. I could not confirm it... but I know that he might have killed an important figure in Hidden Cultivators Sect."

"To be able to cause the death of someone as powerful as me, his strength is indeed terrifying!"

Farquhar shook his head and continued, "The cost of helping me seal the 9 Headed Cerberus is to face an even more terrifying presence. This is really not convincing at all."

"Thus, this is why I'm adding on a secret about this realm into the deal!"

A sly look suddenly appeared on Young Girl Extreme Darkness' face. "I wonder how you feel about this realm? Since there's a Spiritual Realm, could it be possible that there's another world?"

"Visitors from a foreign realm?"

The holy light in Farquhar's eyes almost condensed into solid as he scanned the young girl's body numerous times.

"Apologies, I cannot tell you more now. But that Fang Yuan is definitely not as simple as a normal genius... I wonder if you are interested to know more about it?"

The young girl looked at the seraph with great expectations.

"..."

Farquhar remained silent for a while before answering, "This lady, thank you for coming by here. But please return and rest first, I still need to carefully think about your offer."

"Okay!"

Young Girl Extreme Darkness bowed and was respectfully escorted out by the archbishop.

"Another new realm is discovered?"

Farquhar's eyes sparkled repeatedly.

The existence of the Spiritual Realm meant that other foreign realms possibly existed.

The unknown was very attractive to any intelligent living creature.

Furthermore, having the knowledge of another realm or even the choice of another realm was like having more cards up one's sleeve.

Such a temptation would be too hard to reject even for a God!

...

"Doesn't matter if one is a deity or an immortal cultivator, as long as they have the most basic emotions, they would be easily tempted!"

Inside a luxurious room, Young Girl Extreme Darkness gazed at the skies and suddenly smiled. "Unless... one becomes like the will of this realm which has no emotions and is at the state where its instincts are almost gone..."

Although she had already revealed some information, she had concealed more.

For example, the intelligence about that more powerful world in

her memory!

"Buzz!"

Suddenly, a jade pendant on her hand suddenly shined brightly. A voice came from it and asked, "How was it?"

"Everything went well!"

Extreme Darkness flicked her fingers. A light and dark enchantment immediately appeared and enveloped the entire room.

"Very good... I can't believe you have such luck to obtain the inheritance of something from other worlds! When the opportunity arises in the future, please teach me about it!"

This voice was transferring over a thought which could not be misinterpreted.

"I merely received some foreign spirituality. From this angle, both of us are the same kind of person, only that Fang Yuan is the one that is truly different!"

Extreme Darkness replied in a solemn manner.

"Of course, those who are not our kin are sure to be different!"

The voice from the jade pendant was sharp and decisive, "You all can take the plunge and do whatever you all want, I will help you keep everything stable at Hidden Cultivators Sect's side."

Moments later, the communication disconnected. A cold smile appeared on Extreme Darkness' face as she thought, "Yet another shady guy, greed will be your cardinal sin!"

...

Huiming City.

"The overall plans are already laid out! We can only silently wait for the arrival of the Spiritual King Comet!"

Fang Yuan laid on a chair and watched the skies quietly. "Even

I... eagerly wish to see all of this unfold. Just that..."

As a dream master, a sudden warning suddenly emerged inside his heart that kept lingering inside his mind which represented some sort of immense danger.

"Although the Hidden Cultivators Sect does not have a good impression of me, after settling it with Xing Hezi, no one would go after me... the amount of benefits they would gain for the amount of effort needed to take me down is just not worth it."

"Whereas, for the other two continents, I don't really have any nemeses..."

"Am I targeted by the will of Spiritual Realm? No, it can't even target me! The time is not ripe yet. If it forcefully comes for me, it would be attacked by this world's realm..."

"Then... where exactly is the danger from?"

Fang Yuan stroked his chin and began to eliminate the options.

At his position and strength, there were not many people in this entire realm that could pose a threat to him. After Fang Yuan eliminated them one by one, the most inconspicuous ones became the largest possibility.

"Other dream masters? Or could it be Elder Extreme Darkness?"

The coordinates of this realm were directly displayed on the Realm Alliance's mission board. As long as one's level of rights and position was high enough, any dream master could obtain it and come over to this realm.

Of course, with a big war impending and with the dangers of this realm, not many dream masters would dare to traverse to this realm.

Therefore, the most likely dream master would then be Elder Extreme Darkness!

After suffering such great losses the previous time, how could she

not come back for revenge?

Even if she was not back to take her revenge, she could still silently observe to prepare for her comeback.

Perhaps she might not come over personally, but she could still easily post new missions and command her disciples to come over.

"Lorita!"

As Fang Yuan thought of such, he did not hesitate anymore and immediately stood up.

"Adoptive father! What's the matter?"

Lorita came over and bowed.

"Immediately mobilise your people in Golden Eagle Federation to collect and send over all information about that Demon Weapon! Especially the recent ones !"

When Fang Yuan spared the life of the Demon Weapon that time, it was for him to have a clear target this time!

After all, the Demon Weapon was a cloned body and had sufficient powers. If Elder Extreme Darkness were to really come to this realm, it would definitely choose to possess that body to save a lot of trouble.

Fang Yuan had sent people to spy on it. As long as he were to compare the current Demon Weapon to the past, he would have a clue.

"Understood!"

Seeing Fang Yuan's serious expression, Lorita did not behave cheekily anymore and immediately agreed with a serious tone.

Fang Yuan's gaze deepened as he watched Lorita leaving.

The experiment in this realm was related to the future of Da Qian. It was a preview! Thus, Fang Yuan paid close attention to it and would not hesitate to eliminate any interference, even

including Elder Extreme Darkness!

# Chapter 451: Combined Ambush

---

Considering one's resources, Fang Yuan could only be considered average.

However, his early preparations with the support of Chinese Country and the fact that he had only focused his efforts on spying on the Demon Weapon resulted in him getting quite a lot of information regarding the Demon Weapon.

At this point in time, he held a few photographs in his hands. They were the images of the Demon Weapon's encounter with the Sea Dragon King. There was also news that she had visited East Continent and her whereabouts were unknown.

According to the spies from Golden Eagle Federation, The Demon Weapon's intelligence had shot up and was already out of control. It was now an unstable factor.

"Hmm... It seems that even if communication is being cut, the big countries will still be able to communicate with each other!"

Reading the documents in his hands, Fang Yuan scoffed. "Ye Yingzi and Zhao Daniu are unable to obtain this information because their authorities are too low!"

"Furthermore... It seems like someone has taken up the bait. Is it Elder Extreme Darkness?"

Fang Yuan was unsure of this.

After all, any dream masters from his own world would be free to possess the Demon Weapon. This is seen in the Ancient Realm where the water demon Wu Zhiqi could be possessed by Xiang Liu. As long as Extreme Darkness approved of it, anyone would be able to control her body.

"Regardless, everyone has their own style of doing things. Since there are changes now, even the dumb ones would be able to tell that something has changed..."



Although the dream masters from the Realm Alliance were considered to be on the same side as Fang Yuan, no one could be absolutely sure.

"I've plotted for this for such a long time. How can someone else come in and disrupt everything just like that? Even if Elder were to re-enter the realm, I wouldn't think that she will be able to disrupt my plans... Furthermore, if dream masters are to enter the realm, they should actively try and communicate with me. Such suspicious actions will only make me suspect their intentions!"

Fang Yuan sighed before smiling. "The enemy is in the dark and I am in the open. The situation is disadvantageous to me and the solution would be to turn the tables around!"

...

After a few days, on the surface of the ocean in the East.

There were a few spots of glitter which swiftly transformed into the silhouette of Farquhar and two other people.

Farquhar had his 6 wings behind him while the two others beside him had mysterious spiritual auras. One of them had a pale skin, purple hair and bloodshot eyes. He had the vibes of a leader of a particular tribe. The other person was a well-built man with a rough spiritual aura resembling a wild beast.

"Chinese Country... It is an unbelievable country!"

The golden sparks gathered together as Farquhar closed his eyes. With that, he could sense the current situation in Middle Continent before speaking with excitement. "The adaptability of this country is much stronger than other countries! It is still able to preserve some of its elemental energy!"

Golden Eagle Federation was barely surviving while the Blue Star Alliance had already announced their disbanding. Comparatively, Chinese Country was doing good.

"That's right... I can sense the blood of the people here. They are

good food for us..."

The pale and respectable looking man had his purple and gold hair stretching to his waist. He struck fear in those who heard him speak.

"Curtly, don't think of spreading your seeds here. After all, this place is the territory of the Hidden Cultivators Sect!"

The beastly man beside him exclaimed.

"Jon is right. As of now, we cannot offend the Hidden Cultivators Sect!"

Farquhar spoke solemnly before starting to raise suspicion. "I wonder... What did Extreme Darkness give the both of you to get you two to help out?"

"Hehe..."

Both of them exchanged glances and remained silent.

Even though they were allies now and even worked together to capture the 9 Headed Cerberus, they were still Dark First Ancestors and could not coexist with Farquhar.

How would they tell him such an important piece of news?

"It's nothing much. Lady Demon Weapon has admired us and gifted to us a technique on harnessing the essence of the sun and the moon..."

After a long silence, Curtly spoke. "You know about it... We are always interested in the cultivation techniques of the Middle Continent. However, those crazy people from the Hidden Cultivators Sect could not provide us with a suitable technique to train. Who would've thought that a lady like her could help us solve our problem."

"After all, she has the knowledge of another world, even though it might be incomplete."

The werewolf beside them licked his lips. "Now, we have to help

Extreme Darkness to kill Fang Yuan. This person is not like Extreme Darkness. He is an otherworldly demon and we might even be able to obtain coordinates of another world from him..."

Although both of them were clear about Operation Grabstar, they were even clearer about the risks of this operation.

After all, not every plan would be able to have a 100% success rate.

Even though they would be able to increase the spiritual energy of Planet Earth to maintain its level at the peak throughout, they did not mind looking for a backup plan.

For instance... the coordinates of another world!

With that, even if they were to encounter any disasters, they would be able to learn from the Jade Palace Faction to live in the fabric of the space-time continuum.

Furthermore, with the coordinates, it would serve as a lighthouse in the dark, guiding them forward and allowing them to proceed on feeling much safer.

"I have once seen Fang Yuan before and it was just after the third occurrence... At that time, he was still in his other form, 'Lei', and was the number one mutant in the world! Needless to say, this person gives me a mysterious vibe... It seems as though I am able to see through him and at the same time unable to understand his thoughts. He is like an ancient book. With every page, I will discover more information and will seem to wander further and further from understanding his true self."

Farquhar felt a little confused.

In their discussion, the three of them transformed into asteroids as they infiltrated Chinese Country.

"This is great!"

Curtly scanned the surroundings and felt pleased. "We have not

been stopped since we entered the country. It seems like they have kept their promise and that we have indeed gained the recognition from the Hidden Cultivators Sect!"

"Hehe... it is but a small bunch of people!"

The werewolf started to lick his white fangs. "The few of them are surely at odds with Lei but they want to act aloof and ride on our power."

"Most importantly, they want to obtain the secret as to how Lei managed to improve his cultivation in such a short period of time!"

Farquhar added on.

Everyone would suspect a normal person who would be able to become so powerful in such a short period of time.

This is especially so for someone who was able to achieve the Divine Returning Grade after the second occurrence to have the ability of a 4th Tier mutant and to be known as the number one mutant in the world.

Such a progress could not be explained by the mere possession of an otherworldly demon.

If it was as such, if the outside world were to keep releasing their demons, Planet Earth would be incapable of any resistance.

"Hehe... It seems like in this operation, we not only have to be wary of Extreme Darkness and the Golden Eagle Federation, the greatest problem could be from the old demons of the Hidden Cultivators Sect!"

From the Vampire's First Ancestor's laughter, a stronghold appeared before them.

The stronghold was built from metal and was as tall as 10 metres. The top of the wall was filled with machine guns and cannons and the entire stronghold resembled a huge armour.

"Look at this stronghold. It seems like preparations to build it

have begun 10 years ago?"

Witnessing this, Farquhar sighed. "If the government of the alliance have such efficiency, I believe that so many lives in the Blue Star Alliance could be saved."

"Extreme Darkness! How's it?"

The three of them stopped and shouted as a beautiful young lady appeared before them. The black and white wings were glowing brilliantly.

"I have snuck into the city and have confirmed his location."

As Extreme Darkness spoke, she had an uneasy look. "However, something feels weird. He is always in his bungalow and rarely left it..."

"Isn't this good?"

The Werewolf's First Ancestor, Jon, started to reveal a layer of white hair as he slowly transformed into a wolf. He could not wait to take action.

However, Farquhar and Curtly started to hesitate. "Considering his ability, even if you use your most skilful ability to traverse through space, he should still be able to detect you. If this is how things are, then it seems that something is wrong."

"Who cares? No matter how scheming a plan would be, under absolute strength and power, any plan would crumble... our collective power should be able to overpower Fang Yuan, for he is a lone person. Even if he managed to kill Thousand Rock Lord, he could only at most deal with two of us. We will still have the advantage!"

At this point in time, Farquhar was resolute.

"That's right... if we let him off, we might be giving him more opportunities to do whatever he wants!"

Extreme Darkness was also clear on this. "I only have scattered

memories from a foreign world. However, that otherworldly demon is completely foreign. After a period of time, he will surely grow stronger."

After the 4 powerful beings had come to a conclusion, it seemed as though a disaster was about to strike Huiming City.

"Squeak! Squeak!"

The first one to take action was the Vampire's First Ancestor. Under his control, the clear skies became covered with red-hued clouds. Black bats started to descend and circle the bungalow as they hungrily searched for their prey.

"Rumble!"

In the next moment, a holy light descended from the heavens. Angels were singing hymns and a huge cross appeared in the sky. Like a holy sword, it struck towards the bungalow.

There was a faint howl of a wolf as well, and a streak of white light struck down like an asteroid.

"Enraging Dark Winds, rage on!"

Compared to all of them, Extreme Darkness was much more well-versed in her skills.

Compared to how she had blindly used all her new abilities in the beginning, the current Extreme Darkness now knew how to harness her power properly. With a simple wave of her hand, dark winds started to form and the faint cries of grieving souls could be heard.

The ground shook and water gushed from the cracks on the ground, forming a strong current of water which swept everything into it.

Such a combined attack which complemented the three other attacks would push their destructive power to a maximum.

The combination of wind and water displayed her versatility in

controlling her powers.

"Rumble!"

Under all the attacks, the bungalow could not even hold on for a single second. With that, it crumbled almost instantaneously.

The vibrations from the explosion and crumbling spread far and wide, and many other buildings were affected as well.

"Ahwooooo!"

Jon transformed into a white-haired wolf. His body broke the sound barrier as he pounced forward towards a particular silhouette.

"Chiii!"

The silhouette did not resist at all. It started to crumble and disintegrated, which disappointed Extreme Darkness. "Indeed..."

# Chapter 452: The Chase

---

A truly powerful being would not be destroyed in a single werewolf swipe.

"Magical clone? Illusionary shadow?"

In mid-air, Curtly's voice spread throughout the entire city before he remained silent. "This is troubling..."

Although they were all powerful beings, it was not an easy task to locate someone in their vast world.

"This technique of magical clone is extremely powerful!"

Farquhar saw the other side of it. "His demonic prowess is indeed powerful to be able to go undetected under the Hidden Cultivators Sect and even under you, Extreme Darkness!"

"Ahwooo!"

As the howl of a wolf was heard, Jon's hair retracted and he transformed back into a well-built man. He gazed at Extreme Darkness with an impatient look. "All of this is due to your inaccuracy!"

"That's right, even I cannot distinguish between him and his magical clone..."

Extreme Darkness let out a bitter laugh.

At that moment, all of them were sure that Fang Yuan was in the bungalow.

If not, why would all of them use their killer moves? However, gazing at the Huiming City which was destroyed, the 4 powerful beings remained silent.

"What about..."

The Vampire's First Ancestor, Curtly spoke. "Do you think it will work if we capture his family members and friends to threaten



him? I've heard that he has two adopted daughters..."

"Or we could announce our challenge to him. If he doesn't appear, we can kill our way city by city!"

The werewolf gazed at the bloodied city and was already in a state of excitement.

"That's impossible!"

Extreme Darkness thought for a while before shaking her head. "Since he has already escaped, it must mean that he has already expected us. By now, he would have moved his family members or even cut ties with them. Even if we torture his daughters in front of him, he would not waver the slightest bit."

"It is even more impossible to kill entire cities!"

Farquhar raised his objection. "If we were to repeat what we have done previously, we will surely attract the attention of the Hidden Cultivators Sect."

"Who's that?"

"Evacuate the people and activate the army!"

...

At this point in time, the people started to become aware of the commotion. A few mutants rose up into the air and appeared as though they were willing to fight with their lives.

They knew that they were up against powerful beings who could destroy entire cities and that they did not stand any chance against these beings!

However, for their families and friends, or even for their faiths, they had to fight.

"Don't overdo it!"

Seeing this, Farquhar's expression changed. "After all, the array is still here!"

"Hehe... don't worry!"

Curtly was displeased at the fact that they had used all their powers but to no avail. With a chuckle, a dark-red cloud hovered in the sky before descending down, trapping a few unlucky ones in it. Not long after, cries of sorrow were heard.

"Rumble!"

Soon after, a few black dots appeared on the horizon. They were fighter jets flying towards the city at full speed.

"Could they be carrying atomic bombs with them?"

Witnessing this scene, Jon's eyes turned bloodshot and his expression turned into a ferocious one. "I've always wanted to test the limits of my regenerative powers!"

"It's impossible!"

Extreme Darkness shook her head. "Not everyone is as crazy as you to test their limits. They would not abruptly attack us, even after considering about the citizens in the city!"

"What should we do?"

Farquhar frowned.

The four of them had combined forces this time, but none of them would have considered that they would end up in such an awkward situation.

In fact, they were all highly skilled in skills, predictions or even techniques to search people.

However, Fang Yuan was too cautious and did not leave any traces behind for them to search for him.

Now that he had covered all his traces up, the four of them had no luck even after performing their spells and techniques.

"Extreme Darkness... Since things have developed to such a stage, we shall leave first!"

After a long while, Farquhar gazed at the three of them and spoke.

This lady had once helped them to capture the 9 Headed Cerberus and had constantly provided them with benefits, which made them agree to help her out for once.

However, none of them had expected that their enemy would disappear just like that.

"Beautiful lady, don't you worry. We will stick to our promises!"

Curtly continued. "As long as you discover traces of the enemy, you just need to inform us and we will arrive in the quickest possible time!"

"Whoosh!"

As soon as he finished his sentence, he exploded into countless blood-hued bats which flew into the sky towards the East.

"I'm sorry, I cannot leave the Holy Mountain for too long as well!"

Seeing this, Farquhar shrugged his shoulders and left with Werewolf Jon.

"D\\*mn!"

Witnessing their departure, Extreme Darkness gritted her teeth.

She continued to wait in her spot in anticipation, even until the sun had set. Only then did she unwillingly left. Before leaving, she gazed in a certain direction as though she was warning somebody.

"Hehe..."

In a few moments, Xing Hezi's silhouette appeared as he shook his head. "Four highly skilled cultivators in the Divine Returning Grade and they are still no match to a puppet. This is a joke... It's a pity that the fight did not start. Also, it seems that that lady is still too inexperienced..."

By waiting, Extreme Darkness must have been trying to bait Fang Yuan out.

The 3 of them, being cunning, would surely be hiding somewhere and were creating an act to lure Fang Yuan out to deliver a killer blow to him if he were to appear.

It was obvious that this plan had failed since Fang Yuan had decided to be a coward.

"This lady doll is ruthless..."

Xing Hezi sighed as he gazed at the destructive scene. "Fortunately, they did not destroy the foundation of the array. After this blood sacrifice, we have enough grieving souls to allow the array to regenerate itself if it was destroyed. The array eye will mature without any complications."

"However... this Fang Yuan..."

Even Xing Hezi himself had a fear for Fang Yuan.

His secret identity as a suspected otherworldly demon was only one of the worries.

More importantly, Fang Yuan had displayed his attitude of not conforming to any rules.

Thousand Rock Lord had only spied on him once but was killed soon after. This time, against 4 powerful beings, Fang Yuan knew how to hide and react to anything that would happen.

Such a person was akin to a poisonous snake! If the snake was not killed in a single blow, complications would arise!

'Since this is so, I shall not go after the two adopted daughters. I shall leave this to others!'

Xing Hezi thought to himself for a moment before whipping his whisk. With that, night came and the stars glittered brilliantly in the night sky.

"The mortals are stupid and I am here to save the world!"

With a cold laugh, he executed a special technique before stretching forward.

"Rumble!"

The power of the stars descended and everywhere shook.

...

"This is weird!"

In the prosperous land of the Jade Palace Faction, Fang Yuan opened his eyes and started to suspect something. "It seems like... it is not Elder Extreme Darkness!"

Although Fang Yuan was confident of his own ability to conceal himself, he was wary of the fact that his enemy might be an elder in the Illusionary Divine stage. Her powers were limitless and if she was desperate enough, she could surely find her way to Fang Yuan.

Therefore, Fang Yuan had chosen the prosperous land as the place for the final showdown.

With the foundation laid out by the Jade Palace Faction, Fang Yuan had adapted it to create a few powerful arrays. If he were to activate all of them at one go, the enemy would surely be caught off guard.

Furthermore, there was also a secret tunnel which he could control at will to use it to attack or defend.

"But now... none of them are here. What in the world is happening?"

Fang Yuan was dissatisfied at the fact that all his planning had come to a nought.

"The Spying Eye outside did not detect anything as well. It seems like this Extreme Darkness is not actively looking for others, but is unable to find me..."

Fang Yuan rubbed his chin and felt at a loss. "Could Elder really

be this weak? Or could it be... that I am scaring myself, and that she did not even dream-traverse here in the first place?"

"If that is the case..."

To this point, he came to a decision. Swiftly, he left the prosperous land and rushed towards the West Continent at full speed.

...

After a few months.

On the ocean surface just next to the Golden Eagle Federation, two streaks of light were flying at top speed.

"She is indeed not Extreme Darkness!"

Fang Yuan turned into a streak of lightning and his intent to kill was locked on the silhouette in front of him.

He had secretly arrived at Golden Eagle Federation and snuck into the government to wait. With a little patience and spells, he finally found traces of the Demon Weapon.

With that, his next cause of action was to directly strike her with a bolt of lightning.

Never would he have thought that as soon as he appeared, the other party would start to flee. This did not feel like Elder Extreme Darkness at all.

"Fang Yuan, I know... You are that otherworldly demon which everyone in our world hates!"

Extreme Darkness fled as she continued to speak. "I have already notified the alliance members of the Demon Alliance. They will come here as soon as they can. Once you are being surrounded, you will surely be killed."

Regardless of how she threatened Fang Yuan, Fang Yuan continued to chase her without giving her even a moment to breathe.

"You know my identity and you are skilled in a few weird secret spells. It seems like you are still the Demon Weapon I know. However, you have obtained a few memories and benefits after all these years... To speak the truth, I admire you for the fact that you are able to fight back."

Fang Yuan was starting to feel interested towards this young girl.

It would be a feat for Extreme Darkness to re-enter the realm, execute her plan and turn out victorious.

Furthermore, after destroying her spirit, Fang Yuan would be able to absorb some of the Demon Weapon's memories. Even if Extreme Darkness were to seal some of these memories, they would be parts where Fang Yuan would be interested in.

Furthermore, this young lady had the clone body of Extreme Darkness and even parts of Extreme Darkness's soul. What would this mean? This would mean that she would be almost identical to the actual Elder Extreme Darkness, like a magical clone out of control!

If Fang Yuan could control this magical clone, he would be able to obtain a lot of valuable information and secrets! If he were to bring these pieces of information back to Da Qian, he could even have the chips to bargain and deal with Elder Extreme Darkness.

"The bait which I have put in place has worked now that I have attracted such a huge fish."

As waves of spiritual energy rolled across the surface of the ocean, Fang Yuan was filled with satisfaction.

"Roar! Roar!"

At this point in time, a dragon's roar was heard from a distance ahead, and Extreme Darkness appeared relieved.

# Chapter 453: Capture

---

"Sea Dragon King?"

Under the extreme speed, Fang Yuan could already feel an enormous spiritual aura in front of him.

Winds raged and clouds loomed as the contemptuous aura of a king could be felt.

Such a feeling was very familiar to Fang Yuan.

The emergence of a water dragon would bring about crazed winds and rain!

The support that was rushing over towards Fang Yuan was the king of the deep seas, Sea Dragon King!

"Even if every member of the Demon Alliance is present, I will still not let you off!"

Nevertheless, the glow in Fang Yuan's eyes became more resolute. He then suddenly stepped forward violently.

"Hruuu! Hruuuuu!"

Spiritual energy swept across as though it became a windstorm.

Extreme Darkness turned around and felt as though she saw a black hole.

"Rumble!"

Suddenly, the black hole broke apart and a giant silhouette stepped out.

He was extremely tall, huge and had strong muscles. It was as though he came from the wilderness as he was very rough looking and his body was violet in colour. He suddenly hollered, "Zha!"

Sonic waves swept across!

This one word of his was like the first voice that created the heavens and earth; it was extremely terrifying.



The rough waves on the seas calmed down at once. Even the clouds in the skies scattered as though they were scared.

Enormous! Pangu Eagle Body!

This was of course not the real body of a True Divine martial artist, but with Fang Yuan's strength now, it was already extremely close to his original body in his own world. Such a body being displayed was still incredibly awe-inspiring and formidable.

"No! The unity of light and dark, Mandala Enchantment, seal it!"

Young Girl Extreme Darkness saw the giant extend his hand and his fingers were like five mountains that crushed her. An extremely horrified and panic-stricken look appeared on her face and she immediately bit the tip of her tongue. Her face became red and she started casting her spell.

On her right hand, a holy light mandala appeared which was radiating a pure and holy white-coloured glow. On her other hand, it was extraordinarily dark and gloomy as it formed a queen of the night flower that looked like it came from hell.

Suddenly, the two light and dark flowers merged together and gave birth to something chaotic. The two forces from the extremes clashed together and immediately opened up an inexplicable and indescribably powerful enchantment that was enveloping towards the giant hand.

"Very good!"

Fang Yuan chuckled.

Extreme Darkness did not waste away time. After she conquered this otherworldly body, it was as though her misfortune turned into good luck as she gained substantial benefits.

Furthermore, just with the large amounts of techniques and experiences left behind by Elder Extreme Darkness were enough for her to progress tremendously.

However, the body she possessed would seal off and destroy its important memories if it was defeated. Hence, this young girl did not obtain much and this explained why the enchantment appeared rather incomplete and deformed.

"If she really continues to grow further, she would be unstoppable since her body's physique was already not bad and she was further supplemented by the experiences from another world."

As Fang Yuan thought, his expression became extremely stern. The giant he transformed as then roared furiously again, "Roar!"

"Smack!"

In the enchantment of light and dark, even if the Five Fingers Mountain descended from the heavens, it would be sealed in the void too.

However, moments later, Young Girl Extreme Darkness' face changed drastically.

After she harnessed all of her strength, the attack merely sealed off one of the opponent's..... palm? Furthermore, the feeling it gave her was like as though she was catching a great white shark with a normal fishing net as the opponent could easily break free from it.

"Run!"

In that instant, the young girl made up her mind and fled towards the Sea Dragon King. She was very regretful.

If she knew Fang Yuan was so powerful, she would not have made enemies with him.

'Aren't people from other worlds who visit our world suppressed and restrained? Also... from the memories, this Fang Yuan isn't really someone to be afraid of...'

'Why... is it still like this?'

The young girl was incredibly puzzled.

"Kaboom!"

However, Fang Yuan gave her no chances.

Accompanied by a raging roar, lightning flashed crazily in the skies and struck all at once, tearing apart the light and dark enchantment.

The lightning bolts surrounded the giant hands like two dragons swimming around it. The giant hand then grabbed the lightning bolts again.

The enchantment broke and along with the power of the lightning escaping from it, it immediately caused Young Girl Extreme Darkness' face to turn ashen at once. Fresh, red blood then spewed out from her face as if she was a plum.

"Stop!"

"Sploosh!"

At last, the seas raged and a 100-yard-long blue water dragon charged out from it.

"No one can stop me from doing what I want to do! Scram!"

The Pangu Giant hollered and struck out his other fist.

"Splash!"

Water splashed everywhere as a fist landed on the seas. Its strength was like an entire mountain and brought about an indomitable might.

"Bang!"

Under the fist, even the 100-yard-long water dragon was sent flying back. The layers of water on its body were shattered one by one.

"No!"

Extreme Darkness' gaze was filled with despair. The giant

lightning hand went for her without hesitation and sealed off the void at the same time. She could not even teleport away and was grabbed by the hand tightly.

"Kaboom!"

In the next instant, lightning flashed and brought about great pain and anguish to the young girl. Her body was now covered in large patches of burnt marks and even her bones and internal organs could be seen. She was then continuously restoring and regenerating her own body.

"Seal!"

After such great destruction, all the lightning bolts gathered and condensed into a lightning chain that entered the young girl's body. It then turned into a seal and immediately disappeared.

The young girl immediately lost her consciousness.

"You... humans! You have really enraged me!"

"Roar!"

The surface of the sea which was filled with rough waves immediately turned pitch black.

The currents moved continuously and brought about huge waves that were more than 10 yards tall. On the crest of the wave, the blue water dragon emerged from it. It had a single horn on its forehead, dragon claws on its abdomen and a plain looking dragon tail. It then began stirring waves.

"Hehe... a cross-bred water dragon dares to call itself the Sea Dragon King?"

Fang Yuan scanned the dragon with his eyes and revealed a disdainful look.

As Fang Yuan was a water dragon before, he could naturally feel that although this blue-coloured water dragon's power might have been higher than his own, its bloodline was not pure. Thus, it was

not even comparable to his golden water dragon transformation and not to mention, a true dragon.

Such a dragon that dared to call itself the Sea Dragon King would be killed and shredded into pieces if it really met a true dragon.

A dragon's temperament was haughty.

As it saw Fang Yuan's disdainful look, the Sea Dragon King seethed with anger even more. It then violently opened its mouth.

"Whoosh!"

A beam of cold blue coloured light gathered in front of its body and immediately landed on the giant's body.

Freezing weather! Snow during summer!

In an instant, an extremely frosty feeling swarmed the area. The vast ocean turned into solid ice and encased the giant in it, becoming an ice statue.

The blue water dragon swam about and turned into a stream of blue light. It then arrived in front of the giant and swung its tail.

The water dragon had never hoped to freeze the giant to death directly, it only wanted to restrict the giant's movement for a more convenient attack.

"Smack!"

A divine dragon tail's smack would be nothing short of a thousand tonnes!

However, even though the shockingly immense strength landed on the giant's body, it only made the ice in front of its chest shatter. The giant's broad and sturdy chest was revealed and he did not even move back a single step nor flinch.

"How could it be?"

Seeing such, the Sea Dragon King finally let exclaimed in shock, "How could your body be so strong?"

As a mutated beast, its advantage against humans was its body that was tougher than steel. As the apex of mutated beasts in the ocean, the Sea Dragon King was very confident of its dragon body. It would never have imagined such an attack of his would be so useless and it could even feel slight pain from its dragon tail.

"Hmph, you're ignorant!"

Fang Yuan sneered.

The most powerful thing Fang Yuan had currently was his martial artist divine body of Pangu Eagle Body. Even though he was only showcasing a small bit of it, it could rival any ferocious beasts in this realm.

Under the attack just now, he even had the strength to protect the fainted Extreme Darkness who was inside his hand.

"Oh? Looks like the reinforcements are here!"

Fang Yuan looked at the prey in his hand. He then announced loudly, "I am a very fair person. Since you attacked me once just now, I will counterattack you once! If you can block it, you live! If you can't, you die!"

"How brazen!"

Sea Dragon King was fuming. Layers of sturdy ice appeared on its body and transformed into a solid defence.

At the next moment, it saw a fist smashing towards it.

What kind of tyrannical punch was that?

It was as though the punch opened the skies and split the earth, separated the good and bad, and crushed everything in front it. Against this fist, it was like going against an entire world!

This was a punch that was exceedingly close to the power of an area!

"Ahh!"

As the Sea Dragon King roared, blood oozed out from each and every scale on its body. The gigantic bloodied dragon dived into the sturdy ice which formed the strongest defence.

"Rumble!"

In the next instant.

The fist landed and the sturdy ice was crushed. It even forced apart the seawaters and revealed unseen pieces of land that were submerged for aeons.

How could the might of a fist be this powerful?!

...

Moments later, a stream of holy light and a stream of bloody light arrived. As they looked at the ravaged surroundings, they had the same astonished looks on their face.

"Could Area Beings be... fighting here before?"

Farquhar mumbled.

Faced with such a scene, anyone would have thought of that possibility.

"Where's blue dragon? It can't be dead, right?"

Curtly looked at the large pool of fresh blood on the ocean and was salivating. He almost could not stop himself from guzzling it.

"Such precious dragon blood shouldn't be wasted!"

Curtly's eyes turned blood-red like a shiny crystal and a force of his mind emerged.

Streaks of blood were drawn out from the waters as he easily separated the seawaters from it. The streaks of blood then gathered in front of him and formed a large ball of blood. Its surface was uneven and a tinge of gold colour could be seen too.

"Tsk tsk... what unadulterated dragon blood! Such a beautiful wine should be enjoyed during the grandest feast..."

The vampires' first ancestor muttered.

"Curtly! If you dare to do that, I guarantee you I will eat you up! I swear!"

"Sploosh!"

A portion of the sea split apart and the blue dragon king emerged from it.

However, it was now miserable and wretched looking. Not only were its scales broken and its dragon claws cracked, there was even a giant hole near its waist that went through its body. It was almost severed it into two halves.

"We received the call for help from Extreme Darkness and immediately rushed over! It was Fang Yuan, right?"

Farquhar waved his hand. A streak of holy light descended and sped up the healing of the water dragon's wounds.

"It's him indeed! That person... that person..."

The blue dragon king muttered and a look of fear appeared inside his giant dragon eyes.

"Not only are his spiritual techniques powerful, his physical body is not like that of a normal person too... He had already captured and brought away Extreme Darkness."

Although Farquhar and Curtly had already guessed and expected such, hearing it still caused them to heave a chilly sigh.

"You all can do whatever you all want to do by yourselves! I wouldn't be interfering anymore!"

The Sea Dragon King hollered. Its body then shrank into an appearance similar to that of a fish before it dove into the deep seas and disappeared.



# Chapter 454: Magical Clone

---

"Where is... this?"

As soon as the young Extreme Darkness came to, she realised that she was already in a palace-looking building.

There were four white tall pillars around. Chains stretched from the pillars and restrained her in the middle.

"Don't try to struggle!"

Before her, Fang Yuan stood calmly. "I have already cast an array which will deplete the spiritual droplets around you, and another array outside. Even a Divine Returning Grade being will find it hard to escape."

"What do you want to do with me?"

Extreme Darkness quickly evaluated the situation she was in and calmly spoke to Fang Yuan in an attempt to discuss the conditions. "I know... you are not a powerful being in your own world. In my consciousness, I have a lot of memories and I can trade them with you... no! As long as you don't kill me, I can give all of these to you!"

"I am indeed interested in all these information. However, I can obtain all these information from you myself. Why do I have to trade with you?"

Fang Yuan snickered and stretched out his palm.

"Mmmmm!"

His palm was as smooth as jade and felt cold to the touch as he placed it on Extreme Darkness's forehead.

With that, the young girl's face was filled with an agonising pain as a weird look flashed across in her eyes.

The feeling of being searched through the soul was akin to someone smashing her skull open to forcefully open it before

stirring the contents with a metal spoon.

"I know..."

After a few moments, Fang Yuan finally spoke. "You must have a ruthless strategy which can damage Extreme Darkness's soul. Therefore, you assume that I will let you live, right?"

"This is not good!"

A hue of silver flashed in the young Extreme Darkness's eyes.

At that moment, her consciousness started to shake and her mind started to expand, making her 10 times more powerful than her usual ability!

This was her killer move. It was a special ability which she did not know where she had absorbed it from. The effect of this ability would be to make her 10 times more powerful than usual by rendering her weak for the next three days. Although the effects would only last for a few minutes, it would be enough for her to do whatever she wanted.

Although this ability could only amplify the powers of the original mutant who had it by a little, it was a killer move for the Demon Weapon to protect her own consciousness.

This was one of the plans she had while she was fleeing from Fang Yuan.

Why could she still use this ability even after being restricted by the array?

This was because after receiving Extreme Darkness's memories and techniques, she had achieved a breakthrough in the limits of her special ability and began on her path of cultivation.

Although she was extremely weak now, she was still able to activate this small special ability of hers.

However, it was a pity that because of what Fang Yuan said, she could no longer stick to the original plan and unknowingly

activated it at this point in time.

"Rumble!"

As a powerful 4th Tier mutant, even though Fang Yuan had a steadfast will with a clear mind, under such a powerful mind influence from the Demon Weapon, Fang Yuan's will collapse without a fight and left his consciousness.

Seeing this, Extreme Darkness appeared confused.

Her initial plan was to take the opportunity to counter-attack and channel all her mind powers into Fang Yuan's consciousness to destroy him!

However, since Fang Yuan was prepared, he would surely temporarily cut off ties with his mind. After the powerful blow, she would become helpless against Fang Yuan's attack.

Even so, she still glared ever so fiercely at Fang Yuan as though she was a female wolf looking at her prey.

"The resemblance... is uncanny!"

After Fang Yuan's ploy to make Extreme Darkness execute her killer move had worked, he gazed at the pale face before him and was stunned. "This look resembles Elder Extreme Darkness to a tee... Little girl, do you know what caused this?"

"Caused this?"

The young Extreme Darkness started to turn frenzy.

Suddenly, in her collection of memories, a figure appeared which slowly became increasingly clear.

That was...

Tears welled up in her eyes as fear filled her face. "No... save me!"

"Cough..."

Witnessing this scene, Fang Yuan was utterly speechless. "Even such a weak magical clone of Elder Extreme Darkness is not

something which can be easily defeated... even if I were to become careless and fall into your trap, I can still survive in your consciousness... But now that you are helpless, do you feel that your memories are becoming clearer and clearer? Don't think about it. The more you think about her, the easier that will would be able to reproduce on you!"

The more Fang Yuan mentioned about it, the worse the situation became.

As he mentioned the memories, the young girl would involuntarily think about it. She would think about the beautiful and captivating deity-like lady.

Furthermore, the scattered memories started to come together as though they had come to life. They were all fighting to control her as they made the silhouette of the lady clearer and clearer.

"No... I don't want to turn into another person, save me!"

Two streaks of tears rolled down her face and splattered as they fell to the ground.

With that, the young girl shut her eyes forcefully. In the next moment, as soon as she opened them, her expression changed. She now appeared calm and composed, which would strike fear in anyone who saw her.

"Fang Yuan!"

Her cold but composed voice made it feel as though the young girl in front of Fang Yuan was a changed person.

She was no longer the Demon Weapon, but the actual high-tiered Illusionary Divine dream master in the Da Qian world, Elder Extreme Darkness!"

"Let me go!"

With that, Elder Extreme Darkness spoke calmly as she demanded her release.

"I'm sorry... I cannot do it!"

Fang Yuan hugged himself and snickered.

"How dare you! Are you intending to be disrespectful?"

Elder Extreme Darkness gazed at Fang Yuan with an intent to kill. "Members of the Realm Alliance cannot kill each other. It seems like you are intending to betray the alliance! Do you want the Sage to go after you?"

"Hehe..."

Seeing this, Fang Yuan remained unmoved and even had a mocking expression on his face.

"Fang Yuan... If you release me, I shall owe you a favour. Once we return, I shall make it up to you. How's that?"

Seeing how Fang Yuan reacted, Elder Extreme Darkness changed her tone.

"Are you... really Elder Extreme Darkness?"

Fang Yuan finally said something which made Elder Extreme Darkness change her expression. "As dream masters, we dream-traverse and if our possessed bodies are harmed, our True Spirits would be damaged but we would immediately return to our own bodies. I've never heard of instances where one can leave their magical clone behind."

"This is a unique occurrence and I am trapped by this body. Fortunately, I was able to hold on to a shred of my own consciousness to remain aware of everything..."

As Elder Extreme Darkness continued, her voice became increasingly low-pitched as though she knew that even a kid would not believe her. With that, she became impatient. "Tell me, what do you want? No matter how weak I am, I am still a magical clone of my true self. Do you still want to harm me? Are you not afraid that my true self will realise it and deal with you afterwards?"

"Oh, is that so? I'm so afraid!"

Fang Yuan snapped his fingers and the array started to increase in its power.

Elder Extreme Darkness, who was trapped in the middle, felt even more stress on her shoulders as she started to kneel down. "What do you want?"

She had no idea how important this world was to Fang Yuan. Fang Yuan had already decided to himself that he would kill anyone who would interfere with his plans, even if a Sage were to enter the realm!

"I'm afraid that... you're just unlucky!"

Even though Fang Yuan had her under complete control, he was still cautious.

This was an actual magical clone of Elder Extreme Darkness and was different from the previous young girl. She would know all of Elder Extreme Darkness's secret spells and Fang Yuan had to make sure that nothing would go wrong.

To think about it, it was Elder Extreme Darkness's misfortune.

With her ability, she could possess anyone in the realm and would still stay safe.

However, her impatience made her tempted to choose the clone body of herself which was extremely suitable for her to possess.

After all, because of the restrictions of this realm, even a Sage would have to start his cultivation from the bottom, which was an extremely arduous process. Not everyone had Fang Yuan's special ability to possess fixed stats and therefore achieve breakthroughs without considerations.

Elder Extreme Darkness had already suffered a blow to her True Spirit once. Now, she was possessing a 4th Tier mutant. Even so, Elder Extreme Darkness could still pull it off and survive.

However, never would she have thought that after the Demon Weapon had absorbed all sorts of special ability, it would obtain an ability to increase its own mind power to turn the tables around.

This second blow would cause even more damage to her True Spirit and therefore, she would naturally return to her own body in Da Qian.

However, her soul was being trapped within the Demon Weapon. Since she was unwilling to let the Demon Weapon benefit from her knowledge, she entered into a deep slumber.

Now that the Demon Weapon was weakened, she could finally take control of it to create trouble.

"A cloned magical clone with a piece of soul from the owner and scattered memories... the result is an uncontrollable magical clone, is that right? Elder Extreme Darkness?"

Fang Yuan placed emphasis on the last few words as he mocked her.

Dream-traversing was still extremely dangerous.

Even a person as powerful as an Illusionary Divine dream master could fail twice and create an uncontrollable magical clone.

As soon as the magical clone matured, it would surely find ways to enter Da Qian world to absorb the true owner and become one with it!

"I am confused... if I destroy your magical clone, will your true self hate me or be thankful?"

Fang Yuan smiled before stretching out his palm. "Now, it's time for you to convince me. What value do you have?"

"..."

After an awkward silence, Extreme Darkness's magical clone finally spoke. "Although my true self had programmed for me to destroy my memories as soon as possession fails, I am still a

magical clone of her and you can even consider me as a part of her. Therefore, my memories are not wiped out and I still have most of it... I have the secrets of Da Qian, powerful secret techniques and even the plans of the Realm Alliance. I can tell you all of these."

"Very well!"

Fang Yuan clapped his hands. "You know how to adapt when the tables have turned! Finally, how do you intend on allowing me to trust you?"



# Chapter 455: A New Beginning

---

Time passed quickly.

In the blink of an eye, 10 years had passed.

Since the battle 10 years ago, Fang Yuan had disappeared from the face of Planet Earth. The Hidden Cultivators Sect from the Middle Continent and the Demon Alliance of the East and West Continents had searched the entire planet but to no avail.

In this 10 years, due to the changing concentration of spiritual energy, there were many shocking changes in the world. The surviving countries started to break down. There were traffic jams everywhere and wild beasts were flooding the cities. Mutants and cultivators took hold of this opportunity to rise to power as the authority of governments started to erode. Alliances began to replace the governments.

It was already the end of the Year 1023, and the fourth occurrence was about to come!

Just like before, the Spiritual King Comet would appear in the sky, which would represent the peaking of spiritual energy in the atmosphere. With that peak, the concentration of spiritual energy would go down soon after.

The period in which the spiritual energy would be concentrated would only be around a hundred years. After this period, the entire planet would enter a new cycle of another 1,000 years.

However, this time, the powerful beings of the Demon Alliance and the Hidden Cultivators Sect had already made their preparations. They would no longer resign to fate and would give their all to execute their plan!

...

Huiming City.

The half-destroyed city was slowly being rebuilt and it was becoming increasingly prosperous by the day.

Tens of thousands of people now resided in the city, which meant that the city would be extremely congested and chaotic. From the outside, the entire city resembled a huge reunion of families.

The silver city walls, the scientific-looking weapons and the mysterious-looking arrays gave the city a unique vibe of its own.

Entering the city would give one the impression of arriving at a refugee camp.

One-storey houses were built beside each other. Rubbish and waste filled the air with an unbearable stench. Similarly, fightings, robberies and rapes were common here. Those with strength would have the power and rights to talk and there was almost no existence of laws in this place.

Further in the slumps, through another set of walls, one would arrive at the Elite Area. High-rise buildings were built from metal and the streets were clean. Police would regularly patrol the streets to maintain order. With the thick wall separating the slumps from this part of the city, the difference was vast, as though this place was heaven and the slump outside was hell.

Some mutants, military personnel and low-tiered scientists were designated to live here to enjoy a little peace and stability.

Those with merit and money would be able to upgrade themselves to live in the Elite Area. This was the dream for many living outside.

However, most of them were unaware that there was also a small Core Area in the centre of the city.

This place enjoyed treatment as to how Planet Earth was before all the chaos. Because of the arrival of doomsday, this place had become even more complicated and backwards than before.

This was the place that only the people at the top could live in.

The people living here were mutants at the 3rd Tier and above and this place was the safest and most luxurious place in the entire Huiming City.

Considering their land sizes, the Core Area would be the smallest, followed by the Elite Area and finally, the Slump Area, which covered over 70% of the entire city.

This was the reality of doomsday!

"Chirp! Chirp!"

Suddenly, in the skies outside of the city, there was a group of black dots.

It was a flock of red-feathered vultures. They were ferocious and ugly-looking. Their wingspan was about 3 metres long and their sharp talons swiped the air around as they flew.

"Pa! Pa!"

On the top of the city walls, the various types of high-technology weapons were fired at the many ferocious vultures in a multi-coloured display of streaks of light.

A few occasional vultures would make it through the rain of ammunition firing at them but would crash into the protective array to become a pile of bloodied mess.

"It's another flock of Blood Vultures. It seems like we need to send the Risk Party to the cliff in the west to clear them up."

On the city walls, a few officers gazed at the scene coldly and thought to themselves.

At the same time, an entourage of vehicles arrived from outside which attracted their attention.

In such times, even the Risk Party would have to travel on foot. To be able to enjoy the luxury of a car meant that this person was a person of status!

"We have received the message. This person is an ambassador

from outside. He has been cleared. Open the doors!"

An officer verified the information through a phone before ordering for the city doors to be opened.

"Kacha! Kacha!"

Under the whirring sound of machinery and gears interlocking, torque was created to slowly open the doors.

"Aha!"

"Finally home!"

"Haha... It's a new life!"

Similarly, a Risk Taker in tattered clothes witnessed this scene and exclaimed in excitement.

"Are those people... the previous Risk Takers? How fortunate it is for them to encounter the vehicles to return to the city together!"

The officer commanded without any expression. "Pass down the order to be stricter during the checks. Also, the Guard of Honour shall follow me to receive them!"

After 10 years of development in Huiming City, a unique culture and practices had been formed.

Technology was fused with special abilities, which created a new era of technology. Limitations were broken and now, it was possible to produce cheap manufactured food to meet the demands of the city. Although the food did not taste too pleasant, it was still good enough to ensure the survival of the people.

Furthermore, a few normal cultivation techniques were being spread around, which formed the basis of the Risk Takers.

They were the most active group of people in the city and were always dreaming about activating special abilities, achieving a high tier in the cultivation or even entering the rat race to earn money and food. With these goals, they would accept missions in Huiming City and would periodically clean up the ferocious wild beasts

around the city to provide stability.

After every mission, the system in the city would record down the Risk Taker who had completed the mission. Once the Risk Taker would accumulate enough points, they would be promoted to a 4-star Risk Taker or even higher, which would give them the chance to reside in the Elite Area, a huge step from where they once were.

"Uncle Yu!"

At this point in time, a young Risk Taker was observing the entourage of vehicles with jealousy as the vehicles rolled into the city. "Who are these people..."

"It should be the ambassador of another city, right?"

Another well-built man in tattered clothing rubbed his chin. "Who knows what he is here for..."

"Someday, I want to become somebody like him!"

The young man watched as the vehicles drove out of sight. His uncle had to painstakingly convince the guards at the door to grant them entry into the city. Comparing the differences in their treatment, the young man clenched his fists tightly.

"I am Captain Sun Xingchen of Huiming City. Welcome, ambassador from afar!"

The entourage vehicles entered a car park and were parked before Zhao Daniu walked out of one of the cars. Looking at the changed city, his face was filled with mixed emotions. "Finally... we're back."

There was a look of pain in his eyes, for he could not forget what had happened 10 years ago.

When the city was under attack, almost half of the entire city was destroyed. With Xing Hezi of the Hidden Cultivators Sect taking over the helm of the city, Huiming City was the first city to slip out

of the control of the government as it started on a new path of self-sustenance.

Till today, the intention to isolate this city was all too obvious.

"Welcome, Ambassador Zhao. Please enter my car and allow me to escort you to the Core Area!"

Sun Xingchen bowed and gave a military salute.

"Thank you!"

After 10 years of training, Zhao Daniu now had the look of a middle-aged man. He had grey sideburns. Controlling his emotions, he entered a black limousine.

"Welcome, Sir!"

In the limousine, there were already two ladies wearing seductive clothing waiting for him. As soon as he arrived, they started to surround him. These two ladies had similar looks and might even be blood-related.

Reclining in his chair, wine was served. "Do you want to drink with us?"

Zhao Daniu's heart wavered for a while. However, as soon as he thought of Ye Yingzi, he became resolute. "Don't get too close to me! Give me a cup of wine!"

Raising a glass of wine, he twirled the red wine in the glass.

He started to observe the surroundings outside. There were dark skies and uneven buildings outside. As soon as the people on the streets saw the symbol on the entourage of vehicles, they quickly made way in fear as they admired the car from afar. Zhao Daniu had mixed feelings looking at them.

Finally, he understood parts of it as soon as he entered the Elite Area.

Looking at the greened area and the various departmental stores around, Zhao Daniu felt as though he had travelled through time.

Such peace and quiet were rare in this period and it was worth it to protect with all their lives.

However, as soon as he thought about the situation outside, he felt a little unjust for the unfortunate people.

"Pa!"

Finally, as they entered the Core Area, Zhao Daniu could no longer hold in his anger. With a strong fist, he smashed the body of the car he was in.

The car was made from a special gold alloy and was claimed to be able to deflect guided missiles and special abilities of 3rd Tier mutants. However, in a single punch, there was already a distinct dent in its body.

The car continued to drive on and finally stopped in front of a bungalow which resembled a palace.

Sun Xingchen personally opened the door for Zhao Daniu. "You are indeed the powerful Rockman! Please!"

Zhao Daniu took in a deep breath as he walked along the red carpet and entered the palace.

White jade, silver and gold were embedded into the walls. The chandeliers hanging from the ceilings completed the luxurious scene.

Although the price of gold and metals had already drastically fallen in such times, the resources and manpower required to build such a palace were also worth a fortune.

With a single thought, Zhao Daniu felt a sharp pain in his chest as though there was a heavy rock.

"Hehe... I welcome you, my friend from afar!"

An old man walked out supported by two younger ladies. "Or should I say... the Ambassador from the capital, Mister Zhao Daniu!"

"Hello, Mister Li!"

After exchanging their greetings, Zhao Daniu quickly recalled information regarding the other party.

Li Rulong, together with 4 other old men, formed the authority and power of Huiming City - the Five Elders Association.

Of course, they were secretly under the control and influence of Xing Hezi from the Hidden Cultivators Sect.

"I am here because of the doomsday. That moment is about to arrive!"

Zhao Daniu went straight to the point. "We are both different from normal people and we know what this means."

The ignorant ones would think that this would be a period of affluence, with technology and cultivation working hand in hand, allowing anyone to become supernormal. If the city were to continue down such a path, a new unparalleled culture would be created.

However, Zhao Daniu was extremely clear that judgement day was about to arrive!

This would be a disaster of a worldwide scale and no one would be able to escape!

"Ambassador, I am clear of the purpose of your visit!"

Old Li revealed a bitter laugh. "But now... I will have to invite you to the banquet prepared especially for you!"



# Chapter 456: A New End

---

On the top of the building in the Core Area, through a translucent glass, the entire Huiming City was in view.

Zhao Daniu stretched his hand out as though he was about to grab something before shaking his head in despair. "Even I would not bear to destroy such a city!"

"Mister Zhao!"

Li Rulong held on to his crutch and unknowingly arrived beside him to enjoy the view of the city together.

"Next up will be out private conversation! No hidden microphones or recorders!"

Old Li chuckled and slammed his crutch once.

"Clang!"

The top of the crutch opened up, revealing a small piece of gold foil.

"This is the most advanced 3rd Generation foil disruptor and even a cultivator's spiritual will will not be able to infiltrate this place..." Zhao Daniu became increasingly tensed. "Mister, what are you intending to say?"

"I know that you represent your country's intentions. However, the Five Elders Association will not be able to help you..."

A tinge of sorrow flashed in Old Li's eyes. "The few of us old men are only puppets. The real people controlling us is the Hidden Cultivators Sect."

"Do you know what the Hidden Cultivators Sect are preparing?"

Zhao Daniu could no longer hold it in and was almost shouting. "This is a crime against the people! If the planet gets destroyed because of this, the all of you will be responsible!"

"No... that won't happen. It is only a comet."

Old Li appeared a little pale but forcefully stood in his place. "Furthermore, the comet will land in the deepest part of the oceans."

"That's right, a 'comet' with a diameter of over 10 kilometres. As soon as it crashes onto land, even the crater would stretch over a hundred miles, creating earthquakes and tsunamis. There would be natural disasters enough to wipe out half of all lifeforms on Planet Earth. This is your plan..."

Zhao Daniu scoffed as he remarked with sarcasm.

"We know that this is a gamble, but we have no choice..."

Li Rulong appeared dazed as he mumbled. "Almost all of the high-tiered cultivators and mutants are supportive of this plan. In doomsday, they are the people with power. Even the few of us old men can only wish that the spiritual energy would become more concentrated so that we have a path of cultivation to walk on, or that the Hidden Cultivators Sect would reward us with a longevity pill or something as a reward."

"Therefore, the 5 of you are willing to gamble the future of mankind?"

Zhao Daniu's eyes turned red.

Even though cultivation was now widespread, the ratio of supernormal humans to normal humans was only about 20%. Although this was already a shocking number compared to previously, it was still unbelievable and illogical to sacrifice 80% of the human population for their plan.

"Since things are at this stage now, the only we can do is to pray, right?"

Old Li took in a deep breath. The tired attitude of his made Zhao Daniu speechless.

...

The next day, the entourage of vehicles left Huiming City.

"Chief of Bureau, the mission has failed. Huiming City has rejected the possibility of a cooperation!"

In the car, Zhao Daniu took out his phone and contacted the old Xi Menjian.

"Sigh..."

Receiving this news, Xi Menjian shook his head in the screen. "They are all traitors! How can they sacrifice the entire plan for the possibility of rewards."

With Fang Yuan's assistance and 10 years of investigation, they were clear of the Hidden Cultivators Sect's plan.

However, things were already at such a stage and were unlikely to be able to be salvaged.

"However... as long as we press on, there is still hope. I believe that Li Rulong of the Five Elders Association has a conscience in him. He even hinted to me that he will be providing us with information and assistance."

Zhao Daniu continued to report.

"Hehe..."

Xi Menjian was highly experienced by now as he chuckled. "He is just afraid and was merely trying to be on good terms with both sides... However, the fact that he is willing to help us would be better than nothing."

He sighed once more and appeared even more frail looking. "We have lesser and lesser allies now."

Transportation came to a halt everywhere in the world and people were only caring about their own cities.

The Hidden Cultivators Sect took this opportunity to expand as

high-tiered mutants and cultivators snatched power in local areas and there was nothing others could do.

If not for the fact that only 10 years had passed since the invasion of the wild beasts, even the important military installations might just fall into the hands of the Hidden Cultivators Sect. By then, nothing could be done.

"The interview in Huiming City is completed. Next up, we still need to visit Yinduo City and Gucheng City... Let's hope for a positive result. We don't have much time left..."

Zhao Daniu sighed. "If the professor was here, everything would be fine."

He was always feeling guilty and felt that if Xi Menjian did not beg Fang Yuan to investigate the problem of the array, Fang Yuan would not have been attacked by a group of powerful beings and become missing since then.

"Don't worry, Professor Fang will be alright! In this 10 years, didn't he attempted to contact us through various means?"

There was a burning fire of passion in Xi Menjian's eyes. "If not for the information he provided, we cannot even achieve what we have today! We must be confident in the Professor!"

"That's right..."

Zhao Daniu sighed.

Suddenly, his pupils dilated as his skin became rock-hard.

"Rumble!"

In the next moment, there was a huge explosion and numerous guided missiles struck the cars, creating flames from the explosions.

"Someone is ambushing us!"

The survivors of the explosion retaliated with their own guns. A few of them released their magical equipment while some others

even activated their special abilities.

"Who are you people?"

Zhao Daniu roared as he walked out of the flames. With a single punch, two mutants in the form of wild beasts flew out and broke a few bones.

"Alright! You're the powerful Rockman Niu indeed! A 3rd Tier mutant!"

A man in black clapped his hands and walked out. He had a ruthless look in his eyes. "It's a pity... you will not be able to live past today!"

"Are you people... from the Hidden Cultivators Sect?"

Wild thoughts ran through Zhao Daniu's mind as he soon understood everything.

"That's right..."

The man in black did not even bother to wear a mask. He had a pale face with a cocky look. "The Li Family will be wiped out as well. The Hidden Cultivators Sect will not require people who are disloyal!"

"You people are traitors of the country! Traitors of humanity! Traitors of the planet!"

Zhao Daniu was enraged to the point that he was shaking.

Never would he have thought that there would be such people in the world!

"Traitors of the planet? Hehe..."

The man in black snickered. "I climbed to where I am today with my own merits. What has it got to do with the planet? The path of cultivation would mean that as long as I become God, I will be able to enjoy longevity and become the ruler of all. By then, who would be willing to revert back to becoming a normal human?"

"I want the people of this planet to... become supernormal! All of them! Everyone should have their own path to becoming supernormal and not return to the bleak past... we are the true... path!"

"Whoosh!"

As he spoke, a sense of 'justice' surrounded him. With his outstretched hands, 5 streaks of dark glow shot out.

"Rock Crumbling Strike!"

Zhao Daniu hollered as he returned a punch. Even if machine guns were to land bullets on him, the bullets would merely deflect and cause sparks.

However, in the next moment, as soon as the dark glow landed on Zhao Daniu, blood started to spew everywhere.

"Wooooo..."

Zhao Daniu was stunned. Looking at the wounds on his body, he slowly knelt to the ground.

"You're outdated to be reliant on your special ability!"

The man in black took a step forward and the dark glows transformed into small knives which swam about between his hands like small fish.

"In times like this, the fusion of special abilities and cultivation techniques are the main thing. You're phased out!"

From above, the man in black spoke in a mocking tone. "Remember... the one that killed you is Feng Han of the Hidden Cultivators Sect!"

"I know about this... all along!"

Zhao Daniu spat out a mouthful of blood. Suddenly, he roared as he whipped out a huge gun from his waist. "Die!"

"Bang!"

Sparks flew.

A bullet flew out of the gun and in an instant, made it through Feng Han's forehead.

"Pa!"

Feng Han's brain fluid spewed everywhere as his head exploded like a huge watermelon. A tortoise shell fell to the ground and in the shell, there was a hole.

This genius could not even rebut a single word before dying.

Only a few people could see what had happened in the previous instant. Just as the bullet was about to hit Feng Han, he had already activated his tortoise shell magical weapon to receive the bullet.

However, it was no use. As the bullet landed on the tortoise shell, it struck through effortlessly and took Feng Han's life.

"Hehe!"

Zhao Daniu blew at the barrel of the gun and coughed. "This is the newest generation of Demon Restraining Gun. It is already worth it for me to be able to kill one person with it!"

There was something else which Zhao Daniu did not mention. Although the gun was being manufactured, the resources required to make it were rare and it could not be mass produced. Most importantly, it could only fire one bullet and was a weapon which should only be used in the most critical moment to save a life.

With a single use, the gun would be rendered useless.

"Kill him!"

At the death of their leader, the henchmen were in chaos but they could gather their thoughts together to come to a decision.

To such a powerful organisation, the loss of a small leader was nothing and could be easily replaced.

"Yingzi... I'm sorry..."

Gazing at the surrounding attackers, Zhao Daniu shut his eyes painfully as his right hand held tightly onto a golden pendant frame hung on his neck.

"Hehe!"

After a long while, his expected pain did not arrive. Instead, there was a familiar snicker.

With suspicion, Zhao Daniu opened his eyes and was in disbelief. "It's really... It's really you!"

"It's me!"

Fang Yuan laughed as he stood before Zhao Daniu. "Daniu... It has been so many years. Why are you still as unlucky as before?"

"Fang... Fang Yuan!"

Zhao Daniu started to stutter and was elated as he examined Fang Yuan who appeared 20 years old. "You're finally back!"

"That's right! I've finally finished what I have to secretly do in the two other continents and the ocean!"

Fang Yuan replied before looking to the side.

A young female with a pair of black and white wings started to strike mercilessly, killing everyone in the vicinity.

"This is... the Demon Weapon!"

Zhao Daniu swallowed his saliva. "The rumours are true! Are you able to control it now?"

"It's merely working together!"

Fang Yuan changed the topic. "I'm back here to settle everything once and for all."



# Chapter 457: It Has Begun

---

Huiming City.

Within an underground mansion not known to many in the Core Area, Xing Hezi looked the same as he held on to his whisk.

Suddenly, he stood up and his eyes glistened. "He has finally appeared... I knew that he would never give up on such an opportunity."

At this point in time, a talisman on his body started to burn up in flames. However, he did not pay any attention to it as he quickly retrieved a piece of jade rock to send a message. "Brothers, we have located traces of that demon!"

"Great!"

"We will rush here!"

From the jade, there were a few excited voices.

Xing Hezi stood up, examined his surroundings and activated a few arrays around before having a sigh of relief.

After the fight that year, the news of Fang Yuan being an otherworldly demon had spread. He was being investigated by the Demon Alliance and the Hidden Cultivators Sect and had to disappear without a trace.

To think about it, Xing Hezi had some feud with him and therefore had to put in more effort to trace him.

Through the talisman, he knew that Fang Yuan had also taken control over the Demon Weapon and was on alert. 'Considering my powers, I am no match for any single one of them. However, if I rely on this array and our previous set-up, I should be able to wait out until my reinforcements arrive.'

In the past 10 years, a few other seniors of the Hidden Cultivators Sect had also woken up.

However, most of them were still heavily injured and could not restore their original power due to the fact that the spiritual energy in the planet was not at its peak yet.

Once all the old demons were to gather together with the members of the Demon Alliance from the East and West Continents, what threat could a small thief possibly bring about?

Unfortunately, his thoughts only lasted for a while.

In the next moment, the defensive array over the entire city was being destroyed by an immense force. The defensive weapons were of no use and an ear-deafening alarm was being sounded.

"Ah!"

Xing Hezi exclaimed loudly as though the skies were being ripped apart.

From the tremor, his underground mansion started to collapse. The ceiling flew apart, revealing two weird-looking silhouettes outside.

"Fang Yuan! Do you really dare to take action?"

Xing Hezi shouted with vigour as the power of stars started to descend, forming an array around. Numerous blue glows started to gather together, forming a protective membrane. A few silhouettes of dragons were flying about on the surface of the membrane, roaring with life.

"The Xinghe 4 Spirits Array?"

Fang Yuan stood in mid-air and scoffed. "Old thing, who would think that you would reveal your killer move..."

"Fang Yuan, you otherworldly demon! How dare you go against the strongest force on the planet!"

Seeing how Fang Yuan was about to strike without hesitation, Xing Hezi's eyelid twitched.

As they spoke, the city had realised that something was wrong.

All types of guided missiles and special abilities erupted into the air like fireworks.

"Go against you guys? Do you think you are worth it?"

Fang Yuan scoffed once again. He knew that his ultimate plan was to go against the world to perform a high-dimensional experiment.

How would such a lowly being understand his lofty goals? Ambitions? It was wasting his own effort to explain these to others.

With this, Fang Yuan struck his right fist out. A green-coloured illusionary shadow of a giant appeared as it roared loudly before landing a fist.

"Bang!!!"

Amidst the explosive force, the original membrane of the array started to flicker and the dragons on the membrane slowly dispersed as though they were being attacked.

"Rumble!"

After the first fist, there was a huge crater on the ground. Xing Hezi turned into a streak of starlight and retreated with embarrassment. "Fang Yuan, don't push it!"

"So what if I'm pushing it? Previously, you people from the Hidden Cultivators Sect had combined forces with the Demon Alliance to ambush me many times. Do you think I will let you guys go?"

Fang Yuan took a step forward and streaks of lightning landed on him. Suddenly, the streaks of lightning transformed into a lightning dragon which slithered around the giant's body. With that, the giant struck his palm out with the force of a mountain.

"Thousand Stars and Spirit, protect me!"

Xing Hezi roared as he transformed the day into night. The stars

in the night sky scattered their light down towards him, blessing him with increased powers.

However, Fang Yuan did not care what Xing Hezi was doing. He was simply delivering punches like a reckless person.

"Crackle!"

The glow of lightning flashed across and all the stars disappeared.

"Rumble!"

Under a single punch, the night scene was being destroyed, revealing the actual clear skies.

Fang Yuan held his hands behind his back and stood by the side. Xing Hezi's clothing was filled with blood as he crawled on the floor with embarrassment. He appeared extremely pitiful.

"You... The Hidden Cultivators Sect will never let you go. I have already called for reinforcements..."

Xing Hezi attempted to struggle for the final time.

"Is that so?"

Fang Yuan appeared calm as though he didn't care. "Where are your reinforcements? What do you think they will do if news of your defeat were to spread..."

As soon as Fang Yuan spoke, Xing Hezi's expression changed.

"People only do things for their personal interests. Now that the plan is about to be completed, how many will be willing to put their lives on the line and sacrifice their optimistic future?"

Fang Yuan continued in a calm and composed manner. "Let's not talk about the fact that they would need to sacrifice a lot to take me down. Are you guys not afraid that I would escape once more and threatened the other array eyes like your worst nightmare? Look at the recent years! Even the Demon Alliance has given up on chasing me."

"What do you want exactly?"

Xing Hezi grunted.

"Don't worry, I will not disrupt your plans. I only want to see where you all will end up..."

Fang Yuan replied with much composure.

"Haha... Professor!"

At this point in time, there was a commotion in the Core Area.

Zhao Daniu made his way towards Fang Yuan and his face was filled with happiness. "We have worked together to capture all the members of the Five Elders Association. Now, we are in the process of taking over their military. This city is now back under the control of the country. What do we do next?"

"What do we do next? We shall wait!"

Fang Yuan closed his eyes as he sensed the increasing concentration of spiritual droplets in the air. "The fourth occurrence might just come tonight!"

"What?"

Zhao Daniu's eyes widened. "It's not right, there's still some time until the end of the year!"

"Who told you... that the occurrence will only happen at the end of the year?" Fang Yuan gazed at Zhao Daniu with a look of pity in his eyes. "This is according to nature. Isn't it normal to have deviations once in a while?"

However, it was not at all normal for the occurrence to arrive so early!

Even Fang Yuan had only just detected it. It felt as though someone was impatient and wanted to rush things, accelerate the process and catch him by surprise.

"D\*mn it!"

Zhao Daniu was panicking. "We have many arrangements that have yet to be completed. I have not even talked to the other two cities!"

"It's too late!"

Fang Yuan gazed at the horizon with a look of anticipation.

...

"Xing Hezi has been captured!"

In an unknown space, a few holographic images of powerful beings were gathered together as though it was a meeting between international parties.

One of the black shadows spoke first. "We have already found out the killer. It is Fang Yuan and the Demon Weapon, Extreme Darkness!"

Gazing at the screen in mid-air, the few holographic images remained silent.

"The few of you from the East, what do you think of this?"

An old man sitting in the centre broke the silence. His voice sounded mysterious.

"The Sea Dragon King has already declared that he will not be involved in this. Furthermore, we do not have any agreement with you guys on this..."

Among the people from the west, the imagery which represented Farquhar spoke. "Furthermore... Can the few from Hidden Cultivators Sect ensure that the array will continue to remain active?"

"More than half of the array eyes have already been operational for the past 10 years. Even if we want to destroy it now, I'm afraid that will be impossible!"

An elder of the Hidden Cultivators Sect shook his head. "Huiming City has been invaded, but that is a small issue. The few of us

elders will personally guard the important array eyes. After all, according to our detection of the heaven's will, the fourth occurrence will arrive earlier than expected. This is a change that has not happened since thousands of years ago! We do not know what it means!"

Everyone remained silent for a little longer. They all knew that they had given up on Xing Hezi.

At the beginning of the new era, during the darkest hours before dawn, no one wanted to be left out.

What about the otherworldly demon?

As long as the two worlds coincided, everyone around would experience an increase in their cultivation to a whole new level. By then, dealing with the otherworldly demon would be as simple as squishing an ant.

"Eh?"

Suddenly, all the holographic images shook as though they had felt a powerful will of the world.

"Is it brought forward once again?"

One of them spoke. "Tonight?"

"Why would the will of the spiritual will change so suddenly?"

Curtly spoke solemnly. "Everybody... We should stop playing guessing games with each other. Just previously, I had detected the will of the Spiritual Realm. Not only did it remind me that the occurrence would be brought forward, it also wanted me to remove a threat for it."

"Why is it so coincidental to happen now, just when Fang Yuan invaded Huiming City... could Fang Yuan have done something?"

"To speak the truth, I have also received the same will and I have vaguely detected that the arrangements in Huiming City seem to be out of place. It seems like this trouble is created by Fang Yuan."

...

As the 4th Tier powerful beings exchanged glances, finally, it was the person in the centre who made the decision. "Since this is so, let us do this together! This will be the first operation where the Hidden Cultivators Sect will work with the Demon Alliance. At midnight, we shall gather around Huiming City and attack all at once to remove the threat."

"Alright!"

Those around felt that this was a good idea.

After such a huge incident, they could no longer trust each other. Even when they were gathered, they were all observing each other to see if anyone were up to any tricks.

Furthermore, that otherworldly demon seemed suspicious. Since they were in this together, they would be able to remove the threat with their combined powers.

Among them, they could possibly even be a 5th Tier powerful being around. After tonight, their full powers would be restored!

With such a powerful alliance, how would a single otherworldly demon be able to fight back?



# Chapter 458: The Arrival

---

"Today's night sky is really... bright!"

In the night, Within the Elite Area of Huiming City, Lin Ming stood on the balcony and admired the stars in the sky.

Looking at a carved figurine in his hands, he remained silent.

He was once a playful kid but now, he was a matured person with an established career. He now had a beautiful wife as well as a three-year-old kid.

Although the price to pay was for him to become a Risk Taker, he never once regretted his decision.

'Although I don't have any special ability, I can still cultivate myself to become stronger and bring peace and prosperity to my family!!'

Lin Ming clenched the carved figurine in his hands tightly as his eyes glistened.

This was a present given to him by Fang Yuan and was the thing which ensured his survive until today. He was in gratitude to the owner of the antique shop. Of course, the memory of the beautiful adopted daughter of the boss would forever be etched in his mind.

"Sigh... What's happening today? I can't seem to focus, for I keep thinking about the past!"

Lin Ming raised his head and gazed at the stars with much confusion.

Previously, while he was in training, he could feel his blood gushing about in his body and he found it difficult to compose himself. This was why he had come out to the balcony to relax.

As he stood on the balcony, he realised that he was not the only cultivator who was experiencing the weird feeling.

"What's happening? Could it be because something is changing?"

This is a problem for the boss of the Core Area and we are too far from it..."

As a high-tiered Risk Taker, even his body started to shake in fear and he could feel his pores on his skin starting to close up.

Within moments, he could feel that an immense change was about to happen.

"Quickly! In the sky!"

At this point in time, on the balcony opposite of him, another cultivator shouted loudly and pointed up.

"That is..."

Lin Ming turned his attention towards the direction where the other cultivator had pointed and was utterly stunned.

In his field of vision, he could see a green comet with a long tail. Like a giant broom, it was flying towards the planet and its glow started to intensify.

"Comet king... The Spiritual Comet King!"

As a cultivator, after Fang Yuan had published his theory on the occurrences, the name and appearance of this particular comet were already well-known facts.

Lin Ming could never imagine that the Spiritual King Comet would appear before him tonight without giving him any time to prepare. "It's impossible... there should still be a period of time before its arrival!"

Lin Ming held his head and turned frenzied.

He had already long planned to use the remaining time before the arrival of the comet to undergo a final task so as to gather as many resources as he could. Leveraging on the array, he would then attempt a breakthrough.

However, it seemed like his plans could not be adapted to the current situation already.

His personal problems were nothing compared to the chaos which the government and organisations were facing.

"What's happening?"

Xi Menjian grabbed on the collar of a researcher and appeared ferocious. "Didn't we predict that it would appear at the end of this year? Why was there such a huge discrepancy?"

"Chief of bureau..."

After a group of researchers had gathered to discuss the situation, they had quickly come up with a solution. "Although it sounds impossible, it seems that the arrival of the comet has been quickened!"

"Such a baseless conclusion! Do you want me to believe that a certain higher power is behind this?"

Xi Menjian glared fiercely at the researcher before turning around to enter the command room. "Contact the leaders of the other countries! We shall begin the plan earlier and take action as soon as the 'sign' is spotted!"

"Yes, Sir!"

The command room was filled with military personnel in their military uniforms. They stood up straight, ready to receive their commands.

Looking at the silhouette of the researchers rushing about, Xi Menjian closed his eyes.

He did not know if his decision would be the right one and if he would cause even more deaths today. However, he knew something with certainty.

As the leader, he had to place the future of the humans as the priority to ensure their existence!

...

The powerful beings like Fang Yuan were the ones who were

most affected by the change in the concentration of spiritual droplets.

In the sky above Huiming City, Fang Yuan stood in mid-air and placed his hands behind his back. He gazed towards the emerald-green comet in the sky and paid no attention to others around him.

"I am Long Lizi, while these two are Venerable Moonchaser and Evil Killing Dhuta. We were originally relieved that there was a powerful being taking care of the Middle Continent. No one would have thought that you would be an otherworldly demon!"

The 3 Venerables stood around Fang Yuan as the wind blew at their sleeves.

Beside them, Farquhar, Curtly and Jon were also around. There were a few other unknown 4th Tier mutants surrounding all of them and observing from afar.

Needless to say, it would be unwise for Fang Yuan to go head-on with all of these powerful beings and the only choice he had would be to flee.

"Hmm... It seemed like something big has happened for all of you to illogically combine forces to deal with me!"

Fang Yuan continued to act composed. An illusionary shadow of a giant slowly appeared behind his back as it brought a great sense of threat. "However, is any of you willing to kill me and pay the price for it?"

Fang Yuan could roughly guess that the will of the Spiritual Realm had gathered all these powerful beings together!

Only the power of the entire Spiritual Realm would be able to accelerate the arrival of the Spiritual King Comet and gather the group of 'Rebels'.

"You're already one step into the coffin and yet you dare to sound so high and mighty!"

Long Lizi spoke with an emotionless tone.

"Let's not talk about who is the one who is halfway into the coffin. I can assure you that whoever would be the first to attack would also be the first to die!"

Fang Yuan displayed a pose as though he was willing to fight with all his life. As he scanned his surroundings, he made everyone feel conflicted as to who should attack first.

"Amitabha, what use will it be even if you can delay your death?"

Evil Killing Dhuta placed his palms together. "It seems like your actions are directed at disrupting the plan of the Spiritual King Comet but now, nothing will ever change!"

"Is that so?"

Fang Yuan smiled.

"Everyone, strike!"

Long Lizi spoke in a calm tone. "Let's activate the array first to trap the demon before guiding the comet to enter the planet!"

It was an extremely rare opportunity for the Spiritual King Comet to descend on the planet! Once the prime time was over and if the plan were to fail, all the powerful beings would surely be devastated.

Therefore, everyone would help out as soon as they spot the Spiritual King Comet.

"3 Emblems Giant Array!"

"Dark Blood Demonic Technique!"

"Holy Light!"

...

The powers of the beings were combined as it formed something which resembled a huge cage, covering Fang Yuan and his giant silhouette in it.

"Farquhar!"

Long Lizi gazed towards the Seraph of Light.

"Don't worry, the arrays in the East Continent are just fine!"

Farquhar replied respectfully.

"There are no problems in the West Continent as well. How about the Middle Continent?"

"Although we have lost the professional array master Xing Hezi, any one of us will be able to manipulate the 9 Halls Flying Star Array, and the Sea Dragon King is supporting us from the oceans!"

As the landing point of the Spiritual King Comet, the ocean was of paramount importance. These powerful beings were not willing to risk it and accidentally destroy Planet Earth in the process.

Therefore, this time, regardless of the commotion on land, the Sea Dragon King would remain and guard the oceans to focus on receiving the comet.

"Great!"

Long Lizi turned his attention away from the array. With a look of excitement in his eyes, he crushed a jade talisman in his possession.

"Buzz! Buzz!"

In an instant, there were huge changes in the surroundings.

Within Huiming City, Lin Ming could feel his knees go weak as he slowly knelt towards the ground.

On the surface of the roads, runes started to appear and connect with one another, forming a huge array.

This was one of the 81 array eyes of the 9 Halls Flying Star Array!

This array was the hidden power of the Hidden Cultivators Sect. It was slowly being developed over the course of a thousand years and was a hidden backup plan placed here before the construction

of the city even began.

From the point of the universe in outer space, one would be able to see another 80 array eyes scattered around the Middle Continent, all glowing with their own brilliance.

The situation was similar for the East and West Continents. The nodes lighted up and brightness fused perfectly with darkness.

Furthermore, the brightness from the nodes started to spread out over the ocean and in a few moments, the entire planet was being covered.

An overwhelming power formed an ultimate array with an irresistible attractive force being exerted on the Spiritual Comet King.

"Rumble!"

The earth shook.

The comet which appeared as though it was about to fly past suddenly slowed down as though it had flown into a bucket of glue. Its path was also being altered and it was now flying straight into the ocean.

Spiritual droplets shook violently around and in that instant, almost all cultivators could feel the spiritual droplets in the body vibrating in excitement.

...

In an underground base.

Xi Menjian witnessed the entire scene and smashed his fists on the electronic screen. "They have revealed their fox tail! I command to activate the final attack!"

"Approved!"

"Approved!"

"You have the highest approval to go ahead!"

...

In a secluded countryside, a few camouflage hills opened up, revealing many atomic bombs ready to be fired.

"The target is the comet. The countdown begins..."

"Pa!"

Suddenly, the entire base was flung into darkness.

"This is impossible! We have 9 backup sources of power in our base and an intranet of our own..."

Xi Menjian was devastated. "Who is it? A rebel who has taken on the form of a human?"

The base was extremely well-equipped. Within a few seconds, the power came back. However, the firing equipment was already being tampered with and Xi Menjian was about to vomit blood. "Execute our backup plan to destroy... all array nodes!"

He closed his eyes and forced himself to speak.

However, in the next moment, a huge explosion occurred in the underground base.

Everywhere was brightly lit and the heat from the explosion seemed to be destroying everything in its way.

The ground shook and a mushroom cloud slowly rose above the base.

This also happened in the East and West Continents.

The final effort of the humans could only destroy tens of array nodes. Compared to the hundred and thousands of nodes around the entire planet, it was nothing.

"This is the latest news. All resistance forces have been destroyed and only 3 minutes have passed... Do you see it now? Fang Yuan... this is the outcome of your efforts!"

Long Lizi gazed at the descending comet and transferred his voice



to Fang Yuan, who was being captured in the array. He wanted to make him feel disheartened as he announced this piece of news. "We are the real victors of the war!"

In the next moment, a spectacular view filled the eyes of the powerful beings who were watching the comet.

A comet with the radius of 5 kilometres across carried a brilliant emerald tail as it broke through the atmosphere and flew down towards the planet! Into the East Ocean!

"Rumble!"

There was a huge collision!

# Chapter 459: Devour

---

The arrival of the comet was miraculous!

Fang Yuan finally understood how the destruction of a realm tasted like.

"Poof!"

The moment the Spiritual King Comet crashed into the East Sea, almost every cultivator turned unconscious momentarily. They then immediately spat out a mouthful of blood due to the interference from the chaotic surge in spiritual energy.

"Kababoom!"

The earth cracked while the mountains and rivers roared!

Under the starry skies, one could see a gigantic white hole appearing far in the ocean. Land submerged for an extremely long time was uncovered and it was even expanding outwards continuously.

The resultant mega-earthquakes and tsunamis impacted the entire realm mercilessly and all big three continents were affected.

'In actual fact... with Planet Earth's endurance, a mere 10 kilometres wide comet would be nothing much. But to the ecology on its surface, it would be a catastrophe...'

"Kacha!"

The array cracked immediately. Fang Yuan stood firmly but did not do anything. As he felt the tremendous changes in the spiritual droplets in the surroundings, he sighed, "With this surge, I'm afraid there would definitely be great changes to the ecology and environment of the entire realm. The chances of normal people surviving this are extremely low..."

Long Lizi and Venerable Moonchaser felt slightly alarmed.

Previously, they thought Fang Yuan would have malicious

intentions and would obstruct their grand scheme. But now, Fang Yuan did not even stop them nor did he appear exasperated too, which made them felt rather suspicious.

"Nevermind... haha! We have succeeded!"

Long Lizi suddenly exclaimed in a deafening voice.

As long as the Spiritual Realm could be connected, the amount of spiritual energy in Planet Earth would remain high. A mere otherworldly demon would then be of no threat!

However, Farquhar's face was solemn and the holy light on his body quivered.

Farquhar's life relied on religious faith. Faced with such a catastrophe, many of his believers were praying and there were even more believers who died. All these were like weapons which damaged the faith.

"Of course!"

Venerable Moonchaser replied and waved his magical weapon. A light screen then appeared which depicted the model of Planet Earth.

Through this model, the nodes of the array in the three big continents could be seen shining brightly. They kept converging in the vast ocean and with the Spiritual King Comet as their main body, they emitted a dazzling yet blinding light.

Within it, the slender silhouette of a blue dragon could be seen swimming around it. It had the purpose of mediating it.

"Now's the time!"

Long Lizi suddenly said that odd line.

"Such an array isn't even necessary to bring over the Spiritual King Comet..."

Fang Yuan stood up with his hands behind his back and exclaimed, "What's next is your real motive, am I right?"

"That's right!"

At the next moment, Long Lizi, Venerable Moonchaser, Evil Killing Dhuta and several other high-tiered cultivators suddenly bit the tip of their tongues to activate the array with their blood.

"Sacrificing the natural source to connect with the Spiritual Realm!"

"Kacha! Kacha!"

The moment after they spoke, grey clouds loomed in the sky. Thunder and lightning flashed rapidly, the purple coloured storm eye of heavenly tribulations appeared and brought about violet lightning bolts!

This was the heavenly punishment! It was from the anger of the natural source of this realm! It was enraged as it was betrayed by its own people!

"I... Farquhar!"

"I... Curtly! Jon!"

The powerful beings at 4th tier from all over the East Continent and West Continent swore their oath, "With our holy names, we sacrifice the natural source of the East and West Continent to contact the Spiritual Realm!"

"Rumble!"

Under the influence of the array, earthquakes kept happening in the three big continents.

The numerous nodes formed a giant network which was like a giant invisible net that enveloped everything. It then suddenly condensed and dove deep into the earth and began extracting streaks of that mysterious natural source of the realm. The streaks of energy then gathered atop the Spiritual King Comet.

By making use of the large impact caused by the crash of the comet, the will of Planet Earth was severely damaged.

Furthermore, by sacrificing its natural source, the lightning in the skies became weaker at once and was barely striking down.

"How ruthless indeed! They first severely damaged the will of the realm before extracting its natural source! They are so familiar with their ploy!"

Fang Yuan's eyes widened as he saw such and he was also continuously collecting data from the surroundings.

It would be very foolish for Fang Yuan to strike back against all these powerful beings who joined hands. Thus, it was wiser for him to silently observe first.

"Kacha!"

"Kaboom!"

Nevertheless, although the realm's will was already severely damaged and weakened, a few heavenly punishments still struck down mercilessly.

However, it was no longer the violet coloured lightning just now! It was now the purple-gold thunderbolt of heavenly punishment!

Although the lightning's grade was now slightly lower than before, even Long Lizi still fearfully whipped out his magical equipment and scapegoats as he began to cautiously tide through the tribulation.

"Crackle! Kaboom!"

This time, they had certainly crossed the line and enraged the realm. Purple-gold coloured thunderbolts struck continuously and it even struck nine times in a row at the start. The weakest 4th tier cultivator was severely injured and blood gushed out from his orifices.

"Great opportunity!"

Fang Yuan's eyes lit up and he immediately turned into a stream of light before arriving in front of this cultivator at once. Fang

Yuan's giant Pangu Eagle Body appeared behind his back as he violently punched this cultivator.

"Bang!"

A giant mist of blood erupted in mid-air. This unfamiliar 4th tier cultivator turned into dust at once as its body and soul ceased to exist after being attacked by the lightning and Fang Yuan's fist.

"You are courting death!"

Long Lizi and others were furious. However, they had a more important task on hand and obviously had no time to kill Fang Yuan!

Fang Yuan moved backwards and slowly appreciated the feeling he was currently feeling.

Originally, when the heavenly punishments struck, since Fang Yuan was an otherworldly demon, he felt numbness on his head and skin as though he was stared intently by the will of this realm.

However, since Fang Yuan had never harmed this realm before and even killed its enemy which displayed his loyalty to this realm, he was let off by the lightning at last.

...

Deep within the seas.

The blue dragon king's body was surrounded by glowing light. His body had already expanded to over 1000 yards long.

At that moment, the waters nearby him had already become a sea of blood. Broken limbs and bones could be seen everywhere.

These were all the dragon king's loyal subordinates. As their cultivation was insufficient, they were killed by the collision of the Spiritual King Comet forcefully brought about by the array.

"Giant tsunamis are crashing onto the continents, I guess not even 10% of living things can survive?"

As the blue dragon king pondered, he did not seem very bothered by it and instead, he rushed towards the Spiritual King Comet.

"Has it succeeded?"

A bizarre spiritual aura suddenly appeared on that spot. It brought about an indescribable sense of attraction that made the dragon king want to go after it even if it risked its life.

The closer he got to the crater, the spiritual energy in the surroundings became even denser. It almost became a liquid that filled the entire ocean.

Just by submerging in it, the Sea Dragon King felt as though it could break through the bottleneck of his water dragon body and begin transforming into a true dragon. He was excited. "Indeed... only the Spiritual Realm is the real home for us!"

As the dragon king hollered, it went to the core of the giant crater like a piercing arrow.

At that spot, the strange position of the Spiritual King Comet could be seen. Half of it was above the ground and streaks of green coloured vessels extended from it which fused with the gigantic array of the three big continents. It was like humans' blood vessel systems as it continuously pulsed and absorbed energy.

The space surrounding the comet became misty. This was the aftereffects of such a powerful impact, whereby the space surrounding was on the brink of collapsing.

"Kacha!"

At last.

After absorbing an unknown amount of energy from the natural source, a stream of green coloured light appeared on top of the Spiritual King Comet. The stream of light then shot up the skies and broke through space like an extremely sharp sword.

The sound of glass shattering could be heard.

Lots of cracks appeared in the surroundings and they suddenly shattered at once. It was as though a funnel was broken and large amounts of spiritual energy surged over.

"This is... breaking the boundaries of a higher dimension!"

Tears began to well in the blue dragon king's eyes as it watched, "Spiritual Realm! The Spiritual Realm... is arriving!"

In the shattered space, the image of a world appeared.

This was a vast and blue-green coloured world. Its sun, moon, stars, mountains, valleys, grass and trees all had spiritual properties. Suddenly, a corner appeared and extended from this image which then connected with this realm.

"Rumble!"

Rocks and soil appeared out of thin air and with the Spiritual King Comet as its core, an island was formed in this realm. The island was continuously expanding and becoming larger as time passes.

In this realm, even a 5th Tier Divine Refining Grade powerful being could only create a prosperous land at most.

To be able to appear in this realm and create the intersecting points of this two realm was already way beyond the Sea Dragon King's imagination.

"Kacha!"

The moment this island appeared, Planet Earth Realm was livid.

The surroundings stagnated at once and hundreds of purple-gold coloured lightning struck at the same time. It was as though it was trying to annihilate this entire island.

"It's too late!"

A mighty and horrifying thought emerged from the Spiritual King Island. Accompanied by a holler, large amounts of green coloured lightning appeared on top of the island and struck



together with the purple-gold lightning bolts. At last, they even spread to the outsides of the island.

"The might of the heavenly tribulation is weakened..."

The Sea Dragon King was elated. "Indeed, once the two worlds coincide, the will of the Spiritual Realm will have an overwhelming advantage! Thus, we are not traitors but pioneers of new land!"

The dragon king did not hesitate any longer and charged towards the island, "The Sea Dragon King pays his respects to the Spiritual Realm's will! We obeyed the will of the heavens and spent a thousand year planning for it! It has finally succeeded today..."

"Kacha!"

What answered the dragon king was a blue-green coloured bolt of lightning.

Under this flash of lightning, even the Sea Dragon King could not dodge it. The dragon corpse was severed into two halves and landed on the island with blood gushing out. It was then immediately devoured by the island.

"Why... I'm a... pioneer..."

A soul appeared and the Sea Dragon King's dumbfounded expression could be seen.

However, at the next moment, another bolt of lightning struck mercilessly and turned the soul into ashes.

After it devoured the Sea Dragon King, it was as though the Spiritual King Island just ate an extremely nourishing pill as it began to expand.

The humongous island devoured the seawaters, space and everything in this Planet Earth Realm as it rapidly expanded outwards.

"Impossible!"

"How could it be?"

High above the skies of Huiming City, after the Spiritual King Realm really appeared and severely injured the will of Planet Earth, the heavenly tribulations were greatly weakened and slowly disappeared.

As Long Lizi and others watched the scene where the Sea Dragon King died, they all had the same stunned expression on their faces. There was no grief as great as despair.

"Just as I expected. In order to take, one must first give..."

On the other hand, Fang Yuan's eyes sparkled as he appeared cheery, "No matter how abundant spiritual energy is inside the Spiritual Realm, it would not easily give it to others nor allow others to take it easily. By providing this realm with spiritual energy, it was merely casting a bait. Now that the bait is taken up, it would obviously harvest it all! The natural source and powerful beings of this realm are merely just... food in the eyes of this Spiritual Realm!!!"

# Chapter 460: Truth

---

CPoD Chapter 460: Truth

Translator: Sparrow Translations Editor: Sparrow Translations

"This so-called resurgence in spiritual energy is actually the invasion of a lower dimension realm by a higher dimension realm!"

Fang Yuan looked at the lifeless expression on the faces of Long Lizi, Farquhar and others, it was as though their parents had just died. Whereas, Fang Yuan had a sudden realisation.

Even if the Spiritual Realm had boundless amounts of spiritual energy, it was still brought about by its natural source, so why would it give them away for no apparent reason?

This was what the phrase "in order to take, one must first give" meant.

That Spiritual King Comet might have been a powerful invader at first, but after it was counteracted and repelled by Planet Earth, it could only adopt a more indirect method. Every millennium, it would increase its investments on Planet Earth by increasing the spiritual energy in Planet Earth and thus, attracted the "Leading Party".

Due to the unique and rigid nature of Planet Earth's will, it could not reject such great foreign benefits. Hence, Planet Earth was successfully changed peacefully.

After a few cycles, a large number of members were accumulated into the Leading Party before the heavenly will announced its "truth". As they sought after longevity or breakthroughs or simply because they wanted to continue to satiate their desires of being high above everyone else, naturally, these people willingly betrayed this realm!

"This is the truth behind why the Spiritual Realm is invading this realm!"

Fang Yuan was enlightened at once. He then felt a chilly and ominous feeling, "If Planet Earth Realm is like this, what about Da Qian?"

This was similar to the transmission of dream master's energy and how it cultivated the powerful dream masters.

Furthermore, how would the high-tiered dream masters' ideas be any different from Long Lizi's bunch's ideas?

At most, the dream masters were stronger, had wilder ambitions and more experienced.

Or perhaps, the dream masters had long guessed it and they did not mind if Da Qian World were to be devoured by the dream master's source world. However, they would definitely care about their own life and death!

But, from how the Spiritual King Realm was looking like now, the outcomes of these Leading Party members would be tragic!

"Kill!"

"The Lord of Heaven commands to kill every single living thing in this world! Don't leave even a single one!"

"This is a battle between worlds, devour their everything!"

At that moment, changes occurred yet again on Spiritual King Island.

Several white jade doors appeared out of thin air and it was as though they were conveying arrays.

Accompanied by shining lights, numerous divine and sage-like immortal cultivators emerged and swarmed the surroundings like a swarm of locust.

"In order to hook this world up as a bait, the Spiritual Realm had already lost 10% of its natural source. It must be recovered!"

"How could these low-class pariahs enjoy the purest spiritual energy from the superior spiritual meridian?"

"Pillage them! Massacre them! Plunder this world's everything! Their powerful beings devoured large amounts of spiritual energy, they would make great tonics! Make all of them into human-like spiritual pills using demonic pill-making techniques!"

.....

Lots of spiritual wills and shouts could be heard which made everywhere felt uneasy.

"Why is this happening?"

Long Lizi's face turned ashen and all his thoughts disappeared. It was as though he was going crazy, "We sacrificed the entire world, shouldn't we become the heroes of the Spiritual Realm?"

These powerful beings present had already expected the destruction of Planet Earth.

However, they would have never imagined that even they themselves would be the Spiritual Realm's targets.

The locust-like army of immortal cultivators were all elites that were at the 3rd Tier or above. The ones leading them all had 4th Tier cultivations and the generals all had the power of an area. Ling Lizi's bunch were totally no match to them.

"Haha... no wonder I can't find the two pieces of land, it is here!"

Moments later, the dull noise of thunder crackled.

A red cloud floated up at lightning speed from the depths of the oceans and quickly covered the entire sky above Huiming City.

The red cloud's scary and deep spiritual aura along with the vague sight of a small plane in the depths of it brought about an overbearing might. It immediately obliterated everyone's power of the arena below it.

"I am Ancestor Red Cloud! You all should be honoured to die by my hand and become my food!"

Within the red clouds, a red-haired elder sat with his legs crossed

and calmly made his move.

"Rumble!"

A giant scarlet coloured palm extended from the red clouds and its target was evidently the Evil Killing Dhuta.

The Dhuta shouted and whipped out his magical weapon. A swastika symbol facing the giant palm immediately appeared.

"Bam!"

The moment the giant palm swiped, cracks appeared on the black-coloured swastika. It then grabbed the Evil Killing Dhuta with no hesitation.

"The kind of people I hate the most are donkey monks like you!"

Ancestor Red Cloud chuckled strangely and streaks of scarlet red spiritual aura entered the Evil Killing Dhuta's body which began to continuously extract something.

After three breaths, lots of blood red streaks finally dispersed, revealing an extremely old and feeble Evil Killing Dhuta.

"You..."

All of the Evil Killing Dhuta's divine techniques and magical powers disappeared. Even his Essence, Spirit and Magic were sucked dry too. He was now incredibly aged and weak, and if not for the red cloud below his feet, he would have collapsed and died.

The Evil Killing Dhuta then raised his trembling right hand and pointed at Ancestor Red Cloud. Suddenly, his eyes dilated as he stared at Ancestor Red Cloud and his breath stopped.

"A 5th Tier Divine Refining Grade immortal cultivator?"

Long Lizi closed his eyes, he already knew how frightening Ancestor Red Cloud was.

"What a powerful Essence Theft Technique to be able to suck this Dhuta dry and cause him to die from old age!"

Whereas, Fang Yuan saw another side of Ancestor Red Cloud.

Fang Yuan was very sure that this Evil Killing Dhuta had died from an old age. Even if his body was checked again, it would still be the same pile of useless bones and rotten flesh.

All the vital elemental energy, spiritual energy and such that used to be inside the Dhuta's body had all been sucked out and used up by Ancestor Red Cloud. Ancestor Red Cloud left the Dhuta with a measly life, which meant that he would not trigger a killer tribulation nor bring about attention from the heaven! It was such an ingenious trick!

"Sir!"

Seeing how the Evil Killing Dhuta's life got sucked away so easily by Ancestor Red Cloud, Venerable Moonchaser lost his composure too.

"We followed the heavenly will and opened up the world! We are meritorious! Meritorious!"

"Venerable Red Cloud, all of us are elites of this world, we are willing to submit to you!"

Long Lizi immediately shouted as his thought changed immediately when he saw a glimmer of hope for survival.

"Submit to me? Hehe!"

Ancestor Red Cloud sniggered coldly. The red clouds in the surrounding kept on expanding. Suddenly, the red clouds swept the two of them to the side and devoured them as they tried to flee.

"Such a pity... I can't leave you all alive, this is the heavenly will too!"

Ancestor Red Cloud pointed to the skies and the smile on his face turned sinister.

"Firstly, you all are the elites of this world and are Energy Souls, but all of you have traces of this world! Even if your blood is

changed, such traces cannot be erased!"

"Secondly, after you all devoured large amounts of spiritual energy, you are all extremely nourishing spiritual pills in my eyes!"

"Thirdly, you all are indeed meritorious for sacrificing one entire world, but, the natural source of the Spiritual Realm is precious, how could it be shared with others so easily? Now that the two worlds coincide, the heavenly will is not around and it is the perfect time to clean up you all!"

"See, with all these reasons, how could I keep you all?"

Ancestor Red Cloud's gaze turned extremely savage.

Actually, there was something he did not mention.

The outcomes of the members of such Leading Party would usually not be good. Unless they had an agreement with the powerful forces in the Spiritual Realm beforehand, even if they were favoured by the realm's will, they would still be annihilated by the Spiritual Realm's powerful beings during the special period when the two realms were merging whereby the Spiritual Realm's will was in chaos.

Nevertheless, there was one point which was well said.

Such a Leading Party comprised of the elites of this entire realm and they possessed great fate energy in them. Their qualifications would be above anyone else and they could become powerful beings even in the new realm.

If the natural source of the Spiritual Realm could not even supply sufficient spiritual energy to the sects and powerful beings of its own realm, how could it supply it to others so easily?

Hence, those who conquered other realms would definitely kill such powerful beings they face in the other realm in order to remove any possible future threats.

However, if these powerful beings could survive this period of



time and wait for its realm to be entirely devoured by the Spiritual Realm, they could become immortal cultivators and receive rewards from the Spiritual Realm's heaven.

In the Spiritual Realm, there were a few such powerful beings. They way they rose up were through numerous victories in bloody battles.

At this stage, all the powerful beings in the Spiritual Realm already had a common agreement to work together and attack other realms. Furthermore, they agreed to maintain the stability of the upper management and would not easily allow others to vie for their authority.

"Since that's the case..."

Fang Yuan suddenly opened his mouth and spoke, "The natural source of the Spiritual Realm is deficient too? This explains why it must devour other realms to nourish it? Furthermore, the normal people at your side cannot easily absorb spiritual energy too? Is this just the privilege of sect members?"

"You are rather smart, eh? Even if it's true, so what?"

Ancestor Red Cloud answered in a slightly surprised tone as he stared at Fang Yuan.

Even the Spiritual Realm would be short of spiritual energy?

Although it sounded absurd, it was actually reasonable.

After all, the sects and powerful beings it supplied to were very horrifying, they were like swarms of locusts and it was a heavy burden.

Thus, the Spiritual Realm had to devour Planet Earth Realm's rich natural source to replenish its own elemental energy.

All the spiritual energy the Spiritual Realm supplied over to this realm were heavy expenditures that were painfully squeezed out from the big sects and the elders.

"Sigh..."

After Fang Yuan received the answer, he sighed and was rather desolated. "I can't believe even the deities and divine beings of a higher dimension Spiritual Realm cannot achieve immortality and live forever!"

"Little kid, you are smart! If you are from the Spiritual Realm, I would not mind accepting you as my disciple, but unfortunately..."

Ancestor Red Cloud waved his arm and a small world pressed down from the red cloud.

All the powerful beings in this realm felt as though there was a 1000 ton thing crushing them at once. Under the suppression of such a high-tiered power, they could not use any of their techniques.

Just with his own power, he could suppress numerous 4th Tiers; this was the mighty and ferocious power a 5th Tier powerful being! The difference between one tier was worlds apart!

"Slow down, Ancestor Red Cloud!"

"How could such great benefits be reaped by you yourself only?"

...

Loud noises came from two other sides. It was obvious that other Divine Refining Grade powerful beings were rushing over quickly.

"I'm so dead!"

At this stage, even Long Lizi gave up on the hope of resisting and closed his eyes.

"Cough cough! Everybody!"

Suddenly, a whisper could be heard in their ears. The source of the whisper was Fang Yuan.

Even under the area, Fang Yuan still stood firmly and stared at Ancestor Red Cloud, who was on top of the clouds, with no fear.

"If you don't want to die, immediately hand over the command of the arrays of the entire Planet Earth to me!"

Fang Yuan secretly sent out his spiritual will to urge them.

"There's no use!"

Long Lizi smiled miserably, "Once the array is activated, there's no possibility of turning back..... Also, those array eyes have already automatically combined together, no one can destroy it..."

"Who says... I am going to stop the array?"

Fang Yuan returned a surreptitious smile.

# Chapter 461: Appearance

---

"You want the command to the array?"

Venerable Moonchaser's expression changed, "Sure enough... you secretly tampered the 9 Halls Flying Star Array, right?"

"Impossible!"

Long Lizi immediately denied such a possibility and continued, "Although the 9 Halls Flying Star Array and the arrays in East and West Continent are planned by me, they are mostly still guided and enlightened by the Spiritual Realm's heavenly will... it's impossible for them to go wrong!"

"So, how is it? This is now your final chance."

Fang Yuan stood with his hands behind his back and gazed towards the skies.

He saw the red clouds tumbling and gathering together with the oncoming green flashes and lightning. It was evident that there were a few powerful Area Beings who rushed over and they were reaching an agreement.

"Fang Yuan, I am willing to trust you!"

Farquhar was the first to pronounce his trust. He then passed a golden coloured feather to Fang Yuan and said, "I have fully handed over the command of the arrays in East Continent to you!"

"Us too!"

After Farquhar pronounced, the first ancestors of the vampires and the werewolves immediately agreed too.

"No matter what happens next, it wouldn't be worse than now!"

Under the flashing lights, Long Lizi and Venerable Moonchaser finished contemplating and finally handed over their command too.

Most cultivators were a bunch of unprincipled and disloyal people. Even though Fang Yuan was their arch-enemy just moments ago and even killed one of their Hidden Cultivators Sect's member previously, in order to survive, they decided to make peace at once.

"Hmm..."

Fang Yuan closed his eyes and started to feel how all the arrays were linking together.

He could sense thousands of nodes forming a powerful array that was continuously extracting Planet Earth Realm's source and transferring it to Spiritual King Island.

Currently, the island had already expanded at an unimaginable speed and was close to becoming a continent of its own.

'Although I had secretly made some alterations to the array which I can make use of during key moments, now that I have obtained the command, it's even better!'

At first, Fang Yuan had his own plans too.

Even if these high-tiered cultivators were all drawn over to the Spiritual Realm, Fang Yuan could still seize the command of these arrays through his alterations to turn the tables.

But of course, it was even better now.

The transfer of command and negotiations between these supernatural beings were very fast as they were through the communication of spiritual wills.

As these people on the ground finished settling their agreements, the three powerful beings on top seemed to have come to terms already too. The fearsome gaze from their eyes immediately landed on these people below them.

"Crackle!"

Above the skies, ominous dark clouds loomed and all sorts of

lightning and thunder flashed crazily and kept on merging together.

"Quickly stop that person!"

For some unknown reason, Ancestor Red Cloud and his bunch immediately shouted as they felt fear and anxiety when they saw Fang Yuan.

Unfortunately, it was too late.

On Fang Yuan's forehead, a strange four-pointed magical inscription appeared. It was the image that represented the complete command over the arrays of the three big continents and the ocean.

"It's possible..."

Fang Yuan sensed a mighty and vast will constantly infiltrating into this realm. It was deep within the arrays and controlled each and every array eye.

Due to the undying nature of these array eyes, even if Fang Yuan wanted to stop them, it would be extremely troublesome.

However, he had never thought of stopping them.

Instead, with another thought, within Huiming City, the entire array immediately sped up by more than 10 times of the previous speed. It began to operate even more rapidly.

"What is... happening?"

Lin Ming stood on the balcony and his limbs felt weak and numb.

Currently, everything that was happening in the skies was already way beyond his imagination.

Lin Ming did not know what was happening to this realm.

He laid on the floor and watched the changes happening to the array. Inside his mind, he was finally clear that some sort of change had occurred to the array.

At the next moment, an extremely strong suction force that was 10 times stronger than before suddenly appeared below Lin Ming's body and he immediately fainted.

"6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array, rise!"

Fang Yuan chanted and changes occurred to all the array eyes at the same time.

The original function of the existing array was to extract and sacrifice this realm's natural source, and this was similar to some of Sage Changli's plans. Currently, Fang Yuan was not forcefully trying to stop it or alter it, he was just giving the array a slight push during in its process.

An analogy would be, what Fang Yuan was doing was not stepping on the brake of a speeding car. He merely nudged the steering wheel gently, greatly changed the course of the car at once.

"Gak!"

Even such a level of change caused Fang Yuan to immediately feel a strong backlash which almost made him cough out blood.

Also, the originally silent will of the Spiritual Realm was suddenly enraged.

"It would be too difficult to go against the heavenly will with just my strength!"

Fang Yuan wiped away the blood on the corner of his lips and suddenly laughed, "Planet Earth's will... you are close to being perished, if you still want to live on, you can only cooperate with me and complete this sacrifice!"

Although Fang Yuan was an otherworldly demon, his stand was clear from the start. He even killed a key member of Hidden Cultivators Sect recently which displayed his loyalty and was unusually eye-catching compared to the other high-tiered traitors.

After Fang Yuan screamed such, the lightning and clouds in the skies reacted immediately. Purple-gold coloured lightning bolts landed and formed an electrical cage which surrounded and protected Fang Yuan. This obstructed the attacks from the three Area Beings.

At the same time, a slightly weakened will joined the contest for the nodes of the arrays.

"Since both sides are extracting the natural source, why not put up a desperate fight!"

The four-pointed rune on Fang Yuan's forehead changed into the shape of a six-pointed star.

"Within Sage Changli's inheritance, it mentioned about sacrificing an entire world to connect with the source world of dream masters. Today, I shall thoroughly experiment this!"

A violet ball of light was thrown out and immediately, the skies and earth changed.

Large amounts of this realm's natural source were extracted and sacrificed to a certain world in the dark.

"That is... his original world?"

Long Lizi and others did not know what Fang Yuan's ambitions were. They only thought that he was trying to draw over his own world to grab some benefits for his own world, while Planet Earth Realm would be happy as it reaps the benefits as the two sides battled.

"Sacrificing the natural source for Da Qian World? They think I'm dumb?" Fang Yuan secretly thought as he stood in the epicentre of the storm.

There were too many powerful beings in Da Qian and they had access to the coordinates of this realm. Once they discovered Fang Yuan was doing such a thing, they would immediately come over and strike brutally. In the end, Fang Yuan would gain nothing.



Although he could free himself from the trouble, it was not in line with his fundamental interest!

Therefore, Fang Yuan directly used this rare opportunity to add fuel to the fire, which forced Planet Earth's will to be backed into a corner. Thus, Planet Earth's will could only cooperate with Fang Yuan and his experiment on Sage Changli's inheritance!

Although the natural source of this Planet Earth Realm was not as rich as Da Qian's and the 6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array was only an incomplete version, it still met the minimum requirements.

"The legendary dream master's source world... come forth!"

Fang Yuan raised both his arms up high.

Instantly, with Fang Yuan as the core, all the continents in Planet Earth roared.

Horrifying breaths of the earth gathered and formed the shape of the 6 Extremes Array at a spot above Huiming City. It then suddenly rushed to the skies.

"This is... another world?"

"This is not good! Quickly stop it!"

"Do not let him succeed, else we would be offending the heaven!"

In the skies, Ancestor Red Cloud and two other Area Beings glared furiously and bellowed. They then immediately whipped out all sorts of magical equipment and divine techniques.

Unfortunately, Planet Earth's will was now very clear that if they were no changes, it could not escape the catastrophe today. Hence, it firmly guarded Fang Yuan and the entire array operated smoothly.

'The might of Sage Changli's array is truly unimaginable...'

The six-pointed star on Fang Yuan's forehead was now shining and flashing at maximum intensity. It had already exhausted all its

energy for the operation of the array.

'This array was meant for those who are at least at the 7th Tier of Illusionary Divine. Although my strength is still insufficient currently... luckily, I have the full cooperation from Planet Earth's will! Else, I'm afraid I would really be defeated!'

Fang Yuan heaved a long sigh. Six giant yellowish-brown dragons rose to the skies and chased after the violet ball of light Fang Yuan threw out just now.

Fang Yuan obtained this ball of light from Sage Changli's inheritance. It was an ever-changing beacon of data.

Although the real location of the source world of dream masters could not be discovered, as long as an immense natural source was sacrificed, it would immediately attract the attention of the dream masters' source world. Thus, the dream master' source world might even abnormally advent.

"Roar! Roar! Roar! Roar! Roar! Roar!"

After six loud roars, the giant yellowish-brown dragons charged to the ball of light and disappeared at once.

At that spot above the skies, a giant gloomy and black coloured hole appeared.

"D\\*mn it! It has been summoned by him!"

"Is that another world?"

Ancestor Red Cloud's face was filled with uncertainty, "If that is a very weak world, perhaps we can conquer yet another world!"

However, would the world Fang Yuan summon be really such a weak and small world?

Such a ridiculous thought was so unbelievable even to their opponents.

Ancestor Red Cloud was merely putting up a front. After he saw the black hole was formed, he immediately had thoughts about

retreating.

"Rumble!"

At that moment, a mighty will suddenly descended.

This will was misty and grand, it also brought about changes to the spiritual energy. The moment it appeared, it strongly pushed aside the will of Planet Earth.

There were even streaks of chaotic and violet coloured lightning bolts that surged about in the air and struck towards the black hole.

"Even the heavenly will cannot hold it any longer and is forced to strike!"

As Ancestor Red Cloud watched such a scene, he could not wait to escape and flee away. However, now that the Spiritual Realm's will had descended, it was as though the emperor was personally commanding the army. The generals at the frontline would not be able to flee.

Ancestor Red Cloud and the other Area Beings could only bite the bullet and remain at the frontline. Their minds were racing as they thought, "What kind of world is that... It could even alarm our Spiritual Realm's will?"

In the higher dimension, the Spiritual Realm was a very powerful world. It could even break free from dimensional restrictions and prey on other realms.

What else could cause the Spiritual Realm's will to feel alarmed and even fear?

That's right, it was fear!

As a 5th Tier Area Being, Ancestor Red Cloud could clearly sense the fear the will of the Spiritual Realm was feeling. It was as though... it saw its predator!

Under the eyes of many, the black hole grew larger and larger.

Immediately, streaks of nebulous dream-like spiritual aura began to dissipate from the black hole.

Fang Yuan was affected by this spiritual aura and instantly felt that his dream elemental force was recovering swiftly. It then began to suppress the spiritual energy inside his body.

"This is really... the dream master's source world?"

At the moment, after Fang Yuan made use of Planet Earth's natural source and the support from the array, he could really feel the source world of dream masters which was in an even higher dimension! That world was incredible and it was like the home of dream masters!

# Chapter 462: Three Kills

---

"Indeed... the dream master's source world really exists!"

At that moment, Fang Yuan was feeling extremely emotional.

Fang Yuan was the first to contact this profound mystery that countless of dream masters from Da Qian failed to reach.

"Actually, I was just lucky!"

In order to break through the dimensional restrictions and link with the dream masters' world, a beacon would first be required.

Before Sage Changli's hidden inheritance was exposed, the research of other sages in Da Qian never reached such a stage.

After the profound mystery was exposed, numerous parties had parts of the research data. Unfortunately, they did not have a place to conduct the experiments.

After all, there were not many realms that had a natural source as rich Planet Earth Realm's.

Previously, there was still the Ancient Realm. Even though its Sage, The Ancient One, controlled the people dao of that realm, it could not go against the heavenly will to sacrifice its natural source as an experiment.

If he had done that, people dao would experience a backlash immediately! Afterwards, the Ancient Realm even expelled the Sage and sealed off itself, which made it even harder to conduct the experiment there.

In terms of the richness of natural source, after Ancient Realm, it was Planet Earth Realm.

However, this realm was like a sinkhole from the start and even Elder Extreme Darkness was severely defeated here. Thus, not many sages dared to take this risk.

Furthermore, all their thoughts and efforts were on Da Qian. As

long as they succeeded in their plans this time and directly brought over the dream master's source world, similar to how the Spiritual Realm was brought over to this realm, what else would they have to do?

Only Fang Yuan made use of this opportunity whereby the Spiritual Realm was invading Planet Earth Realm to drive Planet Earth Realm's will into a corner and thus, allowed him to summon the dream master's source world.

Due to the numerous coincidences and Fang Yuan's hard work in devising all these plans, there was finally an accomplishment now!

Fang Yuan roared to the skies. The six-pointed star on his forehead was flashing intensely.

"Roar!"

Behind Fang Yuan's body, the giant Pangu Eagle Body completely materialised before it roared and charged into Fang Yuan's body.

"Crackle!"

Under the support of countless energy sources, Fang Yuan's cultivation restored in an instant and it was even going higher and higher.

In Fang Yuan's sight, his stats board flashed and the values changed completely:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 100

Spirit: 100

Magic: 70

Profession: Dream Soldier Master

Cultivation: Illusionary Divine (4th Tier), True Divine

Technique: [Pangu Eagle Body (? ? ?)], [8 Gates Sword Array (5th Sword) (10%)], [Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell (Grade

5 (99.99%))]

Skill: [Medicine (Level 3)], [Botany (Level 5)], [Fiery Golden Eyes (Level 1)]"

"There were breakthroughs in my magical energy and my actualised dream world is restored too... Indeed, dream elemental force is the true source of energy for dream masters!"

Fang Yuan waved his arm and the wind, thunder, water, fire sword appeared around him, forming an emblem. They then turned into a miniature area that stacked together with his own Spiritual Arena, and the resultant area could even contend with the power of a spiritual territory.

"Ok, I can finally go all out!"

Fang Yuan rubbed his neck and looked at the three Area Beings with eyes filled with eagerness.

They were equivalent to three 7th Tier Illusionary Divine powerful beings in Da Qian!

Fang Yuan now had the support of the realm's will and he was undefeatable, how could he not have a good match with them and gain some experience?

"Dream..."

"Demonic Heart!!!"

At the next moment, something that was unimaginable to Fang Yuan happened.

The fierce battle he expected to happen did not occur.

On the contrary, after the black hole opened up and dream elemental force came into Planet Earth Realm, the Spiritual Realm's will was unsettled and sent out an extremely frightened spiritual will before it suddenly retracted at once and disappeared without a trace.

"It..."

Fang Yuan was stunned for a moment. He then immediately felt the will of the Spiritual Realm returning to the Spiritual King Island. It even began to close the link between the two realms at all cost. It was as though the will was abandoning everything and completely severing the ties between the two realms.

"This world... could it be..."

Meanwhile, Ancestor Red Cloud suddenly remembered a description recorded in one of his sect's text.

"A world higher than our Spiritual Realm? Such that even the will of the realm is retreating?"

"Quickly retreat!!"

Immediately, the three Area Beings rapidly fled away like a stream of light. In the blink of an eye, they turned into black spots and were close to disappearing.

"What..... is that... world?"

Below, Long Lizi, Venerable Moonchaser and others looked at Fang Yuan with awe.

To them, the Spiritual Realm was already like a legendary divine world. However, this new world could even cause the Spiritual Realm's will to flee without putting up a fight! What exactly was it?

"Stop!"

How could Fang Yuan let go of his prey so easily?

The Spiritual Realm's will was not something he could stop from leaving. However, Fang Yuan would never let go of these three Area Beings.

"Rumble!"

Under the noise, clouds tumbled in the skies and thousands of lightning bolts suddenly struck!



Countless purple-gold lightning bolts struck like a giant net as they kept retracting closer before finally cornering Ancestor Red Cloud.

"A Fate Soul?"

Ancestor Red Cloud looked at Fang Yuan cautiously.

When a realm or a plane was under invasion, its natural source would carefully create a powerful being, which would be known as a Fate Soul. This Fate Soul would take up the role as the leader of the resistance.

After all, there were many boundaries which the will of the realm could not cross. However, this would be different for Fate Souls.

Below Fate Souls, there were Energy Souls who were more ordinary. They would occasionally appear when revolutions occur in the realm.

However, Fang Yuan was now way beyond the concept of a Fate Soul. Now, he could be considered a Realm Agent!

Moreover, what he represented now was not just a mere Planet Earth Realm!

"Die!"

The 4 Emblems Sword Array immediately flew out at once and trapped Ancestor Red Cloud.

"A mere miniature area!"

Ancestor Red Cloud hollered and the red clouds behind him tumbled. A small plane then appeared as he continued, "The power of divinity, bless my body!"

Ancestor Red Cloud was a substantial elder. Even if he was placed in Da Qian World, he would be at the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage and his power was boundless.

As he hollered, the entire 4 Emblems Sword Array shook. It was as though a ferocious tiger was trapped in a wooden cage, with the

cage at its breaking point.

"Hmph!"

In spite of that, being the Realm Agent of Planet Earth, Fang Yuan remained awe-inspiring and fearless.

As he exclaimed, four lightning bolts landed on the sword array and immediately completed the area of the 4 Emblems.

Furthermore, the dream spiritual aura that was continuously emitted from the black hole in mid-air began to suppress all other forms of techniques. As miraculous changes occurred, it then began to invade into the red cloud plane behind Ancestor Red Cloud which made his expression change, "This is..."

Streaks of dream elemental force entered the red cloud plane and immediately dispersed.

Through the red cloud, living things could be seen falling into deep sleep one by one. At last, the entire plane became still.

Furthermore, in the haze, changes began to happen on the bodies of all the living things. A layer of dark shadow superposed on them and their looks began to turn savage.

"4 Emblems Sword Array, unite!"

Fang Yuan pointed his finger and the wind, thunder, water and fire swords merged together before landing on the stunned Ancestor Red Cloud.

"Poof!"

The magical equipment on Ancestor Red Cloud's body automatically appeared to protect its owner. His shirt bedazzled in an array of colours and it was a magical equipment that was exceptionally defensive.

Nevertheless, all these were useless.

Upon being touched by the 4 Emblems Sword Array which was boosted by the realm's will, the equipment dismantled at once. The

four magical swords immediately pierced into Ancestor Red Cloud's body. Blood spewed everywhere and his soul was annihilated.

This was the might of a sword!

In front of such a mighty sword, those bystanders were all stunned and in awe. Even Fang Yuan felt amazed inside his heart.

'After being boosted by Planet Earth's will, my 4 Emblems Sword Array can defeat Area Beings... What's more important is the influence of the Dream Realm... Is this the real dream elemental force? Just a little bit of it was enough to make this 5th Tier Immortal Cultivator become tranced and have his heart and mind messed up until to the point where he becomes so easily slaughtered?'

"Ahhh... this is the Demonic Heart Realm! You are from the Demonic Heart Realm!"

Seeing such, the two other Area Beings shrieked and ran towards the lightning bolts.

Even though they were forced to retreat by the lightning bolts just now, the moment they thought of the Demonic Heart Realm, they immediately fled despite knowing they would be severely injured by the heavenly punishments.

"Demonic Heart Realm? What an apt name!"

Fang Yuan smiled and took a step forward. It was as though he teleported right in front one of the powerful being.

"Die!"

"Roar!"

Behind Fang Yuan, the giant hollered and struck out a giant green coloured fist.

This was the full strength punch of a martial artist cultivation True Divine. Originally, it was comparable to the attack of a 7th

Tier Illusionary Divine powerful being. Now, with the boost from this realm's will and with how the dream realm was weakening the opponents, this punch was truly unstoppable and matchless.

The expression of the man in a purple robe in front of Fang Yuan changed immediately. At that instant, before he could even block the punch, it landed on his chest.

"Bang!"

A gigantic explosion was formed.

This 5th Tier powerful being was fully obliterated in one punch. He could not even beg for mercy in time.

"No... let me off!"

At that moment, Fang Yuan took another step and arrived in front of a woman in a skirt.

She was scared pale and was begging for mercy non-stop.

"How much do you know about the Demonic Heart Realm?" Fang Yuan said calmly.

Fang Yuan's voice had a strong will which made this woman involuntarily speak the truth, "I don't know, I only know through ancient texts that the Spiritual Realm met the Demonic Heart Realm before and had suffered great losses... Sir, please spare my life, I can do everything you want..."

This woman had beautiful eyes and eyebrows. Her body was graceful and demeanour was charming, she was a rare beauty. As she pleaded, it invoked a rather moving and touching feeling.

"When you invaded other realms, have you ever spared anyone's life?"

To Fang Yuan, it was just fleeting beauty.

Fang Yuan then punched forward before flicking his finger. The thunder sword received the might of the heavens and its sword essence was overbearing. It was not lacklustre at all compared to

the fist.

"Bang!"

With one punch, the defensive magical equipment on this woman's body shattered at once. The thunder sword then pierced through her head with no obstructions the next moment.

"Swoosh!"

A white stream of light flew out which was grabbed by Fang Yuan.

"Refine!"

These three Area Beings were all powerful beings of the Spiritual Realm. The spiritual energies in their bodies were extraordinarily pure.

After Fang Yuan killed them and obtained their essence, a bottleneck in his body began to loosen up.

"Kacha!"

A crisp noise was heard!

Fang Yuan elatedly looked inside him and saw that the 5th Grade of his Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell was breaking through the bottleneck. This spell which he specially created for this realm was finally close to completion!

# Chapter 463: Retreat

---

Planet Earth Realm was a realm with harsh physical laws and even Sages would be rendered powerless here.

With the invasion of the Spiritual Realm in the form of the Spiritual King Comet, the introduction of spiritual energy in the realm slowly led to the existences of mutants and special techniques.

Therefore, the Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell which Fang Yuan had created was more suited for the Spiritual Realm than for Planet Earth Realm. Therefore, it would require the supplement of spiritual droplets.

If not for the fact that Fang Yuan had absorbed a few spiritual energy nodes previously, he would not have been able to advance in his cultivation so quickly.

This was also the same for Long Lizi, Venerable Moonchaser and Farquhar.

Before the fourth occurrence, no one would be able to attain the 5th Tier. This was why all of them were being defeated by Ancestor Red Cloud so easily.

They were unlike Fang Yuan who could achieve whatever level of cultivation as long as he had the resources without being restricted by bottlenecks.

Cultivators of the East had to train in seclusion while mutants from the west will have to increase their abilities over time. Both processes would take a long period of time.

However, things were different for Fang Yuan!

With the nourishment from the surroundings and the fact that he had just defeated 3 Area Beings and absorbed their spiritual energy, it was as though he had just consumed 3 nutritious pills and his cultivation in Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell

had started to surge!

In his stats window, the proficiency bar transformed from 99.99% to 100%! There were huge changes in the window now:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 100

Spirit: 100

Magic: 100

Profession: Dream Soldier Master

Cultivation: Illusionary Divine (4th Tier), True Divine, Area Being (???)

Technique: [Pangu Eagle Body (? ? ?)], [8 Gates Sword Array (5th Sword) (10%)], [Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell (Grade 5 (Completed))]

Skill: [Medicine (Level 3)], [Botany (Level 5)], [Fiery Golden Eyes (Level 1)]"

"Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell: The 1st Grade would grant you the Spiritual Droplets Affined Body and an increase in your energy sense! 2nd Grade of Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell would grant you the ability to release spiritual energy! The 3rd Grade of Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell would grant you the ability to spiritualise! The 4th Grade would grant you the possession of the Spiritual Arena! The 5th Grade is completed! The Spiritual Arena has been promoted to a Spiritual Territory!"

The previously small arena started to unfold as though a scroll as being opened.

Within the Area, Fang Yuan could feel as though he was in control of everything.

This was the power of the Area!

"Although the Area Beings here are still weaker than those in Da Qian due to the fact that the worlds are different, as long as I have the opportunity, I will be able to achieve a breakthrough easily back in Da Qian!"

He could feel that his Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell was totally different from before. With the advancement of his Arena to an Area, Fang Yuan was extremely satisfied.

"I am not only a True Divine but also an Area Being in terms of my mind! I have achieved breakthroughs in all three aspects! Even Elder Extreme Darkness is no match for me now!"

"Rumble!"

At this point in time, everyone could feel that the huge Spiritual King Island on the ocean was undergoing a certain change.

After a huge explosion, the space around started to vibrate violently and even Fang Yuan himself could feel the departure of a certain powerful realm.

That was the Spiritual Realm's will doing all it could to sever all ties with this realm. Furthermore, it no longer cared about the spiritual energy it had once invested in this realm as well as the cultivators it had brought along with it to invade the realm. Everything was being given up.

Such determination from the Spiritual Realm's will shocked even Fang Yuan and it gave everyone the shudders.

'Initially, I thought that the realm of dream masters would be more powerful than the Spiritual Realm but... who would've thought... the disparity is too huge...'

Only a hint of spiritual aura from the dream masters' realm was needed to send the Spiritual Realm scrambling back. Even Fang Yuan was stunned and shocked.

...



In the Spiritual Realm.

The rivers were flowing in the mountains and a few powerful beings descended with a grand entrance.

"I can feel the urgency of the will of the realm!"

As soon as they arrived at the ocean, they gazed towards the huge island where the two realms had collided and remained speechless. "From previous observations, that realm should have minimal ability to fight back!"

"Things must have changed to result in what had happened today!"

The will of a powerful being was heard from the side. "If not for the fact that we are afraid of being targeted by the realm's will, none of us would have left such an important mission to our subordinates!"

"Crackle!"

At this moment, the skies turned dark and streaks of lightning appeared, striking the island in the middle.

"Rumble!"

As the lightning struck, the island disintegrated and the intersection of the realms started to crack, opening up a void in the middle.

"Oh no, the transference array has failed!"

Another powerful being started to predict the happenings. "Our subordinates are still in that realm!"

"How can the will of our realm be so determined to sacrifice them?!"

A few others exchanged glances and felt that something had gone wrong.

With that, they released their spiritual will and could detect a

hint of spiritual aura.

"That is..."

"The Demonic Heart Realm!!! This is bad! Quickly seal off the connection and segregate the two worlds!"

Even the powerful being who had lost most of his subordinates was actively trying to execute techniques to seal the connection.

He no longer cared about how many disciples or concubines he had left behind in the other realm.

This was because the Demonic Heart Realm was rumoured to be the most vicious realm in the entire universe!

The Spiritual Realm had once collided with the Demonic Heart Realm and the price to pay was the death of most of its population.

This was because the strongest spiritual aura of the Demonic Heart Realm was like a plague which could be spread through any type of medium. It preferred cultivators and would most likely spread to these people.

The mighty and powerful Demonic Heart Realm left a lasting impression in the hearts of the powerful beings of the Spiritual Realm.

"May the will of the realm assist me!"

"Purple Lightning, 9 Dragons Extreme Array!"

"East Green Wood, Sky Blocking Canopies!"

Every powerful being was strengthening the seal and cutting of the connection between the realms.

The will of the Spiritual Realm was continuously transferring energy to help out the process and finally, it had come to an end.

The illusionary shadow of the devastated island drifted further and further away and soon disappeared.

"Phew... We are fortunate!"

"No one knew that there would be such a desperate person in that other realm who will be willing to sacrifice everything!"

"These are the dangers of realm hunting. We are fortunate enough to have stopped it in time and prevent any disaster!"

The few powerful beings gathered together and were deep in their thoughts.

What about those people who were left behind in Planet Earth Realm? No one would care about them any more.

...

"The collision of the two realms has been reverted... What a good move!"

On Planet Earth Realm, Fang Yuan witnessed everything but did not interfere with the process.

After all, even though he was at the level of a powerful being in terms of his spiritual and martial arts, he was still a long way from becoming a Sage. Previously, he had leveraged on the will of Planet Earth to help him fend off the invaders and therefore, he would not stupidly give chase.

"With this, my efforts are not in vain!"

He gazed at his right palm. In it, there was an illusionary green glow which took the form of a green tree branch.

"I now have the coordinates of the Spiritual Realm and I will be sure to visit it someday in the future!"

The Spiritual Realm had already given up on the invasion and therefore, these few fighters would lose their source of energy. With enough time, these cultivators would slowly be digested by the realm. To Planet Earth, this time, not only had it escaped the invasion of another realm, it had instead increased in spiritual energy in the form of these fighters.

This was taking into account that they could settle another

problem.

"The Demonic Heart Realm!"

Fang Yuan raised his head up and could see an expanding black hole above him.

Strictly speaking, although Fang Yuan had communicated with the dream masters' realm, he did not initiate the collision of the realms. After all, considering the foundations of Planet Earth, it was impossible for it to a complete collision with another realm.

However, just the spiritual aura and the strength from the Demonic Heart Realm was enough to send the Spiritual Realm fleeing and this was something no one had expected.

Although they had used the tiger to chase the wolf away, they now had to deal with the tiger.

'This was originally a crippled array. The foundations of Planet Earth is weak and I have only communicated with the dream masters' realm and used up a little bit of power. This should not be enough for me to form a stable connection to allow anything to enter...'

Fang Yuan gazed at the black hole and started to collect his thoughts.

Furthermore, his actualised dream world was activated as well as he continuously absorbed the purest form of dream elemental energy from the Demonic Heart Realm.

'In conclusion, this was something bad and something good. The good thing is that Planet Earth will now be similar to Da Qian since both are now covered in the radiation of dream elemental energy. From today onwards, there will be dream masters on Planet Earth and this place will be the playground for dream masters... but the bad thing...'

"Rumble!"

From the black hole, the space warped as though a certain being was forcing its way through the boundaries of the realms. Unfortunately, due to the restrictions of the realms, it was unsuccessful.

Everyone felt fear at that moment.

"Is this a... higher-tiered realm? This is too captivating..."

Below, the Werewolf's First Ancestor, Jon, gazed at the black hole and was in a trance. He did not notice that streaks of silver dream elemental force had already seeped into his hair.

"Crack! Crack!"

In that instant, his shoulders had crumbled and from both sides of his body, there were two heads growing out. A pair of bat wings were also growing from his back and in that instant, he had transformed into a monster!

"Jon... you!"

Curtly sounded different this time. Within moments, he was being sliced into two pieces by the claws of the wolf and his head fell into the wolf's mouth.

"Oh, sh\*t!"

Fang Yuan witnessed the scene and understood everything. "The pure dream elemental force has resulted in the over-mutation of Jon..."

The dream masters of Da Qian would make use of their magical energy to control the dream elemental force. After processing the dream elemental force, they would be able to transfer it to their actualised dream world.

Now, because of the illusionary connection, although physical bodies could not pass, pure dream elemental force could flow through without any resistance.

These cultivators who had only experienced spiritual energy

could not handle the purest form of dream elemental force and therefore were overwhelmed by it.

A few of them even lost control of their minds after falling into their dream worlds, turning into dream slaves for eternity.

"One's accomplishment is dependent on one's ability... None of you are qualified enough to absorb the power from the Demonic Heart Realm!"

Fang Yuan scoffed but became alert. With that, he absorbed the dream elemental force and transferred it to his actualised dream world before containing it with his 8 Gates Sword Array.

"The monsters that have evolved from the dream elemental force will, unfortunately, be controlled by a more powerful dream master... if that is so..."

Fang Yuan gazed at the black hole. Indeed, through the air, he could see a black shadow which he could not find words to describe.

After attempting to break through the realms and failing, the black shadow vibrated and a voice was heard in everyone's mind. "I am Hades! You weak beings... Give me all of you!"

This voice was filled with evil and after hearing it, Fang Yuan felt giddy and nauseous.

Long Lizi and the rest stood where they were, stunned. Suddenly, a stream of dream elemental force started to flow through their bodies and all of them were undergoing weird mutations in that instant.

# Chapter 464: Cleaning Up the Mess

---

"Are they related?!"

As Fang Yuan looked at Long Lizi and the few others mutate, he seemed to have thought of something.

It was rumoured that a higher being would be able to influence and radiate energy by just merely existing and therefore able to alter the environment and biodiversity, turning everything into its slave.

The prime examples would be The Dragon, The Kobold and The Lizard.

Although Fang Yuan did not visit these worlds before, he had read about them in the information bank before.

Even dragons could only create dependants from their blood.

Against this higher-order demonic king, it was even scarier. Just by seeing and hearing it, one would be affected by its dream elemental force!

If not for the fact that Fang Yuan was a high-tiered dream master and had developed a resistance against dream elemental force, he might also lose control of himself upon hearing the voice and enter a nightmare for an eternity before his body would be manipulated by the higher being.

"The most powerful beings of Planet Earth are already gathered here and yet, everyone is being captured in one fell swoop..."

Fang Yuan examined his surroundings before frowning. "No wonder... these were already beings manipulated by the Spiritual Realm. In addition to what had happened today, it is no surprise that they would be easily manipulated once more!"

"Kill!"

In a single thought, Fang Yuan released his Area and quickly

arrived in front of Long Lizi to land a punch on him.

"Ah... you!"

At this point in time, half of Long Lizi's face was covered in a black smog. One of his eyes were bloodshot and the other half was normal. With a ferocious look, it was obvious that he was putting up a strong fight.

Seeing how Fang Yuan had made his way before him, his expression changed as he stopped resisting the mutation, for the only chance he had for survival was to be completely mutated to become stronger.

Unfortunately, Fang Yuan's right fist had already struck out towards his head.

"Once these monsters have complete their mutation, they will be the slaves of Demonic Heart Realm. By then, I cannot do anything to them and therefore I should strike first! I shall take this opportunity to kill them as they resist the mutation in them and remain oblivious to their surroundings.

These people were Energy Souls of a single generation and their actions would directly affect the future of the 3 continents.

Any native of Planet Earth would surely find it hard to kill these people.

However, Fang Yuan had none of these considerations. After killing Long Lizi, he flew towards Venerable Moonchaser, grabbed her hands and pulled them apart.

Blood spewed everywhere and her ladylike demure was gone in an instant.

"Hehe!"

Farquhar was the first among them to complete the mutation. The 3 pairs of wings on his back transformed into eagle wings and his head turned into an eagle head as well. With outstretched



wings, he was about to escape with the three-headed wolf.

"Are you thinking of escaping?"

Fang Yuan contracted his spiritual territory and pulled the two monsters towards him.

The claws and talons of the wolf and the eagle struck on Fang Yuan's body but to no avail. Fang Yuan tightened the grip on his right hand and in an instant, the weird-looking bird head exploded and the bird-man fell to the ground.

"Ahwhooooo!"

The three-headed wolf opened his jaws wide and bit on Fang Yuan's arm. A purple hue glowed and Fang Yuan's arm remained unharmed.

"Die!"

With a shout, Fang Yuan forcefully opened the jaws of the wolf.

Behind him, the Pangu Eagle Body shouted as well as its gigantic hands came together.

"Ahwhooooo~~~"

The giant wolf continued to howl as it was being battered into a bloodied mess.

"Mortal!"

At this point in time, an anonymous voice was heard coming from the black hole. "You... you've enraged me! You will feel Hades' wrath!"

"I'm sorry..."

Fang Yuan shook his head. "It's time you disappear!"

Since Fang Yuan had already prepared to test his ideas out in this realm, how would he not think about his own safety?

In allowing the Dream Realm to enter for both worlds to suffer huge losses, his plan was far from perfection.

What was most important was the array covering the entire Planet Earth!

After stalling so much time since the retreat of the Spiritual Realm, if Planet Earth's will was still unable to regain autonomy of the realm, then it would deserve to be absorbed by other realms!

"Rumble!"

Indeed, in the next moment, the four-pointed magical inscription on Fang Yuan's forehead shook and started to disperse its strength.

"The original array was in place to guide the Spiritual Realm to enter. However, it has been altered by me to become the 6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array and therefore its powers have been restricted... In fact, considering Planet Earth's foundation, it is not even qualified to break through higher dimensions and guide the Demonic Heart Realm to descend here!"

Fang Yuan was unwilling to allow the dream masters' realm to descend, resulting in him having nowhere else to go.

He would rather see such a situation where both realms did not dare to push on and invade.

The situation was now in his favour, for he did not know that the Spiritual Realm would retreat so quickly after even detecting a tinge of Demonic Heart Realm's spiritual aura.

Otherwise, if the Spiritual Realm was determined, it would realise that the connection between the Demonic Heart Realm and Planet Earth Realm was too unstable to support any powerful being in descending to the realm.

In other words, the Spiritual Realm was being scared away.

"Planet Earth's will, please assist me one final time!"

Fang Yuan hollered as the spiritual aura in him started to surge.

The original giant yellowish-brown dragons appeared once again and exhausted all their energy to fly up into the sky.

"The dragons have no leader. 6 Extremes Earth Combination, create the heavens!"

As Fang Yuan recited the mantra, a streak of emerald glow shot up into the sky and disappeared.

A mysterious vibration was felt everywhere, forming a huge extreme array with the skies as the foundation - the 9 Heavenly Sky Net Array!

This was a real Heavenly Array! Humans will never be able to do it on their own accord and it could only be made possible with the help of the will of the realm! Now that Planet Earth's will and Fang Yuan were on the same side, Fang Yuan's plan was extremely smooth-sailing.

"May the Heaven and Earth combine! Separate!"

As the 9 Heavenly Sky Net Array slowly took in the energy from the 6 dragons, it had pushed itself to the maximum potential as described by Sage Changli. The 6 Earths and 9 Heavens had combined to create an immense force which struck towards the black hole in mid-air.

"Crackle!"

"Crackle!"

The entire array across the planet shook and the process of taking in the planet's energy came to a momentary halt.

At that moment, the immense force formed a blade which glittered under the sun.

Even the black hole and the space around it started to break down as the giant blade struck it.

"You..."

Through the void, Fang Yuan could detect the anger of a certain powerful being in it. However, he remained fearless.

Fang Yuan was now a powerful being in both martial arts and

spiritual techniques. Furthermore, the powerful being in the black hole was light years away from him.

With all these to help him, if Fang Yuan were to still lose the fight, he could only blame himself.

"Seal!"

After ensuring that the connection between the realms was broken, Fang Yuan's hands started to glow, creating countless seals which continuously sealed and healed the cracks formed from the appearance of the void and black hole.

He did not want any repercussions and was wary of allowing the Demonic Heart Realm to be able to squeeze through any voids which he might have left out.

After a long while, the entire realm started to settle down in silence.

"Buzz!"

The sun started to rise from the East, bringing warmth to the surface of the planet.

It was unknown as to when the will of the planet had left, leaving Fang Yuan weakened to the level of a normal powerful being.

Even so, Fang Yuan's cultivation would leave him as the most powerful being in the realm and he even had the power to unify the entire planet!

After all, in a single night, the strongest opposition had already died in his hands for various reasons and the remaining survivors were easy to deal with.

"It feels good to be able to control the realm's will and the power of the entire realm!"

Fang Yuan placed his hands behind his back and smiled in silence as he gazed towards Huiming City, which had just narrowly avoided a calamity.

This experiment allowed Fang Yuan to understand more secrets and ideas through the source of dream masters, the Demonic Heart Realm. He now had a better understanding of wars between realms as well.

Secondly, he finally broke through to the stage of harnessing the power of an Area. With this property, he would no longer experience a bottleneck if he were to advance to the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage back in Da Qian.

Thirdly, the planet and its people would feel grateful to him for saving the entire planet. Planet Earth's will would surely reward him handsomely for Fang Yuan had directly killed all those who were a threat to the planet. Since the other cultivators would start to flee or go into hiding, the realm would surely not dare to go against Fang Yuan. After all, Fang Yuan could recklessly kill people if he wanted to, but the realm's will could not strike anyone it wanted to with tribulations.

"Other than this, I still have Elder Extreme Darkness's magical clone... The benefits are plenty!"

Fang Yuan closed his eyes and was lost in his thoughts. "Is the spiritual energy reaching its normal level now? This speed of restoration is unheard of..."

The spike in spiritual energy was the bait which the Spiritual Realm had cast. Now that they had withdrawn all investments and that Planet Earth had been actively absorbing in the spiritual energy as well, it was no surprise that the spiritual droplets in the air would drastically drop.

"Of course, something else is different!"

Fang Yuan shut his eyes and felt his own actualised dream world.

"Because of the fact that I have connected myself with the Demonic Heart Realm, even though the connection has been severed, I can no longer segregate myself completely with the

realm... In this realm, if anyone can attain the required standards of Essence, Spirit and Magic, they can still potentially take in the dream elemental force from the surroundings and start on their journey of cultivation to become a dream master of their own!"

This would be the same system as the Spiritual Realm. Although Planet Earth had gotten rid of a hunter, it was now being targeted by yet another hunter.

"After this incident, Planet Earth should have learnt its lesson and relieve the planet of most of its restrictions and harsh physical laws to cultivate their own group of pioneer cultivators. It can even journey towards being supernormal and give up on science?"

Fang Yuan was extremely interested in the future development of this realm.

At this point in time, the realm shook once more.

The sun was high up in the sky and a purple fog started to spread from the East which shrouded around Fang Yuan.

The pure energy from the source of the realm left Fang Yuan a little intoxicated. He quickly snapped out of his trance and pulled the force into his actualised dream world.

It was the reward for his accomplishment.

He had to thank the will of the realm for being stubborn, unlike the Spiritual Realm's will which would deal with any otherworldly demon harshly.

However, Fang Yuan had already thought about this point. After all that had happened, there were no more supernormal beings on the planet and there were no other organisations which could possibly threaten him.

This could be a reason as to why the realm's will could quickly keep its promise to Fang Yuan.

"Alright, with all these energies from the source of the realm, I

can accelerate my cultivation as a dream master when I return to Da Qian!"

Fang Yuan clenched his fists and was excited.

The war in Da Qian was about to begin and he needed to strengthen up to protect himself and gain from the war.

However, the will of Planet Earth started to send another thought to Fang Yuan, which made his expression change. "... You want me to deal with the remaining crippled cultivators of your realm?"

# Chapter 465: Departure

---

The descending of the Spiritual Realm brought an everlasting impact on Planet Earth.

Firstly, the collision of the Spiritual King Comet resulted in a terrifying earthquake and tsunami which destroyed almost half a continent. Billions of civilians were killed in this disaster.

If not for the fact that Planet Earth's will had forcefully interfered to restore the biodiversity of the planet, they might be a destructive cycle of life.

Even so, this huge disaster was an opportunity for the planet to start anew and the survivors were barely surviving.

However, there was still another problem - the remaining Immortal Cultivators!

The Spiritual Realm had escaped in time but had left its Immortal Cultivators on Planet Earth. It could be due to the fact that it did not have enough time to rescue these Immortal Cultivators or it could be that it was worried these Immortal Cultivators might have been infected with the spiritual aura of the Demonic Heart Realm and would potentially become coordinates for the realm. Therefore, it was willing to sacrifice them like how a lizard would sacrifice its tail in times of danger. Until now, there were still too many Immortal Cultivators from the Spiritual Realm left on Earth.

These people were being sacrificed. To speak the truth, they could still help in the development of this realm, for instance, by increasing the gene pool.

However, to completely assimilate them into the realm, their leader must go.

This was especially so for the leaders at the 5th Tier. They had to die in order for their followers to obediently assimilate into the



new realm.

However, what was embarrassing was that there were no natives strong enough to take out the leaders and Planet Earth had to once again seek Fang Yuan for help.

Fang Yuan had no qualms about taking up this task.

After all, Ancestor Red Cloud and the 3 other Area Beings should be the most powerful among them all and the remaining were all at the 4th Tier. Even if an Area Being were to hide among them, Fang Yuan was confident of taking them out.

...

In the East Ocean.

"Master has orders to gather all the spiritual materials and rebuild our sect on the remains of Spiritual King Island!"

A group of Immortal Cultivators flew across the ocean as they wielded their swords and there were looks of worry and despair in their eyes. They were the ones being left behind and had nowhere else to go, which explained their worries.

"Brothers and sisters! This is only a temporary retreat by the Spiritual Realm. The realm will never give up on us!"

Seeing this, a young man in white robes started to encourage everyone. "There have always been dangers in exploring worlds and it is only normal for the leading warriors to be trapped in other realms. Take for instance the leading warriors of Star Moon Sect. They were once trapped in a foreign realm and were only rescued 80 years later!"

The Spirit Realm had deployed a single army for this invasion and everyone in the group were familiar with each other. With this thought, all of them felt less worried and nodded their heads in agreement.

"Although the source of this realm is rich in energy, they do not

have enough spiritual energy."

One of the female Immortal Cultivators twitched her eyebrows. "After observing through the Heavenly Spiritual Scope, I realised that the spiritual energy in this realm is dropping at an alarming rate. I'm afraid that our future will be doomed..."

"The few leaders have requested of us to gather the materials to cast the Spiritual Capturing Array on the Spiritual King Island! Using it as the core and complement it with other arrays like the 4 Emblems Spiritual Lock and the 8 Directions Spiritual Gatherer, and we should be able to last for another 10 years..."

The young man let out a sigh.

Although the Spiritual King Island was destroyed, it had formed an archipelago of islands.

These were made from the essence of the Spiritual Realm and had natural spiritual energy in them. Using these islands as a foundation and together with the arrays, even if the will of Planet Earth were to continuously absorb spiritual energy, they would still be able to last and survive for a period of time.

Who knows, the Spiritual Realm might just descend upon Planet Earth Realm even before the 10 years was up.

This was their final hope!

'It's a pity... these are merely hopes...'

As the young man looked at his increasingly excited brothers and sisters, he did not dare to reveal the truth to them.

'The few leaders have already used up their Realm Breaking Talismans to establish a connection with the Spiritual Realm. This realm, Planet Earth, has already been deemed plagued by the Demonic Heart Realm and for the safety of everyone, the Spiritual Realm will never establish a connection with this realm for eternity... All of us are stuck here forever!'

With that single thought, the young man was almost brought to tears.

At this point in time, a streak of light flashed past and arrived on the Spiritual King Island in the middle of the ocean.

"Whoosh!"

From afar, the skies became darker and thunder roared. There were shockingly loud winds and glitter of sword essence.

"This... is someone invading our camp?"

The young man and a few others witnessed the scene and were utterly shocked. "Who dares to invade us?"

On the island, an illusionary shadow slowly materialised, forming the image of outer space with 12 glittering stars, illuminating the entire island like how a full moon would.

"Is this... the 12 Stars Universal Array?"

Witnessing this scene, the young man remained in shock. "The adversary must be someone of the level of an ancestor for all 12 leaders to attack at once! No wonder they didn't need our help."

To an Area Being, any Immortal Cultivator of the 3rd Tier and below were merely sacrifices. Only those at the 4th Tier and above with the power of the arena could put up any meaningful resistance.

However, only another Immortal Cultivator of the 5th Tier would be able to stand any chance against these Area Beings.

"We do not have bad blood with each other. Why are you still pushing us to a dead end?!"

At this point in time, one of the stars in the array started to glow brilliantly as it sent out an angry and desperate spiritual will.

"The few of you are mere lackeys. Do you think I would give you a chance to regain your powers and not deal with you now while you are weak?"

From mid-air, an illusionary silhouette of a human started to laugh hysterically as streaks of lightning crackled across the night sky.

"Hmph!"

All of a sudden, a muscular giant appeared behind this silhouette as though he had just walked out of a fairytale. The giant struck a single punch at the array.

"Whoosh"!

The array started to crack!

With a single punch, the flow of the universe started to rewind and dissipate swiftly. What remained were the 12 stars, of which all of them were feeling desolated.

"No! Don't kill me!"

The stars quickly transformed into deities with pleading looks on their faces, making the low-tiered Immortal Cultivators who were witnessing the scene lose faith in these deities.

"The few of you are invaders of the realm and therefore you should know the outcome of trespassing!"

Fang Yuan paid little attention as he unfolded his spiritual territory, ensuring that no one would be able to escape. With that, the Pangu Giant behind him started to clear things up.

"Die!"

As the giant landed its fist, a female Immortal Cultivator was grounded into a pile of meat and flesh.

"Pfft! Don't you dare harm my ancestor!"

On the Spiritual King Island, a group of Immortal Cultivators could no longer hold it in. They rushed out and the thousand of them quickly formed a deity war array. "Defensive Aggressive Sword Array, Kill!"

Streaks of sword radiance landed on the giant but even sparks did not appear.

"There are quite clever to know how to form such a deity array. Unfortunately... If they are not Area Beings, they will all be ants to me!"

Fang Yuan laughed heartily and expanded his spiritual territory.

In that instant, the entire war array froze and the Immortal Cultivators turned to shock. "Our powers... are sealed up!"

"Save us!"

As soon as their magical equipment turned useless, thousands of Immortal Cultivators started to fall from mid-air and were splattered into a bloodied mess as soon as they landed on the ground. It was a gruesome sight to behold.

Those who were lucky landed in the ocean and could, therefore, survive the fall. However, those who were less fortunate landed directly on the rocks and turned into a pile of dead bloodied flesh.

"Thunder, strike!"

Fang Yuan remained focused on his task at hand.

After killing about a hundred of them, Fang Yuan spread his arms out as the giant looked to the skies and shouted.

11 streaks of purple-gold lightning struck down, targeting the remaining 11 leaders.

"So this is the Area... In the Area, I am in control of everything! I can even strengthen the power of the bolts of lightning!"

At this point in time, in Fang Yuan's consciousness, he could not only control the purple-gold lightning with extreme accuracy but could also increase their intensity, giving the streaks of lightning a green hue.

This was not emerald green, but purple-green!

"It seems like even the heavens want them dead!"

To Fang Yuan, these 11 Immortal Cultivators could do nothing against this tribulation and could only accept their deaths.

"The leaders are... dead!"

From afar, the young man and a group of Immortal Cultivators floated in mid-air and were devastated as they witnessed the massacre.

A few of them could not accept the fact and seem suicidal.

"After killing these 12 leaders, it's good enough to say that I've cleared all of them up!"

Sweeping the place with his spiritual will, Fang Yuan could detect that the Immortal Cultivators within 10 miles of him were all shaking in fear.

However, Fang Yuan did not continue his massacre. Instead, he quickly took his leave in a streak of light before disappearing at the horizon.

It was enough to eliminate all the 4th Tier Immortal Cultivators. The realm could slowly deal with these insignificant threats by itself.

Fang Yuan was not a serial killer and would not attack the low-tiered Immortal Cultivators.

"I wonder how will this realm turn out in the future? It will be interesting!"

After accomplishing his tasks, although Fang Yuan could immediately leave, he chose to stay for a few years.

In the Middle Continent, he had secretly met up with Zhao Daniu. By now, this old friend of his had already married Ye Yingzi and they even had their own children. After the disaster, the country was already in the process of rebuilding itself.

In the East Continent, after the death of most of the powerful

beings, it was unfortunate that the 9 Headed Cerberus had escaped once again and was almost on the verge of destroying the world. However, Fang Yuan had managed to capture it and sent it back to isolation.

In the West Continent, although the Golden Eagle Federation had been disbanded, Fang Yuan's two adopted children had returned to their homeland and were preparing to rebuild the country and its civilisation.

Furthermore, on Spiritual King Island, after the big fight, a few Immortal Cultivators had escaped but the remaining chose to remain behind to form their own sects and were leading peaceful lives on the island.

Fang Yuan explored the world and examined everything in silence.

"The future of this world will be very different... Although the spiritual energy is dipping, it will still remain existent in the surroundings. Coupled with the fact that there might be the appearance of dream masters and other technological advancements, the future is interesting..."

"If I have the chance in the future, I will surely return to visit!"

...

After 10 years.

On the surface of the ocean, a steam-powered mutated ship was slipping off from a port. It carried a new species of humans and was ready to embark on a maiden voyage since the doomsday event across the 3 continents years ago.

At this point in time, the people on the ship seemed to be in shock.

In their field of sight, on the surface of the ocean, a person was floating in mid-air. This person was gazing up towards the starry night sky.

"A mutant?"

"No... that person seems familiar. He must be the rumoured most powerful mutant in the world!"

Many reporters screamed in excitement as they rushed forward.

Fang Yuan turned around and smiled sheepishly. As his silhouette merged with the space around him, he disappeared...



# Chapter 466: Breakthrough

---

In the world of Da Qian.

Fang Yuan slowly woke up from his deep slumber.

The surroundings were pitch-black and squeezey but it gave one a sense of security.

Previously, as he dream-traversed, he sealed himself in a mountainous cave in the wilderness. Indeed, no one came to disturb him.

"I have already spent 50 years in Planet Earth Realm. Converting the time to Da Qian, it should be around 5 months!"

Fang Yuan did a quick mental calculation and finally understood how time flowed. "By now, the 9 Heavenly Sky Net Array should have been almost completed and the war is about to begin!"

Strictly speaking, he had cast the incomplete versions of the two arrays on Planet Earth, but the results of the arrays would speak for themselves.

Now, with the complete version of the arrays, the final outcome would surely shock many.

"There's one thing... what can I gain from all these? This realm is different from Planet Earth. Not only are there plenty 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters, they are even the existence of Sages!"

Sages were dream masters who had attained the Prominent Divine stage and were almost unparalleled in the realm. Only the True Divines and True Elementals favoured by the heavenly will would be able to stand a chance against these sages.

Comparing dream masters with spiritual knights and martial artists of the same tier, dream masters would be stronger.

Previously, Fang Yuan was still clueless about the source of

dream masters. However, now he had a new understanding of the Demonic Heart Realm.

"The Demonic Heart Realm is a realm of higher dimension compared to the Spiritual Realm. Therefore, by cultivating on the basis of dream elemental force from the Demonic Heart Realm, one would be able to become more powerful than another person in the same tier cultivating using spiritual energy from the Spiritual Realm!"

At this point in time, he took a quick glance at his stats:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 100

Spirit: 100

Magic: 61 (100)

Profession: Dream Soldier Master

Cultivation: Illusionary Divine (4th Tier), True Divine, Area Being (False)

Technique: [Pangu Eagle Body (? ? ?)], [8 Gates Sword Array (5th Sword) (10%)], [Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell (Grade 5 (Completed))]

Skill: [Medicine (Level 3)], [Botany (Level 5)], [Fiery Golden Eyes (Level 1)]"

...

"The limit of my magical energy has been increased to 100. However, I have only restored to how much I had left off. Also, about this 'false' Area Being..."

Fang Yuan rubbed his chin and was deep in his thoughts.

Across different realms, there would be different limitations on foreign types of energies. Fang Yuan was already used to it.

The good thing was that he had the unique ability of fixed stats.

Regardless of whichever realm he had achieved a breakthrough, his body would remember the new limit automatically. No matter which realm he would go to in the future, as long as he had enough resources, he would be able to restore his peak condition.

Previously, this unique ability of his had allowed him to traverse to different realms and restore his ability in the shortest amount of time possible.

However, the opposite had just happened. He would be able to bring his breakthrough from a foreign realm back to Da Qian!

"Therefore, I can increase my cultivations without any difficulty and achieve the 7th Tier in no time!"

Fang Yuan's consciousness entered his actualised dream world.

The 8 sword pillars stood sturdy and in the middle, there was a big purple fog which gave off a mysterious spiritual aura. This was the natural source of Planet Earth Realm. Although it was nothing compared to what the Spiritual Realm had taken, it was already enough for Fang Yuan to become a divine immortal!

It was not enough for him to become a Prominent Divine dream master, but sufficient for him to attain the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage!

Other than that, in the corner of his actualised dream world, there was another mysterious and suspicious spiritual aura.

A stone carving of a lady figurine stood there. The lady figurine had a pair of wings and it was the magical clone of Extreme Darkness which he had met in the realm.

"This is great! I was only trying my luck only to find out that I can really absorb her into my actualised dream world and even bring her back... Could it be because she is related to Extreme Darkness considering that she is a magical clone and that Planet Earth does not consider her to be native?"

Fang Yuan stared at the young girl intently for a moment.

This magical clone would surely be a hidden move which he could use against Extreme Darkness. Of course, if he really had to use her, it would mean that by then, the Realm Alliance would already be breaking apart.

"Being a mere True Divine is not enough to ensure my survival during the war!"

Fang Yuan flicked his finger and the purple fog started to dissipate.

In his consciousness, the 8 Gates Sword Array came to life and the sword pillars shot up to the sky. The blades of the swords were extremely sharp and the Wind, Thunder, Water and Fire Sword made the appearance. They had spirituality and could exclaim as though they were calling out for their friends.

"Lake Sword! Form!"

Streaks of purple fog gathered around the illusionary Lake Sword. With continuous stimulation, the progress of the Lake Sword started to surge and reached 100% in an instant!

"The Lake Sword is the mediating sword. With this sword, the casting of sword arrays will now be smoother and in addition, I can now use the 5 Elements Sword Array!"

Fang Yuan flicked his finger casually, giving the Lake Sword spiritual property.

"Mas... Master!"

The dark glow of the Lake Sword shimmered and a youthful voice was heard.

"Great!"

Fang Yuan was extremely satisfied.

The formation of the 5th Sword meant that his cultivation as a dream master would once again increase to the 5th Tier, and the spiritual properties he was able to bless the swords with would

increase as well.

The cultivation of a dream master would begin with dream-accessing, followed by dream-building and then the Illusionary Divine stage.

At the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage, a dream master would be able to spiritualise objects. However, a dream master would only be able to create prosperous lands and herds of animals after attaining the 7th Tier.

The creation of a complete human or living thing with wisdom could only be accomplished by a Sage at the Prominent Divine stage.

"However, I still feel that something is not right..."

Thinking about his previous encounter with the Demonic Heart Realm, Fang Yuan became increasingly tensed. "Although our foundation is in dream elemental force, we dream masters seem to have created our own cultivation path and is different from the cultivators of the Demonic Heart Realm..."

Although the starting point could be the same, the ending point could be vastly different. All the Demonic Heart Realm had radiated was simply dream elemental force, but there could be many uses to this dream elemental force.

For instance, Planet Earth was now being targeted by the Demonic Heart Realm. Those with potential would be able to explore the usage of dream elemental force to create their own cultivation paths.

They could either focus on creating the illusionary to hypnotise others, or they could be the infectious type to enslave others, similar to what Hades did.

"The path of dream masters in Da Qian is all about being illusionary and creating reality from nothing. This is a totally new concept which might not even be explored by the demon kings of

the Demonic Heart Realm..."

Fang Yuan had a premonition.

"The harvesting of a realm might not be the destruction of it or the complete absorption of its source... it could be to transfer elemental force to allow the realm to explore unexplored paths before learning from them in order to perfect their own foundation."

"Of course, it's useless to think about all these! If I cannot become a powerful being, I can't even join the final war!"

Fang Yuan's eyes lit up as he continued to put pressure on the 8 Gates Sword Array.

At the North-east, a yellow glow started to shine brilliantly and a dense spiritual aura started to spread out.

A seemingly thick and heavy giant sword started to appear.

This was the 6th sword of the 8 Gates Sword Array! The Mountain Sword! It was huge and its spiritual aura was overbearing. It was a masterpiece indeed!

"Form!"

With a single thought, the entire Mountain Sword started to form slowly but steadily.

Compared to previously, the purple fog was now being consumed at an even faster rate as the Mountain Sword swiftly took shape.

The karma of saving an entire realm converted to pure energy would be unimaginable to think!

Fang Yuan knew that he had enough resources to allow him to attain the 7th Tier. Without fear, Fang Yuan continued to channel the purple fog and was not concerned about the rate of consumption at all.

"Rumble!"

Finally, after a long while, the Mountain Sword actualised and a small child wearing yellow robes appeared on the sword's body. "Master!"

"Master!"

Being a 6th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master meant that Fang Yuan would be able to bless his swords with even more spirituality. On all the other swords, there were illusionary figures of children slowly appearing.

Unfortunately, they were only illusionary figures.

Only in the realm of a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master would one be able to create spirituality from nothing, combining these swords with the spirits to form a physical body. This would be similar to the Fiery Dragon Child who had a physical body and would be able to do things. At this stage, Fang Yuan would even be able to be reborn from another body and the potential was limitless.

"I need to feel confident!"

Gazing at the remaining purple fog, Fang Yuan's eyes were burning with passion. "I shall directly form the 7th Sword and become a powerful being!"

It was an extremely crucial stage for dream masters to attain the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage.

Once attained, one would be able to stand a chance against a True Divine or True Elemental to be considered a powerful being.

In the Realm Alliance, one would be able to directly become an Elder and the benefits were plenty.

Normal dream masters would have to stumble for many years before even trying to have a glimpse of hope in attaining the 7th Tier. However, at this point in time, Fang Yuan was extremely confident.

"In the 8 Gates Sword Array, the formation of the Earth Sword is an important milestone. I will be able to form the 7 Constellations Sword Array. This array will be able to bring out the pure power of Earth, Fire, Wind and Water and in the process create a purple Area, making me invincible among the other 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters and I might even have the chance to promote as well."

Fang Yuan could never imagine how difficult it would be to form the Earth Sword.

After all, this was a sky-high step. With this single step, everything would change!

Of course, Fang Yuan only dared to be so daring because he had something to rely on.

"Come out, my spiritual territory!"

He stretched his right hand out and a spiritual glow appeared.

This was the property of the spiritual territory which he had brought over from Planet Earth Realm. Although it remained illusionary in Da Qian, it was the key to a whole new world!

With this, Fang Yuan would experience no difficulty in achieving a breakthrough to the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage.

All that he had to do was to provide enough resources to form the Earth Sword.

"Whoosh!"

As the spiritual glow glittered, it flew into the illusionary figure of the Earth Sword.

The Earth Sword which was previously putting up a resistance started to stabilise and absorb the purple fog without any reservations. Slowly, it started to grow in size.

"Let me see... the secrets of a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master of this world!"



Fang Yuan closed his eyes and entered a state of nirvana.

...

Outside.

Dark clouds started to gather in the originally clear skies.

In the mountains where Fang Yuan had remained, animals were scrambling in fear as though they could sense an impending disaster.

From somewhere near, two streaks of light quickly made their way into the forest.

"Eh?"

The fleeing streak of light could detect that something was wrong and stopped for a moment. "Are these.....signs of a breakthrough?! Is someone about to breakthrough to the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage?"

A 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master was different from a True Divine or a True Elemental. Since the former would now be able to create spirituality and form intellectual beings, although these beings would not be able to reproduce, the dream master would have already intervened with the natural cycle of life.

Because of that, every time there was a breakthrough to the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage, there would surely be a heavenly tribulation!

"Yingchou City is being invaded and the Imperial Court is in so much trouble now. Which dream master would have such fortune to achieve the breakthrough?"

As the glow dissipated, a face of fortitude was revealed. It was the Leader of Hidden Dragon Guards!

# Chapter 467: Violet

---

"Someone is breaking through to the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage! Where is this dream master from?"

Behind the Leader of Hidden Dragon Guards, the streak of light came to a halt and a confused look surfaced. "Is he a friend or a foe? Or could he be a... lone cultivator?!"

If any dream master from the Hidden Dragon Guards or the 5 Grand Organisations were to prepare for a breakthrough to the 7th Tier, they would surely put up all precautions to attempt the breakthrough in isolation. Even Sages would be deployed to look out for the cultivator undergoing the breakthrough.

After all, the war was about to break out and in such a tense and sensitive period of time, the addition of a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master would mean a paramount increase in the combat power of the organisation the dream master belonged to. It would be hard to imagine just how much power the said organisation would attain.

Therefore, it was only reasonable for dream masters of other organisations to disrupt such a breakthrough.

However, this dream master was like a fool to have chosen to breakthrough just like that in the woods. He must be crazy.

"Regardless, he cannot be from the 5 Grand Organisations!"

The Leader of the Hidden Dragon Guards clenched his teeth and hurriedly made his way to the barren mountain.

He knew that the will of the realm would surely be against the 5 Grand Organisations!

In fact, after he had put the 6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array in place, no dream master from the 5 Grand Organisations dared to be reckless.

The dream masters from the 5 Grand Organisations were already going against the will of the realm and would surely not give the heavens any opportunity to deal with them.

It would be crucial to note that the natural source of The Ancient Realm was nothing compared to that of Da Qian. However, it was already powerful enough to seal out even a Sage after it was awakened.

If the will of Da Qian was willing, unrestricted, it would unquestionably be able to destroy even a Sage!

Therefore, this dream master who was about to experience a breakthrough would be likely to join the Imperial Court if he wasn't part of it already...

The Leader of the Hidden Dragon Guards sensed that something was not right as his eyes darted around before he came to a halt. "Something's not right!"

"Rumble!"

Dark clouds rumbled from above and 7 streaks of lightning struck down mercilessly and continuously. Their power was indeed mighty and it was as though the heavens were going all out to kill the dream master experiencing the breakthrough.

"This..."

The Leader of the Hidden Dragon Guards was shocked. "The 7 Continuous Bolts of Lightning?! Anyone who deserves such a tribulation would have sinned too much and would still be dealt with even if he doesn't undergo the breakthrough, this is terrible..."

"Haha!"

The dream master at the back appeared extremely excited. "Mu Hezi, you're digging your own grave!"

However, in his heart, he felt even more confused. "Could this

dream master... be part of us, the 5 Grand Organisations?"

"Rumble!"

During their exchange, the streaks of lightning struck down mercilessly and split the barren mountain into two, revealing a silhouette in a mountain cave.

"Rise!"

The silhouette gazed up towards the sky and seemed confused as he waved his hands.

"Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!"

7 glittering magical swords appeared before taking up the forms of 7 oddly-shaped children. Some of them were cute, some of them appeared weird while some others appeared matured. At this point in time, they were delegating jobs to among each other as they controlled a massive amount of sword essence each to defend against the incoming lightning strikes.

"Boohooo... Master, this streak of lightning hurts."

"Each of us is only up against one streak of lightning. It will not hurt us and we can continue fighting!"

"Little Water, Little Fire and Little Lake are not counters to lightning. Little Thunder and Little Wind are better counters!"

...

The few children communicated through their spiritual wills and split the job. Furthermore, the children who were formed later seemed to be more mature.

For instance, Earth Sword Child had taken up the role of leader without Fang Yuan's explicit instructions and was, in fact, doing the job quite well.

"Hmmm... The 7 of them, after combining forces, are able to deal with even a 6th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master. In the

future, I will have these helpers to help me out!"

Fang Yuan witnessed this scene before him and felt satisfied.

This children which he had spiritualised were not only loyal but powerful as well. Even if these children were to die, they could be revived in Fang Yuan's actualised dream world and there were no better helpers than the 7 of them.

"The only thing is that... this tribulation seems a little boring!"

Fang Yuan gazed up towards the sky as the dark clouds started to disperse, leaving him speechless.

After all, Fang Yuan did not do his research about the breakthrough to the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage and was caught off guard.

"The will of the realm can only deal with me if I have done something wrong, and not deal with me because it feels that I am opposing it... All my previous actions are assisting the 5 Grand Organisations and I am even involved in casting the 6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array in the 9 Extremes Mountain. Therefore, as soon as it has the chance, it will surely try to kill me... Of course, at the ending, it seems as though it was giving me a second chance. Could it be that it had sensed that I was about to break through to the 7th Tier, or could it be the fact that I am not a Sage and therefore insignificant?"

Fang Yuan thought to himself for a moment before forming a layer of fog around him. With that, he flew up into the sky and glared at the two uninvited guests. "Who are you guys?"

"How can you so easily deal with the lightning tribulation of the heavens?"

The two powerful beings were indeed a little shocked after witnessing how Fang Yuan survived after the tribulation.

Mu Hezi's eyes were wide open. He knew that this newly promoted powerful being was more powerful than an average 7th

Tier Illusionary Divine dream master. Additionally, the fact that every single magical sword of his could so easily deflect each streak of lightning meant that this dream master had inherited an impressive inheritance from a powerful dream soldier master.

'The only thing is... I seem to have heard of such a sword technique somewhere!'

"I am Feng Buer of the Source Seeking Sect! Brother, as long as you assist me in trapping the Leader of Hidden Dragon Guards, Mu Hezi, I will not only owe you a favour, the entire 5 Grand Organisations will also be willing to do you a favour!"

From behind, Feng Buer spoke with confidence.

At this point in time, the 5 Grand Organisations had claimed multiple victories and the Imperial Court was experiencing losses. Even if Fang Yuan was not from the 5 Grand Organisations, he should be able to make a sensible choice.

"Source Seeking Sect... Feng Buer?"

Fang Yuan smiled as a killer look flashed across his eyes. "Wind, Thunder, Water and Fire!"

"We're here, Master!"

4 children flew into the air and the illusionary figure of the swords which they represent appeared vaguely behind them. With that, they formed the 4 Emblems array which sealed and contained Mu Hezi in within.

"This is..."

Mu Hezi gazed at the array as though he had thought of something.

"Haha... I knew that brother would be a reasonable person!"

Feng Buer was ecstatic as he rushed towards the array. "Mu Hezi, you are always against the 5 Grand Organisations. Now that you are losing, I want you to die here today!"

"4 Emblems, rise!"

Unexpectedly, as soon as Feng Buer approached the array, the 4 Emblems Array expanded and contained him inside as well.

"Friend... what do you mean by this?"

Feng Buer's expression changed. With the wave of his hands, 3 huge dragons appeared around him, protecting him.

These 3 huge dragons were gigantic dragons from the west, something which Fang Yuan seemed to recall from his past life. Their bodies were huge lizard bodies with two additional wings made of flesh. The most unique point was that they had a ferocious looking horn on their heads.

"The 4 Emblems of the 8 Gates... you are... the descendant of Master Heartless?"

Mu Hezi gazed towards Fang Yuan and his expression changed once more. He was dumbfounded.

Although Master Heartless was ruthless in the past and had openly stood on the side of the Imperial Court, in the end, the unreasonable doings of the Imperial Court made Master Heartless revolt. Now, someone else with the inheritance of Master Heartless who was also at the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage made Mu Hezi at loss as to what to do.

"Heartless?"

Compared to Mu Hezi, Feng Buer's reaction was greater. "Is that old dude not dead yet? Haha... It would still be a meritorious act to be able to capture his disciple!"

He gazed towards Fang Yuan as though he wanted to strike anytime.

However, Fang Yuan shook his head before stretching his hands out.

"Whoosh!"

Two balls of fires were extinguished immediately, revealing two tattered talismans within.

"Although this is only a 4 Emblems Array, the both of you are already within my spiritual territory. Do you think you can perform all these behind my back?"

Fang Yuan sighed once again. "Do you think that you can bully me just because I am a newly promoted 7th Tier dream master?"

"Hmph!"

Feng Buer snickered. "You can only defend and protect yourself now. You are already dead... as the disciple of Master Heartless, your appearance will only result in being hunted down by the 5 Grand Organisations. No one can save you!"

"Hehe... Do you know who am I, or what my true appearance is?"

Fang Yuan rebutted and Feng Buer was rendered speechless.

Fang Yuan silently thought to himself. 'Master, how many people did you offend? Why is it that an entire group of Sages and powerful beings are still unwilling to let things slide even until today?'

"Kill him at all costs!"

With a command, Lake, Mountain and Earth Sword Children entered the 4 Emblems Array as well.

The 7 magical swords revealed their true form and the children who were illusionary stood in their positions before executing their techniques. "On the 7 stars, we form the Big Dipper... 7 swords, combine to form the Violet spiritual territory and kill!"

"Rumble!"

Thunder, Lake and Mountain flew up into the air to assume the positions of the 3 Talents Array, sealing the top of the array.

The spiritual territory started to spread out as though it was the beginning of the world. Earth, Fire, Wind and Water started to



appear, turning everything a pure violet.

Witnessing this scene, Mu Hezi's pupils contracted. Even though he was not the one under attack, he felt desperate enough to escape to the walls of the array. "I see... This is the legendary and secret 8 Gates Sword Array of the dream soldier masters... The Sages have mentioned the creation of a violet spiritual territory by combining Earth, Fire, Wind and Water. This is an array which only Sages and above can defend against!"

"Buzz! Buzz!"

It seemed as though it was the destruction of the entire world as the few huge dragons disintegrated within the spiritual territory.

Following which, the violet spiritual territory started to seal Feng Buer in within and a violet surge of energy started to descend in an attempt to completely annihilate this 7th Tier dream master from the Source Seeking Sect.

This was Fang Yuan's maiden fight as a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master and he was already attempting to destroy someone of the same tier. Such aggression and ruthlessness only stunned Mu Hezi, who was witnessing everything from the sidelines. 'It is rumoured that Master Heartless and his disciples are all lunatics. This is really true! This person is already attempting to kill someone of the same tier as him as soon as they met. Years ago, Master Heartless even attempted to attack a Sage!"

"This is truly a violet spiritual territory!"

Feng Buer gazed at the continuously descending violet energy and expressions of admiration, jealousy and frenzy flashed across his face. Suddenly, he composed himself and glared at Fang Yuan. "You are dead... Lord Demon Killing Divine Pen will never let you off!"

# Chapter 468: Massacre

---

"Even if he doesn't look for me, I'll get back at him one day!"

Fang Yuan levitated in the air and executed the Chaotic Sword Array.

"But today, you will die!"

Although his 7 Constellations Sword Array could not compare to the chaotic beginning on the world, it was more than enough to destroy a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master.

The greenish chaotic torrents flowed on and wiped out everything in its path. Every piece of magical equipment thrown out by Feng Buer was swept up and destroyed by the river.

"Ah! My prosperous land!"

A mirage of a prosperous land appeared behind Feng Buer.

This was the heritage of a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master, and his last hideout!

"The dream world of a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master can become reality. It can act as a mobile hollow and when it settles, it becomes a large tract of prosperous land....."

Fang Yuan came to a realisation as he witnessed this sight.

At this point, the final stage, Feng Buer put aside all of his considerations and took out his trump card.

Within the blurry illusion of the prosperous land, huge and powerful-looking figures appeared. Some of them looked like they had achieved the 6th tier of the illusionary divine stage.

"Ah... it's the Ancestral God!"

"He is fighting a war with the otherworldly demons!"

"Sir... let me help you!"

...

The figures materialised and rushed out. They were supported by the power of the prosperous land and were able to resist the chaotic green aura in the surroundings.

"These are... people?"

Fang Yuan was momentarily stunned, then he understood.

"Although the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage does not allow one to create beings out of nothing, one can move intelligent beings into their dream worlds and multiply them. Isn't this Feng Buer's speciality? He is a sect by himself!"

The ability of the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine Stage to create beings was flawed.

One could not possess powers of proliferation if they decided to pursue knowledge. There was the example of the Fiery Dragon Child, as well as the various Sword Children.

Likewise, one had to give up on the pursuit of knowledge if they wanted to acquire powers of proliferation. At the most, they would only be able to create numerous barbaric and savage beasts.

Only a true dream master of the Prominent Divine stage could create a truly civilised race with the best of both worlds.

However, the dream world of a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master was no different from a prosperous land. If wild beasts could proliferate over there, people could live in there too!

Thus, even without the power to create, one could still migration people into their prosperous land. Most 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters would bring their families, friends and disciples into the dream worlds where they would be safe.

However, as all dream masters were facing danger now, this so-called safety had become a joke.

Boom!

The 3 Talents Sword Array locked out heaven and earth. In the

middle, the vast chaotic torrents flowed on. Anyone with a level of cultivation below the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage was insignificant.

Rushing into the chaotic torrents would reduce one to ashes. All would be broken into the simplest substances and returned to the earth.

"Head back, all of you. Defend the array and go through with the demonic tribulation!"

Feng Buer was straining with the effort of resisting the immense power of the chaotic torrents.

"It's no use..... you will be destroyed here today!"

Fang Yuan floated down.

"Your willpower can neither connect with the sages nor escape...even if you plant the seeds of revival, a clone would be revived, not you! Your cultivation at the 7th Tier and your memories would all be wiped out!"

To unleash the chaos again was no joke.

Under such a lock, no information could be transmitted. Even a revival would have its limits!

As Fang Yuan spoke, the green chaotic torrents in the void flowed into the actualised dream world. A major tribulation would take place now.

Whoosh!

The green chaotic torrents surged and smashed into heaven and earth. All the elements were agitated.

In the actualised dream world and all that lived within it were decimated and broken down into the simplest substances.

The actualised dream world had been destroyed. His clan was gone, and so were his powers.

Feng Buer looked like a wreck and finally, he seemed fearful.

"You can't kill me! I still have a mark of a sage on me. If it falls, the sages will arrive!"

"How dare you argue back in the face of certain death! I will only fear if the sage turns up! Otherwise, why would I fear a magical clone?"

Fang Yuan remained calm and waved a hand.

Boom!

The green chaotic torrents rushed down and crushed the defences surrounding Feng Buer. Several large chunks of flesh and bone were torn off from Feng Buer himself.

"You dare kill me?"

Feng Buer felt intensely the life-and-death gravity of the situation and tore open his shirt to reveal a mark of a brush.

"All hail the arrival of the sage!"

Buzz!

A shining light, then a large crystal brush materialised before the chaotic torrents. It looked illusionary and shot towards Fang Yuan with the intention to kill.

"This is...the brush of the sages! It can kill higher beings!"

Mu Hezi could feel his body hair standing on its ends. He felt a chill in his heart for he knew that if he was dealt a blow, he would be seriously injured, if not, dead!

"Even the magical clones of the sages won't be able to save you!"

Fang Yuan roared and punched a fist squarely into the tip of the brush.

Boom!

The void around them shuddered as the tremendous force caused the sacred brush to fly backwards.

The giant brush gave a sorrowful wail as it floated in the air and fell apart. The broken pieces dropped into the chaotic torrents and turned into powder.

"Impossible!"

Feng Buer and Mu Hezi were unable to believe their eyes.

"This is the mark of a sage. How can it be destroyed so easily?"

"Die!"

Fang Yuan could not be bothered to say any more and threw Feng Buer into the chaotic torrents.

In fact, there were several factors that contributed to the solid execution of Fang Yuan's legendary blow.

First, there was the 7 Constellations Sword Array, which locked up heaven and earth and agitated the elements. This served to isolate everything and even the sages could not get into the array or transmit energy into it.

Next, Fang Yuan's level of cultivation was extremely high. He was virtually a powerful being.

At this point, in the context of unleashing the chaotic torrents, everything had fallen into place and allowed Fang Yuan to make that devastating blow.

"No!"

"I am Feng Buer, an elder of the Source Seeking Sect, a sage of the future. How can I perish here?"

The chaotic torrents raged on and engulfed Feng Buer. His body was torn up, leaving behind his skeleton. Still, flames of hatred emitted from his sockets, until they finally ebbed into a pleading gaze.

"Spare me! I have many more years to live and I don't want to die here... I'm willing to submit to the Imperial Court and the Hidden Dragon Guards as long as you let me live. I have many treasures

and secrets of the Source Seeking Sect. I can give them all to you!"

"It's a pity I don't believe a word of all that you've said!"

Fang Yuan stepped forward slowly. He looked like the giant Pangu about to split the world up. A chaotic aura surrounding him as he pressed his palm to Feng Buer's skull.

He was slightly touched by this person's sincerity.

It was unfortunate that Fang Yuan's cultivation levels were insufficient, and was unable to control a dream master at the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage. To prevent trouble in the future, it was better to kill him off.

Ping!

Feng Buer's skull was smashed into dust and absorbed by the chaotic torrents.

"I...am not satisfied..."

Even if the body was destroyed in the void, the willpower would put up a powerful struggle and rocket back and forth.

Dream masters have insane levels of willpower. They can survive without their bodies for a long time. The souls would stay intact and could even possess other bodies.

"You are about to die. Don't create trouble anymore, hmph!"

Fang Yuan exuded calmness and controlled the chaotic torrents.

Even the powerful beings were not immortals. The chaotic torrents were enough to curb their power.

From time to time, images could be glimpsed from the chaotic torrents. There was a Feng Buer in every one of them. Ferocious looking, screaming, cursing, begging. Mu Hezi found it a most unfortunate sight.

In the end, the dust settled, and there was nothing left there anymore.

"Master!"

The Earth, Fire, Air and Water Sword Children appeared and reported to Fang Yuan. The rest of the 3 Talents Sword Array remained locked on and targeted at Mu Hezi.

"This fella doesn't look like a good person. Shall we take him on?"

The Children were raring to lay their hands on him.

"Wait! I'm a good man! A very good man!"

Mu Hezi turned bright red, but his ego had to be placed aside in this matter of life and death. He greeted Fang Yuan.

"I am Mu Hezi, Leader of the Hidden Dragon Guards. Thank you very much for your help!"

"I'm not very fond of the dream masters of the Source Seeking Sect. It is merely coincidental that I'm helping you!"

Fang Yuan adjusted his sleeves.

"I recently emerged from my closed-door cultivation and was cut off from the rest of the world for a period of time. Has there been any major developments?"

"Sigh...it's a long story!"

Mu Hezi laughed bitterly and proceeded to give a summary.

"Zhang Jin and Wu Yue have been advancing rapidly. The Imperial Court is powerless in stopping them. The largest threat right now is still Shi Longtu. This bandit has already captured Yingchou City. In no more than seven days, he will march on to the Jade Capital!"

"Tsk tsk...this means that the Imperial Court is finished?"

Fang Yuan remained expressionless. There was no hint of worry on his face.

Mu Hezi probably knew why too and gave another bitter laugh.

"I am indebted to my lord and the Imperial Court, and will return



to the Hidden Dragon Guards to live and die with them...my friend, in what way are you related to Master Heartless?"

"Master Heartless is my teacher!"

Fang Yuan did not bother to hide this fact. After all, he was making use of the Seven Constellations Sword Array and had not yet revealed his face. There was probably no one who could guess that he was the Fang Yuan of the Realm Alliance.

"Indeed...Master Heartless was an elder in the Hidden Dragon Guards. Our master will be comforted to know that he has someone to carry on his legacy!"

Mu Hezi became thoughtful, but could not help but ask his question.

"My friend, what is your opinion of the Imperial Court?"

Although there was a glimmer of hope, Master Heartless and the 5 Grand Organisations had a deep enmity. With this fact, both parties did have a basis for collaboration.

War was coming. He had to gather all sorts of forces to his side.

# Chapter 469: Conceal

---

"Imperial Court... Hehe..."

Fang Yuan shook his head and sniggered.

Although Mu Hezi did not know what that snigger meant, the disdainful tone was enough for him to change his expression.

In actual fact, Mu Hezi felt rather awkward. He knew that Master Heartless did not let down the Imperial Court, it was the Imperial Court and the Hidden Dragon Guards who had let Master Heartless down.

Nevertheless, after hearing such a reply from Fang Yuan, Mu Hezi still felt very dispirited, and even slightly angry. As the people of Da Qian, how could he be so deceiving?

As the Leader of Hidden Dragon Guards, Mu Hezi motto in life was "if the emperor wants him to die, he has to die". Even if he felt wronged, he still had to bear with it and obey the orders!

At this moment, such dissatisfaction of his was still well hidden. He thought for a while and asked, "Unless... you don't intend to correct your master's reputation?"

"Reputations are all made up, they are nothing!"

Fang Yuan shook his head and continued, "I will join in the war at Jade Capital, just that all of you have to pay the price to satisfy me... Da Qian is vast and there are many special and unique people, there must be something that will satisfy me."

"Deal!"

Mu Hezi's face turned pale and he took out an emerald-green coloured piece of leaf.

"This is the Ten Thousand Mile Messenger Talisman, you can communicate through it without passing through the Dream Realm. It's very safe!"

"I'll keep it!"

Fang Yuan received the item. He immediately scanned the item with his spiritual will numerous time to confirm that there were no hidden tricks on it.

Even if there were, it would be no problem. Fang Yuan could just throw it at any remote wilderness and use it when he felt like it.

Anyway, the person who would feel impatient would definitely not be him.

"Since that's the case, I shall take my leave!"

To be frank, Mu Hezi felt extremely uncomfortable standing in front of Fang Yuan and especially so inside of the sword array. He never wanted to experience such a feeling whereby his life was under the hands of another person ever again.

"Of course, please!"

Fang Yuan nodded upwards slightly and three sword-wielding children released the array. Mu Hezi immediately turned into a stream of green light and flew out.

"The Extreme Wood spiritual troop on his body has indeed been exhausted. If I wanted to kill him, it should be easier than killing Feng Buer..."

Fang Yuan watched Mu Hezi leave and remained silent as he pondered.

"Just that... there wouldn't be much meaning in doing so."

Fang Yuan killed Feng Buer as Feng Buer was a dream master from Source Seeking Sect, which was his master's enemy.

Previously, he did not have such powerful strength and he could only tread carefully.

Now that Fang Yuan had great accomplishments in his divine powers, although he could not kill Demon Killing Divine Pen, he had still killed a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine elder. Even if he was

mocked for bullying the weak and being afraid of the strong, he was still glad that he killed Feng Buer.

Separating the weak and the strong and defeating them separately was an art of war. Only fools would fight them recklessly.

"5 months... that's almost half a year. I made it just in time for the big war!"

After the decisive battle, the world would undergo tumultuous changes and Fang Yuan's identity would no longer be important.

Now, the two sides were busy preparing for the big war. Secrets would be obscured and plus the fact that Fang Yuan was a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master and True Divine, even sages would not be able to discover his identity.

"With these, it will be enough!"

After Fang Yuan watched Mu Hezi disappear in the horizons, he looked at his own stats board:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 100

Spirit: 100

Magic: 100

Profession: Dream Soldier Master

Cultivation: Illusionary Divine (7th Tier), True Divine, Area Being

Technique: [Pangu Eagle Body (? ? ?)], [8 Gates Sword Array (8th Sword) (1%)], [Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell (Grade 5 (Completed))]

Skill: [Medicine (Level 3)], [Botany (Level 5)], [Fiery Golden Eyes (Level 1)]"

With cultivations in both dream techniques and martial arts, at

such a stage, Fang Yuan felt that his essence, spirit and magic were all resonating at a special frequency which brought about a rather harmonious feeling.

"I wonder how many people are there in the entire Da Qian World that become powerful beings who are accomplished in both dream techniques and martial arts?"

Fang Yuan looked at his stats board and pondered.

In his 8 Gates Sword Array, only the last sword, the Sky Sword, was incomplete. Once Fang Yuan completed it, he would be able to become an 8th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master and get closer to Master Heartless' level.

Fang Yuan's cultivation in martial arts had already reached completion, now that he was a True Divine.

Thus, the only path left was to breakthrough to the Prominent Divine stage!!

A Prominent Divine dream master would be at the same tier as a True Divine martial artist and a True Elemental spiritual knight. However, a Prominent Divine dream master would have numerous divine techniques that were unimaginable and they could also create living things. Thus, a Prominent Divine dream master would command the authority of the entire Da Qian tightly.

A single Prominent Divine dream master usually represented a force, an entire group! Not only would his influence affect the entire Da Qian World, it would even affect the numerous planes nearby.

"In actual fact, the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage is the lowest criterion for breaking through to the Prominent Divine stage... But, this is similar to the breakthrough of a Wu Zong. Last time, if I directly broke through to True Divine at the 7th or 8th Meridian, my martial arts Divine Body would definitely not be as strong as it is now!"

Fang Yuan's eyes glistened. If he wanted to break through, he definitely had to do it perfectly.

This was the case for his martial arts and was also the case for his dream master cultivation too.

Although the secretive 8 Gates Sword Array was powerful and was regarded as a powerful technique amongst Prominent Divine dream masters, it still only had 8 Tiers!

The profound mystery of the last tier still had to be completed by Fang Yuan himself.

"Actually, it's already enough that I broke through to the 7th Tier of Illusionary Divine stage... As the saying goes, the higher you climb, the harder you fall... The natural source of dream masters, Demonic Heart Realm, doesn't look very kind."

The experimentation in Planet Earth Realm had great effects on Fang Yuan.

At least, Fang Yuan knew that the Demonic Heart Realm was definitely not some sort of beautiful world. He was 80% sure that it was a realm like the Spiritual Realm which preyed on the weak and that it was coveting for something in Da Qian World.

"Strictly speaking, only martial arts and spiritual spells are native to Da Qian. Dream masters are actually foreign products and they only existed after Da Qian World was eyed by Demonic Heart Realm... Of course, the talented people of Da Qian created the cultivation of dream masters, cultivating truths from falsehoods and this point might be out of Demonic Heart Realm's expectation. Thus, it feels rather optimistic..."

Fang Yuan looked at both his hands and thought, "After I took on the path as a dream master, there is no turning back. Thus, I can only give it my all. At least, now that I am at the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage, I still have some power to fight back. Once the Demonic Heart Realm advents, those ignorant dream

masters might not even be able to fight back."

Once a person had some dream elemental force, he would be marked and imprinted. Thus, he could be harvested anytime.

Such a change was at the soul level. Even if the person were to forsake his cultivation, it would be useless.

Therefore, at such a stage, even Fang Yuan could only seek short-term benefits and thus, rushed to become a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master. Thereafter, he would have to react accordingly.

Fang Yuan gazed at the horizons. He then turned into a beam of light and disappeared.

...

Moments later, space cracked. A person with a tall figure, perfect body and a face like that of a deity walked out and scanned the surroundings. It was the Head of Hidden Dragon Guards!

"He's gone?"

The Head of Hidden Dragon Guards thought for a while and then looked at the space in front of him, "Li Qingmian, come out!"

"Hidden Dragon! How dare a magical clone of yours come here! Aren't you afraid it would be killed by me?"

Ripples appeared in the space as though a curtain was unveiled and a person slowly emerged.

This person was middle-aged, his hair was slightly white and his facial structures were pronounced. He looked like he had been through a lot and his skin was crystal clear like jade. He was definitely a gorgeous man when he was young.

He was holding a long, sparkling and crystal-clear pen. It was as though he was an artist ready to source for materials.

"I am a magical clone and you are a magical clone too, what's there to be afraid about even if we fight?"

The Head of Hidden Dragon Guards laughed, "Just that, I sensed that a trace of your imprint seemed to have died here... Could it be, you are here for that?"

"Cut the act, ever since Buer died and this trace of imprint dispersed, I already knew that the 8 Gates Sword Array has definitely returned... Hmph, only that 7 Constellations Sword Array can cut off and prevent me from sensing here!"

Li Qingmian humphed and the look on his face was both sad and happy at the same time. He then continued, "When Master Heartless' faction was close to being exterminated, you did nothing about it. Do you think he has no hatred for you? The people of Heartless' faction are all lunatics! Is the Imperial Court still shielding its descendants!"

"I don't wish to mention about past events anymore, but I believe his descendant's hatred against all of you are definitely greater than his hatred against the Imperial Court... Else, this person would not have killed Feng Buer but let off Mu Hezi."

The Head of Hidden Dragon Guards spoke in a very captivating way, "Thus... not only will I not arrest him, I will instead pull him over to my side."

"If the world isn't in chaos now, this person would have shown his cloven hoof! Nevermind... I shall see how long the Imperial Court can remain happy!"

Li Qingmian sneered and disappeared.

Naturally, Li Qingmian was very clear about what the Head of Hidden Dragon Guards was thinking of.

If the Head of Hidden Dragon Guards were to chase after the successor of that 8 Gates Sword Array, not only would he have spent a lot of effort and exhaust part of his strength, if he succeeded, it would not matter much anyway. However, if he were to fail, he would be driving away such a powerful person from the



Imperial Court.

Master Heartless had enemies all over the world. The Head of Hidden Dragon Guards did not have to worry about whether this person would side with the enemies or not.

Hence, the Head of Hidden Dragon Guards was unfazed and merely said those few lines.

However, Source Seeking Sect enmity and hatred against this person was as deep as the sea. It was definitely something that would not be resolved so easily.

...

At this moment, Fang Yuan was marked by two sages and in the future, there would be even more sages after him. The Fang Yuan whose identity was unknown restored his original appearance and headed towards Yingchou City.

This was how he was acting ironically.

All the dream masters would have thought that the successor of Master Heartless would be a coward and go into hiding, who would have known that he would have such an obvious identity and would be so blatantly heading towards Yingchou City?

Furthermore, Fang Yuan's martial artist True Divine identity would be his best cover-up.

Such a genius who could breakthrough to True Divine in such a short period of time was already extremely shocking and would be like a freak.

But nobody would have ever imagined that he could even directly breakthrough to the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage!

"If I want to go back and continue being me, Fang Yuan, there are two problems..."

Fang Yuan quickly thought through as he made his way, "Firstly, there will be other dream master observers who would discover

some traces inside Planet Earth Realm. Luckily, this is already solved as Planet Earth's will had already increased its strength in repelling and resisting all foreign souls and powers. Additionally, the physical laws in that realms are getting harsher and harsher, anyone who enters that realm will definitely die."

"The second problem is regarding how I can conceal my cultivation!"

# Chapter 470: Cleansing

---

The essence of the path of dream masters was that they could cultivate truths from falsehoods.

As dream masters were very involved in dream techniques, they were the group of people that were the most well versed in disguising themselves and also, distinguishing between real and fake.

The more advanced a dream master was, the more would he conceal himself in layers of mist which made others unable to discern him clearly.

Previously, Fang Yuan killed Feng Buer unexpectedly as he was rushing towards Yingchou City and the two of them revealed all the cards up their sleeves.

Otherwise, it would not be such an easy task for Fang Yuan to plan to kill a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master.

How good a dream master was at concealing himself was directly proportional to his cultivation.

With Fang Yuan's current cultivation, within a bunch of 6th Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters, no one would be able to recognise him even if he was disguised as an average person. This was the skill gap.

However, not only were there many 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters at the Yingchou City he was heading to, they might even be sages there!

The chances of such a weak concealment being exposed would be very high.

"Speaking of concealment techniques, there's one such technique in Master's 8 Gates Sword Array secret inheritance. If I use it now, I can only at most hide from normal 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters. If Elder Extreme Darkness and others become

suspicious, they will definitely discover my loopholes. It would be even more dangerous in front of the sages..."

Inside a cave, Fang Yuan was sitting cross-legged. A streak of dark silver coloured dream elemental force appeared on his hand.

"Now... if I want to strengthen my concealment abilities, I must look for it from the source of all dream masters powers!"

Fang Yuan ruminated as he looked at the dream elemental force on his hand.

This was the pure and unadulterated dream energy obtained in Planet Earth Realm. It was introduced into Planet Earth Realm after the black hole opened up a passage for the Demonic Heart Realm to introduce it.

Compared to the dream elemental force of normal dream masters, it was stronger, purer, and much more evil!

"Technically, Planet Earth Realm has a closer contact with the Demonic Heart Realm than Da Qian as of now. After all, a passage was opened up. Although physical objects could not be passed through, large amounts of dream elemental force had gushed down through it!"

The swarm in dream elemental force and the few syllables from Hades caused a huge group of strong people that were comparable to 5th to 6th Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters to become demonic. Until now, Fang Yuan could still clearly remember that scene.

"The dream masters of Da Qian World communicates with the mysterious dream masters' realm through their spiritual will. Thus, they can obtain some of the radiated elemental force from it which combines with the elemental energy of this world to form a unique dream elemental force. However, Planet Earth Realm was different. Ever since the void passage opened for a while and the Demonic Heart Realm was connected once, large amounts of pure

dream elemental force were introduced into Planet Earth Realm! Real dream elemental force!"

Fang Yuan looked at his own actualised dream world.

Inside the now large expanse, a corner seemed to be forgotten and was securely sealed off.

Inside the seal, there was a small lake filled with dark silver coloured dream elemental force which was emitting a misty glow. It was pure yet evil.

"I have kept 30% of the dream elemental force from Demonic Heart Realm..."

Fang Yuan was very confident in his estimation, "Currently, in the entire Da Qian, I'm afraid no other dream master would be comparable to me..."

To Fang Yuan, the invasion of the Demonic Heart Realm could be roughly split into three stages.

The first stage would begin when the prey enters the field of vision. In this stage, any living thing in the eyed realm that had above average mind power would be able to sense the presence of dream elemental force and thus receive all sorts of special abilities.

At the second stage, a passage would be opened and it would continuously expand. The passage Fang Yuan opened that time was a pure energy and mind power passage. Hence, dream elemental could pass through it but Hades could only wait on the other side.

If the passage was not closed and continued to expand, the third stage would be reached. It would be similar to the advent of the Spiritual Realm whereby a real dimensional passage would be opened which allowed physical objects to pass through and the harvesting of the realm would begin!

Planet Earth Realm was originally bound to fall into such a trap. However, Fang Yuan planned beforehand and pushed back when

the harvesting would begin.

However, it was different this time. Many sages had already gathered and the 5 Grand Organisations had unprecedentedly put aside their differences. Evidently, the reason for them to do that was not as simple as to open a temporary passage.

They wanted to truly go beyond the dimension and bring about the advent of the Demonic Heart Realm so as to obtain everything they wanted!

Humans would neglect the dangers in front of them for the sake of their benefits! And they thought they could control everything!

Even in another realm, this was the case.

The high tiered cultivators in Planet Earth Realm were like that. Currently, the majority of the powerful dream masters in Da Qian had the same thoughts.

"There's really no one who knows the dangers of the Demonic Heart Realm?"

A cold smile appeared on Fang Yuan's face as he thought, "I'm afraid many would know, but to them, so what if the entire Da Qian World is annihilated? Dream masters only want to head to the real source world to obtain even greater gains!"

Those dream masters in Da Qian at the peak of all dream masters had already stayed there for too long. They were trapped in front of their bottlenecks for too long and had even become numb.

Only a new world, the source world of dream masters, could make them feel like there was hope for them and that they would no longer be a pool of stagnant water.

But what about the consequences? Who would have thought about the consequences?

Perhaps lower tiered dream masters might have thought about this problem, but those higher tiered ones would have never

worried about such.

With powers at the 7th Tier Illusionary Divine stage, and with their actualised dream world, prosperous lands, hollows... even if the world was destroyed, they could still survive well while they floated around in the space void.

This was why they were so confident!

"Dream masters bring about great harm to the world... Of course, what does this have to do with me?"

Fang Yuan stared at the streak of dream elemental force on his hand and suddenly made up his mind. He began to refine the dream elemental force.

Only such purest form of dream elemental force could increase his illusionary ability for him to conceal himself even under the noses of sages.

"The powers of dream masters come from dream energy that has been diluted, thus, they are easier to be controlled and also easier to build up a resistance against it... However, once the two worlds really link up, the large amounts of dream elemental force that will swarm over will be both opportunities and poison for all dream masters!"

Fang Yuan thought of his first time entering a dream and how difficult the process was to tame the dream elemental force. He also thought about his realisations in Planet Earth Realm.

When the two worlds finally coincide, all the dream masters would have to undergo yet another taming process. Furthermore, the process would not be smooth sailing, they would have to suffer from the most horrifying full body cleansing right at the start.

"Therefore, being familiar with all this beforehand would be very good."

Fang Yuan looked at the streak of dark-silver coloured elemental force enter his palm. It immediately spread to his limbs and bones,

and even messed up his thoughts and caused him to hallucinate.

"Da Qian World's foundation is in elemental force, whereas Demonic Heart Realm's foundation is dream elemental force. In terms of their grade, dream elemental force is obviously much higher than elemental force. But after dream elemental force, is there another force that is of an even higher grade?"

At the next moment, Fang Yuan's vision dimmed and he fell into a dreamy trance.

From being a dream disciple to becoming a dream master, it was a very long process.

One had to overcome the dream world and truly grasp the power of dream elemental force before he could be a real dream master.

Every dream master had gone through this step.

However, Fang Yuan suddenly realised that his own understanding might have been biased.

After he opened up himself to receive and accept this real dream elemental force from the Demonic Heart Realm, he truly felt his inner demons overwhelm him.

It was as though the sealed memories had reincarnated.

Inside a dream world, Fang Yuan turned into a newborn. Quickly, he grew up carefreely and forgotten about dream masters, his Master, the 8 Gates Sword Array, and also everything about himself.

Luckily, a bit of mindfulness in his magical will finally caused him to be awakened the day he turned 20 years old and made him recover himself.

However, he was only awake for a few moments before he immediately fell into another dream world.

.....

"It seems like a dream but it is not a dream! It's the way of the



inner demons! The demonic heart!"

In the trance, Fang Yuan did not know how much he had been through. However, his heart was becoming sturdier and clearer like a diamond. A voice that sounded like a giant bell resounded beside his ear.

"The Demonic Heart way? After reaching the highest point, as long as there is still Sattva in the world, one would not die and cannot be destroyed?"

Suddenly, an enlightenment was formed at the bottom of Fang Yuan's heart.

This Sattva did not require humans. It did not even require living things.

Mountains, rivers, grass, trees, stars and worlds all had their own thoughts!

With thoughts, there would be feelings! Once there were feelings, there would be inner demons!

As long as inner demons did not die, the Demonic Heart Realm would not die!

"What a supreme path indeed! Unfortunately, it is not what I ask for!"

Fang Yuan's entire body shook and he opened his eyes.

Currently, he was still sitting in a cave perfectly fine. Not a lot of time had passed either.

"Inner demons are not what I wish for. Compared to the 'orthodox' of Demonic Heart Realm, I rather walk the path of dream masters!"

The dream elemental force in Fang Yuan's sea of consciousness rippled slightly. It was not much different than previously, but there seemed to be a slight unclear and uncertain change that occurred.

"I have finally cleared this barrier!"

Fang Yuan thoughts moved and the sealed dark silver lake seethed at once. Large amounts of Demonic Heart Realm dream elemental force was absorbed rapidly and turned into pure dream energy.

That's right!

The dream elemental force that had been mutated once suddenly began to absorb the pure Demonic Heart Realm elemental force. It even began to digest it.

"Woong! Woong!"

At the same time, a layer of misty glow appeared on Fang Yuan's body and instantly covered his whole body.

"The cleansing of my foundation has been completed."

Fang Yuan touched his face. He then suddenly waved his hand and a water screen emerged.

Inside the water screen, the reflection of a youth in a white robe could be seen. His face was normal looking and it seemed that he had become even more handsome.

"I dared to take such a huge risk and now, the transformed dream elemental force in my body is already half a grade higher than all other dream masters and even sages..."

This was Fang Yuan's gains from his experiment in Planet Earth Realm and other sages did not have such an opportunity. As they never had contact with Demonic Heart Realm before, the quality of their dream elemental force would definitely be inferior.

"By utilising this brand new dream elemental force as the foundation to create new illusionary techniques, I can conceal myself even in front of 9th Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters. Even for Prominent Divine dream masters, as long as they don't specially investigate, they cannot discover any flaws or loopholes!"

As Fang Yuan thought, his entire demeanour changed again.

The originally ethereal demeanour of a dream master disappeared in a blink of an eye.

Instead, on his body, muscles bulged out and he looked strong and masculine. Fang Yuan was now filled with the demeanour of a martial artist.

"I shall just anyhow reveal myself to be a 4th to 5th Tier dream master. Anyway, I have my martial arts to conceal me as well..."

Fang Yuan stood up and looked towards Yingchou City confidently. "I can't wait for the battle at Jade Capital!"

# Chapter 471: Paying a Visit

---

Yingchou City.

The lofty and majestic looking city seemed rather bleak in the sunset.

There were all sorts of markings on the steel-like city walls caused by swords and axes. Miles and miles of ground were covered in a deep red colour. Rumours were that there was too much bloodshed which caused the ground to be dyed red.

This stronghold of the Imperial Court was the last hurdle before the Jade Capital. Now, it had already fully fallen into the hands of Shi Longtu.

Not only were there large amounts of armies gathered, there were also many dream masters from the 5 Grand Organisations. They were guarding against any sudden attacks from the Imperial Court and their level of alertness was higher than ever before.

Fang Yuan merely strolled forward and immediately felt the immense power of an array scanning pass him.

This was the array that enveloped ten miles over Yingchou City, it was like a radar and was specially used to detect any invaders. Although Fang Yuan could sneak right through it, he chose not to avoid it instead and directly revealed himself.

"Who are you?"

Soon enough, a group of dream masters rushed over. They appeared extremely cautious.

After all, from the feedback of the array, Fang Yuan had a profound cultivation which was truly terrifying. If there were not any allied soldiers who reacted, it might even alarm a few elders.

"Fang Yuan from Realm Alliance!"

Fang Yuan casually showed his proof of identity.

"Oh, a law enforcer from the Realm Alliance! I am Su Lu from Baize Mountain. Greetings, Sir!"

The leader of this small group was a 5th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master. However, he immediately bowed to Fang Yuan and was obviously rather ingratiating.

'Fang Yuan?'

'That genius who's less than 30 years old but broke through to True Divine?'

'Not only that, he's also at the 4th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage! Such talentedness, he's simply a rare freak!'

Behind Su Lu, a few Illusionary Divine dream masters were exchanging glances and secretly communicating through their spiritual wills.

However, with Fang Yuan's current strength, all these could not be hidden from him and he heard everything.

"How's the current situation of the battle?"

Fang Yuan waved his arms and asked straightforwardly.

Currently, the 5 Grand Organisations had joined forces. They were very sincere in cooperating and working with each other before the fall of Da Qian.

"Shi Longtu had already assembled 30,000 soldiers and they are prepared to charge directly to Jade Capital City!"

Su Lu spoke calmly. He knew that without the help of the 5 Grand Organisations, even if 30,000 soldiers were gathered, they would be defeated.

"Looks like it has finally caught up, who's the elder from Realm Alliance that's taking charge here?"

Fang Yuan asked.

"It is Elder Extreme Darkness!" Su Lu quickly answered. Inside

his mind, he further confirmed the rumours he always heard about Fang Yuan, that Fang Yuan was a cultivator who would be too engrossed in his own cultivation that he wouldn't know about what had happened in the outside world.

"Okay! Bring me to her!"

Fang Yuan was very calm. He waved his hand and allowed Su Lu to lead his way.

Inside Fang Yuan's actualised dream world, numerous seals were formed on the outside that protected the stone figure of a young girl, ensuring that it would not be revealed.

....

It was now a huge military camp both inside and outside Yingchou City.

The best spots in the city had totally nothing to do with Shi Longtu nor his men. Instead, they were occupied by the dream masters from the 5 Grand Organisations.

As the Realm Alliance's highest in-charge of Yingchou City, Extreme Darkness naturally had the best mansion. It was said that this mansion used to belong to the deputy city master and it occupied huge amounts of land. The pavilions, gardens and the cloisters were still perfectly preserved and they were unusually exquisite.

"Fang Yuan requests to see Elder Extreme Darkness!"

Fang Yuan arrived outside the mansion and requested.

"Come in!"

A voice was heard and It sounded calm and rather chilly. Fang Yuan was used to it, whereas Su Lu laughed bitterly, "You can go ahead, I shall leave first!"

Su Lu quickly left. Evidently, their impressions of Extreme Darkness were not very good.

Fang Yuan was slightly speechless. He walked into the mansion and followed his feeling towards the garden at the back.

Although the mansion was opulent and was like a palace, there was no trace of humans living here at all. The further he walked, the chilly feeling in the air felt even stronger.

"Tsk tsk..."

Fang Yuan shook his head and took a step into the garden.

The precious flowers and plants on both sides were half-dead and half-alive, half-withered and half-living. The leaves were covered in slight frost and looked really eerie.

All these were not intentional. They were naturally caused as they were in an environment under the influence of such a powerful presence.

If normal people were here instead, they would not even be able to survive more than three days. Even Illusionary Divine dream masters would suffer severe injuries to their elemental energy.

Fang Yuan nodded his head. He knew why Elder Extreme Darkness always appeared as though she was fated to be lonely forever.

"You have come, that's great!"

Inside a small pavilion in the middle of the garden, Elder Extreme Darkness sat cross-legged. As she saw Fang Yuan arrive, her expressions remained calm-looking. Only the slight glint in her eyes betrayed her.

Although Fang Yuan did not have deep ties with Elder Extreme Darkness, he still imprisoned a magical clone of hers in Planet Earth Realm. As the magical clone was imprisoned for 10 years, all sorts of intelligence were dug out naturally. Hence, Fang Yuan could confirm that she was secretly examining him.

"Great!"

Elder Extreme Darkness looked at Fang Yuan's body and praised, "You are already at the 5th Tier of Illusionary Divine, right? Looks like this half a year did not go to waste after all!"

"After all, it's a battle of life and death, why would I dare to slack off?"

Fang Yuan shook his head and entered the small pavilion. He then sat cross-legged opposite Extreme Darkness.

Elder Extreme Darkness' appearance was exactly the same as her magical clone. However, that magical clone did not have such a chilly disposition. Along with the outside environment, she was just like a cold beauty in the moon palace as she kept people far away from her and yet tempted them to think of her.

"Not... not only did I not waste the time, I have huge gains too!"

Elder Extreme Darkness stared at Fang Yuan as though she could not wait to see right through him, "Can you tell me what you have gained? To be truthful, I still felt exasperated afterwards and went into the realm another time. However, I was targeted by the realm's will and the natives and could not really enter the realm... And now, the entire realm has changed drastically, it seems to be like the Ancient Realm now and is resisting our intrusion."

Fang Yuan remained silent as he thought.

Although he believed what Extreme Darkness said was true, just because she could not enter the realm did not mean that she could not send other dream masters on to a mission into the realm.

Although other dream masters would be extremely weak once they enter Planet Earth Realm, they could still send intelligence back.

In the last 10 years inside the realm, Fang Yuan was still a widely renowned powerhouse. It would not be hard to hear about him.

In actual fact, there was no use even if Fang Yuan changed his name and appearance. After all, dream masters would seek for



their own kind, and Fang Yuan would still be discovered too easily.

At this stage, Planet Earth Realm began to seal off itself. Thus, the secrets of the last battle could not be transmitted out, which was an advantage for Fang Yuan.

"I have quite the gains! I met the war between two realms!"

Fang Yuan replied with his half-truths and did not mention anything about the Demonic Heart Realm at all, "I took the opportunity to reap some benefits!"

"Oh! So that was it!"

Extreme Darkness nodded her head. Fang Yuan did not know whether she believed him or not.

In actual fact, Fang Yuan guessed that she was definitely feeling suspicious, just that she did not say it out.

After all, exploring foreign realms were dream masters' personal matters. They did not have to turn over any rewards gained unless they were on a mission.

Although Extreme Darkness sent a dream master to go observe during the later periods, the laws of Planet Earth Realm were too harsh. Even though this dream master had stayed for 10 years, not much of his strength was restored and thus, he could not have any contact with the top level information.

Furthermore, the big war was impending in Da Qian, who would spend the effort to send a powerful person down to such a dangerous realm?

They would not have special abilities like Fang Yuan. Even if a sage was sent down, he would have to start from being a normal mortal and would be tortured by the laws of Planet Earth Realm.

Therefore, what Elder Extreme Darkness said just now was 30% truth and 70% guesses, as she wanted to try to deceive Fang Yuan and whether it succeeded or failed did not matter.

However, as she saw how calm Fang Yuan was, her expressionless face began to move finally.

She frowned slightly and asked, "To be frank... I sensed a body that was very suitable for me to enter in Planet Earth Realm. It was a young girl with black and white wings, do you have any impression of it?"

"Of course!"

A tinge of awkwardness appeared on Fang Yuan's face as he explained everything about the Golden Eagle Federation's Demon Weapon Plan, "... During the last battle, that Demon Weapon was battered into powder. I'm afraid it's long dead."

"Battered into powder?"

Extreme Darkness took a quick glance at Fang Yuan and did not say much, "Okay... Golden Eagle Federation. Hehe... once Da Qian is settled, I will personally enter this realm again!"

The savagery in her voice even made Fang Yuan shudder.

Although Elder Extreme Darkness might have suspected Fang Yuan, that body was just a clone. Even though it was killed, it would not be wise for her to be on unfriendly terms with a True Divine on the same side as her.

Since Planet Earth Realm was enraged, Fang Yuan reckoned that if Extreme Darkness were to really enter the realm, with her temper, there would be quite the bloodshed.

"Okay, let's not talk about the topic of exploring realms anymore!"

After Elder Extreme Darkness decided, she regained her composure very quickly and continued, "During this big war, the 5 Grand Organisations are brothers and sisters! All missions are shared and you can check them out in the Dream Realm!"

"Since you're here, just join the huge army at our side and head

towards Jade Capital City together!"

"That's exactly what I intended to do!"

Naturally, Fang Yuan had no qualms about such and immediately agreed.

Afterwards, Elder Extreme Darkness closed her eyes and waved her hand.

Fang Yuan understood her and took his leave. He looked for a member of the Realm Alliance and asked for the second best mansion. He then entered the mansion and rested.

Inside the meditation room.

Fang Yuan sat cross-legged. An enchantment appeared that separated what was inside from the outside.

"During the face-to-face conversation, Extreme Darkness only thought I was at the 5th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage. Looks like the concealment of this dream elemental force is very effective. I wonder how effective it would be in front of a sage?"

Fang Yuan recollected the entire meeting with Extreme Darkness and made up his mind, "To be safe, I shall refrain from meeting with sages."

Fang Yuan then entered the Dream Realm with his spiritual will.

Fang Yuan's figure appeared at once Inside Green Bronze Hall, Realm Alliance Mountain. He began looking through the rock tablet.

"Indeed... all missions are shared and all pieces of intelligence are shared too. Originally, it was the 5 Grand Organisations who created the Dream Realm. Once mobilised, the entire Dream Realm would be the biggest intelligence and logistics base. The Imperial Court can only forsake this place and set up another system, or else all their secrets would be leaked!"

Although the Dream Realm was dictated by the Kun Spirit to

ensure absolute fairness, Fang Yuan believed that the 5 Grand Organisations definitely secretly tampered with it. Thus, they could join hands and dominate the command of the Dream Realm and manipulate the Kun Spirit.

Therefore, if the Imperial Court dared to use the Dream Realm again, they would be courting death!

This point could be seen previously when Mu Hezi gave out the secret method to contact the Hidden Dragon Guards.

# Chapter 472: Discourse

---

Beginning of the 16th Year of Zhao Ming.

Shi Longtu led a huge army of 300,000 soldiers and charged towards Jape Capital City.

Flags were raised and there were lots of humans and horses. Their camp was set up and it was sprawling like large pieces of white clouds.

"So... unimaginable!"

Amongst the group of dream masters, Ruan Junxian was donned in Baize Mountain's uniform. As he looked towards the majestic capital, he still felt rather unbelievable.

Although he knew dream masters were very strong, he never knew that once the 5 Grand Organisations joined hands, changing the world was in the palm of their hands.

In just a few years, the Imperial Court, which used to be insurmountable in the eyes of the Ruan family, was about to collapse?

As Ruan Junxian thought about the few cities along the way that surrendered without putting up a fight, he felt that it would not be surprising even if Emperor Zhao Ming were to come out and surrender right now.

Such a dumbfounded and unrealistic feeling Ruan Juanxian was currently feeling was the same feeling he felt when he saw how his enemy absurdly rose through the ranks.

'Fang Yuan!'

As Ruan Junxian quietly muttered his enemy's name, this man who cast a great shadow over his family and sect had already suddenly broken through to become a True Divine!

Last time, this man bullied the weak as a dream master, but now,

he had already become a powerful martial artist.

Whereas, Ruan Junxian himself had lost his confidence and took on the path of a dream master instead. It was as though they were on a crossroad and the two of them took the opposite paths.

Now, one of them was famous and renowned while the other was unknown and unheard of. Who could understand his torment?

When Ruan Junxian first met Fang Yuan in the army, he had to pay respects to him as a lower ranked soldier and he felt like killing himself doing so.

Now, he was already numb.

"Such a big shot... I guess to him, I'm already invisible?"

Ruan Junxian gazed at the lofty city walls and felt rather uneasy.

If the Imperial Court did not surrender, the attack on Jade Capital would not be so easy.

The Hidden Dragon Guards' strength was still considerable, while the Imperial Court and royal family were still as unpredictable as ever. Even if Ruan Junxian's master was here, he might still die in this war! Whereas for Ruan Junxian, he would merely be an ant and was only slightly stronger than a normal soldier!

Although a dream-building master was like a god in the eyes of normal soldiers, he was still a mere ant in the eyes of those powerful beings.

As Ruan Junxian thought, he suddenly felt a prestigious presence flash pass him and he immediately bowed, "Another powerful being has come over!"

"The siege of Jade Capital City is the last battle! Even the Sage himself have to personally take part! What's there to be surprised of?"

Whereas, a Baize Mountain senior beside him felt unamused.

"You're right, senior!"

Ruan Junxian had to reply with a smile and as he was about to suck up to the senior, that senior saw someone and immediately pressed his head, "Quickly bow, another powerful being is passing by!"

Ruan Junxian lowered his head drearily and took a quick glance with his eyes. All the blood in his body almost flowed backwards at once when he saw this person.

In front of him, Fang Yuan casually walked by him. Fang Yuan's face was calm and he seemed to be thinking about something.

After his back view was finally completely gone, the Baize Mountain senior finally relaxed himself, "Be more alert next time when you are patrolling outside! Other True Divines might not matter, but this person is Realm Alliance's number one genius, he might be a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master in the future."

"That was... that was..."

Ruan Junxian smiled along, but secretly, he was clenching his fists.

...

"That soldier just now..."

Fang Yuan returned to his tent and thought, "I've seen him before... Oh, it's him! Ruan family's Ruan Junxian, I can't believe this kid has taken on the path of a dream master."

In actual fact, Ruan Junxian was from a small family and did not have much fate with him. He was indeed invisible in Fang Yuan's eyes.

Unless Ruan Junxian opened his cheats!

"Unfortunately, he is still only a dream-building master! Even if he is a Fate Soul, he has already missed the right timing!"

Fang Yuan shook his head. He then strode out of the military

camp and arrived on a mountain.

Deep within the dense forest, Fang Yuan suddenly dug out the core of a tree and retrieved an emerald-green coloured piece of leaf.

"Woong! Woong!"

After dream elemental force surged into the leaf, the leaf immediately radiated with a vibrant glow before it transformed into the silhouette of a person, "Where have you been, I was waiting so anxiously for you!"

"Better to be safe than sorry!"

Fang Yuan was covered in mist and his voice was changed too, "Jade Capital is about to be sieged and you all have the mood to look for me?"

"Things are already at this stage, we can only be loyal to the country!"

Mu Hezi was back to his usual bearing as he sounded resolute and decisive, "Previously, Demon Killing Divine Pen Li Qingmian wanted to personally hunt you down, Head and I were so nervous for you! Luckily, the heavens help the good!"

"Source Seeking Sect... hehe..."

Fang Yuan snickered. He knew that his master hatred for Source Seeking Sect was as deep as the sea, and this had to be settled once and for all sooner or later.

"Okay, since you are willing to contact us, looks like you have made the choice to side with the Imperial Court!"

Mu Hezi's expression appeared rather unwilling, "As per Head's request, I am granting you the rights to Hidden Dragon Mountain!"

Hidden Dragon Mountain was the headquarters of the Hidden Dragon Guards and was very renowned; even Fang Yuan had heard about it before. When Fang Yuan heard that, an extremely



interested expression immediately appeared on his face, "I heard the location of this mountain is a top secret of the Hidden Dragon Guards... Wait a minute... rights?"

Fang Yuan's expression changed at once.

"Haha... you are smart indeed. I already passed the key to Hidden Dragon Mountain to you last time, just that it was not recognised by us and you could not enter the mountain yet."

Mu Hezi chuckled and immediately cast a magical formula.

On the leaf, numerous golden runes appeared. They were like a chain which formed a certain core.

A summoning appeared faintly. Fang Yuan was very familiar with it.

"It's a spiritual space similar to the Dream Realm!"

Fang Yuan came to a sudden realisation, "Turns out the so-called Hidden Dragon Mountain is like the Dream Realm, it doesn't even exist."

"Haha... that's right! Although Kun beasts are extremely rare, but with Da Qian's wealth, how could we not find one?"

Mu Hezi laughed. His illusory silhouette then dispersed at once, "Our Head has been waiting for you for very long."

"That's unexpected..."

The dense forest was silent once again. Fang Yuan looked at the golden green leaf on his hand and suddenly smiled, "Well, that's good too. Even if sages made their moves in Dream Realm, it would not damage the foundation."

Fang Yuan stopped for a while. His entire body then sunk and buried into the ground and he disappeared.

Immediately, a layer of soil appeared along with some grass and wildflowers. The two sides combined and covered the traces on the ground perfectly at once.

...

This was a mountain, an extremely vast and imposing mountain that was multiple times larger than Dream Realm's Realm Alliance Mountain.

On the two sides of the foot of the mountain, there was a dragon statue and a tiger statue. The statues were lofty and mighty looking, even their bodies were modified and had all sorts of buildings and passages.

"Hidden Dragon Mountain?"

Fang Yuan's figure appeared. His body was still in a misty white state as he stood on top of the dragon peak with his hands behind him.

"That's right!"

Space trembled and the Head of Hidden Dragon Guards' figure slowly emerged from it. He looked towards Fang Yuan with a gentle gaze as though he was a senior who just met his long lost junior, "Those days... I was so close with Master Heartless. We travelled together, drank together, talked together..."

Fang Yuan carefully scrutinised this Head of Hidden Dragon Guards.

Even though it was just a magical clone of his thoughts, its body's spiritual aura was still astounding. It was as though he was the entire sky! The entire land!

As the Head of Hidden Dragon Guards spoke continuously, it was as though he was very nostalgic. He then said to Fang Yuan, "You chose the Imperial Court, very good! You will not regret your choice in the future and you will even benefit tremendously from it."

'Something's not right!'

After Fang Yuan listened to what he said, an alarming thought

appeared in his mind, 'The Head of Hidden Dragon Guards has not given up, what kind of cards is the Imperial Court still hiding up their sleeves?'

In actual fact, Fang Yuan also felt that it was really unexplainable how the Imperial Court was so badly defeated.

After all, they were the ruler of the world. Furthermore, their existence was supported by the heavenly will!

Such a colossal Da Qian Imperial Court would be an eternal dynasty with perpetual stability if there were no dream masters! How could they fall like a sand castle and immediately crumble under the attack of a finger?

"Oh? From what I know, Shi Longtu still could not achieve victory in the siege of Jade Capital after a long battle. He's already burning incense and praying to invite the 5 Sages to advent. I wonder how would you react to it?"

Fang Yuan's eyes gleamed and he asked suddenly.

"This is the Imperial Court's top secret!"

The Head of Hidden Dragon Guards' face turned solemn.

Just now, his voice was gentle, but with his solemn expression now, an imposing might immediately appeared. It was as though the surroundings had turned into a battlefield, "For such top secrets, the fewer who know, the better! If they are people like you who cover up their original identity, they must be after something!"

"I have too many enemies, I had to do it to be safe than sorry!"

Fang Yuan had a thought, he knew that there were still too little 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters in this world.

As Fang Yuan suddenly appeared, it was too suspicious. Furthermore, as he was too shady, he most likely had a well known true identity.

With these suspicions and with Imperial Court's strength, they could quickly find out who he was!

Of course, Fang Yuan was not intending to hide his identity for so long. As long as he survived this war and the world had reshuffled, there was nothing wrong even if he had two identities!

"I heard you killed Source Seeking Sect's Feng Buer and asked for rewards from Mu Hezi?"

The Head of Hidden Dragon Guards did not go on about Fang Yuan's identity and asked him about another area.

"One has to be fully prepared, isn't that normal?"

Fang Yuan shrugged.

"If you were part of my Hidden Dragon Guards, you would immediately be rewarded accordingly..."

The Head of Hidden Dragon Guards seemed to be in a difficult spot, "I wonder if you are interested?"

"Last time, my master's name was tarnished and protecting him would be declaring war against the 5 Grand Organisations. Thus, he was given up on... Now, the two sides are already at war, but this matter is just thrown aside?"

Fang Yuan laughed and continued, "Unfortunately... I am not!"

"Sure enough, you still have resentment inside your heart!"

The Head of Hidden Dragon Guards sighed and did not say much. He then threw out two crystals, "These two Realm Elemental Crystals shall serve as compensation."

"Realm Elemental Crystals?"

Fang Yuan received the crystals. The power of the crystals was very similar to the natural sources he harvested from realms.

"The heavens have energy and the realms have natural sources. We explore numerous realms and reap these..."

The Head of Hidden Dragon Guards smiled, "This is my personal collection. They are your rewards for killing Feng Buer, they should be sufficient."

# Chapter 473: The Beginning

---

'These are indeed Source Crystals!'

Fang Yuan flipped his hands and kept the crystals safely.

These two Source Crystals were neither too big nor too small. However, if it were to be used, it could transform a normal human being with no cultivation to a 6th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master.

Such energy would still be useful to even a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master.

"Thank you head! I have a few pieces of intelligence with me which I am willing to share with you."

Fang Yuan smiled as he unreservedly revealed everything he had heard from the higher-ups of the 5 Grand Organisations.

After all, he did not believe that the Imperial Court would not plant spies within the 5 Grand Organisations. After all, the pieces of information which he was providing were not crucial and more importantly, he could gain the trust of the Head.

"That's great!"

Indeed, after listening to Fang Yuan, the Head of Hidden Dragon Guards felt appreciative. "Since you are unwilling to join the Hidden Dragon Guards, you can remain as our Guest Minister. Now is the perfect time for the Imperial Court to strike back... You are in a favourable position within the core team of the 5 Grand Organisations. I have a few missions in mind and you seem to be the best candidate for these missions."

"Please enlighten me!"

Fang Yuan's expression changed. "Considering the fact that I want to wipe out the Source Seeking Sect, I believe that the both of us have the basis and foundation to work together."

"You are indeed the disciple of Master Heartless to have the determination to wipe out the Source Seeking Sect, huh?"

The Head of the Hidden Dragon Guards gazed at Fang Yuan and his smile became wider before he started to laugh hysterically. "Great! This is great! We can work together to wipe out Source Seeking Sect as soon as this war is over!"

...

As soon as Fang Yuan returned to the military base, he could feel that the atmosphere was different.

"Lord Fang Yuan!"

Before his designated tentage, a dream master from the Realm Alliance seemed to have waited for him for a long time. "The Sage and a few other elders have arrived!"

"Sage?"

Fang Yuan was shocked. "The Sage of the Realm Alliance have arrived? How many elders have come over?"

"Just now, Alliance Leader, Lord Demon Killing Divine Pen and a few elders have arrived." The reporting dream master seemed to be in his forties and his submissive look made it obvious that he was full of admiration to the Sage and the few other elders.

"Bring me there!"

Fang Yuan took in a deep breath as he followed the dream master to a huge tent in the centre of the military base.

"Fang Yuan requests to see the Sage!"

He bowed slightly towards the tent.

"Come in!"

A loud voice was heard in his spiritual will.

Fang Yuan opened the flaps of the tent and in that instant, he was being transported to another world.

The sun and the moon were high up in the sky. Grass filled the ground and flowers were in full bloom.

"A hollow? No wonder I cannot detect anything from outside!"

Fang Yuan immediately took a deep bow. "Greetings, Sage!"

"Very well, please rise!"

A loud voice commanded and Fang Yuan rose. Quickly, he scanned the surroundings.

In the centre of this new world, a being was sitting on a cloud bed with his legs crossed and was the centre of attraction.

Even light was being absorbed into the silhouette of the godly being.

On his head, a streak of white energy shot up, forming clouds which held up the entire sky.

'This is still within the tent, and this hollow is merely created by the Sage with a single thought!'

Fang Yuan was certain that the person before him was The Ancient One!

"Your physical body is in good form, Hmm... and you are already at the 5th Tier of Illusionary Divine as a dream master? Not bad, not bad at all!"

The Ancient One peered through Fang Yuan and waved his hands. "The 8 of you are the strongest fighting force of the Realm Alliance. We have already waited for this moment long ago..."

"We will serve the Alliance Leader with our lives!"

Within the small hollow, Xi Chen, Green Wood, Black Water, Thick Earth, Sharp Gold, Extreme Darkness and Smelter were all there as they bowed together with Fang Yuan.

"Very well... I hope that none of you will disappoint me!"

The Ancient One clapped his hands lightly. "Xi Chen and Extreme



Darkness, please remain. The rest of you, please take your leave!"

"Yes, Sir!"

Fang Yuan and Elder Smelter took their bows before leaving. As they left the tent, they exchanged glances before arriving at where Elder Smelter was staying.

"When did Alliance Leader come out of isolation?"

Fang Yuan appeared confused. "Didn't he say that he had an important task at hand?"

"The attack on the Jade Capital is of utmost importance. Alliance Leader and Lord Demon Killing Divine Pen have personally come here and other Sages had already taken over their tasks. Furthermore, before the final war, the remaining Sages will also arrive!"

Elder Smelter let out a mysterious chuckle.

This was not a piece of important information anyway. Therefore, he revealed it without any consideration to convince Fang Yuan to stay within the alliance.

Regardless, Fang Yuan was once from his faction and was already imprinted with Elder Smelter's print. Even though Feng Xinzi's incident had happened, Elder Smelter would still be credited for his contributions to the alliance.

"The arrival of two Sages and the fact that other Sages are ready to strike anytime... We also have more than half of the elders of the 5 Grand Organisations..."

Fang Yuan was lost in his thoughts. "If this is so, the war is about to happen?"

"Of course... War is always dangerous and even I myself don't know how long my old bag of bones can last..."

Elder Smelter sighed.

Fang Yuan gritted his teeth and was lost in his own thoughts.

...

At the same time, in Hidden Dragon Mountain.

"Head..."

On the top of the huge dragon statue, Mu Hezi's silhouette appeared. "This disciple of Heartless has an unpredictable cultivation and thinking... If we trust him blindly, it might affect our grand plan."

"If we do not trust him, then we shall not ask for his assistance. Since we have asked him for his assistance, we shall trust him. The fact that he is in possession of the 8 Gates Sword Array means that he can no longer be treated well by the 5 Grand Organisations... Even if he has an official position with them, he will still be despised."

The Head of Hidden Dragon Guards continued calmly. "We must continue to investigate. Although Baize Mountain has plenty of dream masters, we can still find leads some way or another."

"Yes Sir, I shall activate the 2nd Grade spies!" Mu Hezi took a bow. "However... The information might not be able to make it back in time!"

"Don't worry about this!"

Head of Hidden Dragon Guards was full of confidence. "As long as the two Source Crystals are with him, he does not have the rights to make the decision."

"You're wise, Head!"

Mu Hezi took another bow and his eyes were filled with excitement.

His predictions were correct. The Head of Hidden Dragon Guards had already secretly made alterations to the two pieces of Source Crystals.

No matter how much he would miss his old friend, when

compared to the interests of the Imperial Court, the Head of Hidden Dragon Guards would still choose to sacrifice others to protect the Imperial Court. This was the motto of the Hidden Dragon Guards!

...

"The path of a Sage is to create an entire world!"

Within the base of the 5 Grand Organisation alliance, Fang Yuan gazed towards the two most plain-looking tents in the centre and sighed to himself.

How would any mere mortal be worthy enough to witness the power of a Sage?

A thin tent was all it took to separate worlds and even Fang Yuan could not detect it from outside.

"In the alliance of dream masters, there are a total of 5 Sages. Now, 2 have already arrived. They are The Ancient One of the Realm Alliance and Li Qingmian of the Source Seeking Sect! There are another 3 of them secretly altering the 6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array. As soon as the array is activated, they will be able to arrive to provide support!"

"Whereas for the Imperial Court, the only Prominent Divine fighting force would be the Head of the Hidden Dragon Guards and two other Imperial Advisors!"

One of them was a True Elemental while the other was a True Divine. Both of them were at the peaks of their cultivation and were supported by the Imperial Court. Therefore, their actions would have an unbelievable power and they would be powerful enough to fight against two Sages!

However, that was all.

Unless a miracle happened, in Fang Yuan's eyes, there was no way the Imperial Court would be able to win.

At this stage, any plan would not be able to work, for it was simply the challenge between brute force!

Unfortunately, the 5 Grand Organisations had already destroyed the Imperial Court's foundations.

"Even if I were to satisfy the requests of the Head of the Hidden Dragon Guards, nothing will seem to change..."

Fang Yuan thought about the 2 Source Crystals which he had received and started to smile.

Regardless if the two crystals were detrimental or not, Fang Yuan had already decided not to use them.

Any normal dream master would surely use them without hesitation as they would be overcome by greed and would take any risk to absorb the energy from them. However, Fang Yuan was different.

With the special ability of fixed stats, Fang Yuan could always dream-traverse and return with plenty of rewards! This was especially so for his latest experience on Planet Earth Realm, and Fang Yuan even felt a little full from absorbing so much energy from it.

'Under such circumstances, if the Imperial Court wants to fight back, what will they do?'

Fang Yuan put himself in the shoes of the Imperial Court and started to think. "The small details will no longer matter. Now, only the Sages would matter! Nothing will change... unless..."

Fang Yuan's eyes glistened.

"Wuuuu! Wuuuuu!"

At this point in time, the cold military bugle was sounded.

Soldiers walked out of their tents and formed neat rows in their platoons. The entire process was extremely silent.

With such a high quality of discipline, these soldiers would be

considered elite anywhere they were to go.

Unfortunately, they would be the first wave of sacrifice in this war.

The 3 battalions of soldiers gathered and formed a tall platform outside the Jade Capital. It was about 35 yards tall. Shi Longtu sat above, donned in military armour. "Surrender!"

This was a mere formality and no one believed that it would work.

Indeed, the Jade Capital quickly sent out a message. The defending soldiers had rejected the offer to surrender. Furthermore, there were chants of "Long Live the Emperor" just beyond the city walls. A battalion of soldiers soon lined the top of the city walls. The soldier leading the pack held an umbrella with a yellow dragon on top.

"Is it Emperor Zhao Ming?"

Fang Yuan's exceptional eyesight allowed him to see the Emperor of Da Qian from afar.

To speak the truth, the emperor was just a matured looking middle-aged man. Even the servants around him seemed stronger than him.

Of course, this was only the impression of the emperor from a dream master who treated mortals like nothing.

To the average human being, the Emperor of Da Qian was a rightful Fate Soul!

With his appearance, the soldiers of Jade Capital started to chant loudly and felt energized.

Not just that, even the elite soldiers of Shi Longtu started to appear a little disorganised. Although they quickly composed themselves, Shi Longtu still felt a little discouraged.

He could never hide the fact that he was a rebel.

At that moment, Fang Yuan started to feel pity for Shi Longtu.

Even though Shi Longtu had ulterior motives, he would never lead the pack and sacrifice himself in front.

Unfortunately, under the pressure of the 5 Grand Organisations, all resistance was futile and no one would be able to change the mind of a Sage!

"Today, we shall charge all the way. Attack!"

Shi Longtu took in a deep breath before commanding the soldiers. With that, he wielded his sword and rushed forward.

"Charge!"

The 3 battalions roared and a bloodied fight ensued.

# Chapter 474: The Trade

---

"Kill!"

An officer of the alliance rushed up the 35-yard city wall as he waved his sword in his hands. "Let there be blood!"

"Screech!"

The blood-tainted sword complemented the Hundred Casted Knife perfectly as both weapons sliced through the general's armour effortlessly. The surrounding officers and soldiers flew backwards uncontrollably as their blood spewed from their necks.

Only a Meridian Opening Wu Zong would be able to create such a devastating effect!

"Die!"

At this point in time, this officer had already caught the attention of the guards on the city walls. A platoon of guards donned in gold armour and equipped with long spears started to holler as they attempted to lunge at the officer.

"Whoosh!"

In mid-air, he could deflect three spear lunges, but that was all he could do.

In the next moment, the 4 other spears heading towards him sunk into his armour without hesitation, releasing blood from his body.

Although he might be a Meridian Opening Wu Zong, as long as he was a vulnerable human being, he would still die in such a scene!

"Ha!"

The 4 soldiers who successfully penetrated the officer with their spears pulled their spears apart, splitting the corpse and revealing the innards of the dead officer.

"The officer is dead!"

Witnessing this scene, many advancing soldiers felt disheartened as they retreated like the tides of the ocean.

"Fire!"

As the soldiers from the city walls were about the advance, out of a sudden, they heard a loud noise.

"Rumble!"

Rocks weighing tonnes fell from the sky and smashed down on the city walls, turning all the soldiers on the walls into a bloodied pile of mess.

On the rocks, there were streaks of purple talismans carrying with them an enraged spiritual aura.

"Is this... The Thunderous Rocks?"

As soon as the leader of the speared soldiers witnessed this scene, he was devastated. "Retreat!"

"Rumble!"

It was all too late. All life forms were disintegrated and even the city walls were crumbled, revealing the inner structure which was strengthened by pieces of metal. In the walls, glittering talismans forming a protective array were revealed.

The killings lasted for a long while and the blood from both sides dyed the entire city wall red.

Finally, there was a bugle call.

The attacking soldiers slowly retreated. The sunset spilt red glows across the land, bringing the feeling of sorrow to everyone on the battlefield.

...

"Only the mountains will remain to witness the next sunset!"

Among the allied forces, Fang Yuan stood on a high ground and



witnessed everything.

A chaos of such intensity had already lasted for 7 days. Both sides continuously surprised each other and it was the perfect demonstration of the art of war in this world, but in such a short period of time, all the tactics were already exhausted.

Fang Yuan was unaware of the state of the Jade Capital. However, in the allied forces, other than the powerful beings and the sages, even dream masters in the 5th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage were being recruited to fight alongside the soldiers as an elite platoon by themselves. These elite platoons were tasked to ambush the city during nightfall. They were most of the time successful in breaking through but would always encounter resistance from the Hidden Dragon Guards and the Wu Zongs and spiritual knights of the Imperial Court.

"By now, everyone's limit should have been reached, right?"

After 7 days of high-intensity battles, what was left of a 30,000 strong army was 25,000. Almost 20% of the soldiers had died and the remaining soldiers felt unmotivated to carry on.

If this went on, there was no need for any war. The allied forces would have lost already.

"We don't want to end up with no more attacking forces after breaking through into the Jade Capital. We need to deploy our best troops for tomorrow's war..."

Fang Yuan took in a deep breath and gazed towards the tents in the centre of the base. Thinking about the discussion among the military personnel previously, Fang Yuan seemed to be lost in his own thoughts.

The task the Head of the Hidden Dragon Guards had given him was extremely simple. He only had to confirm the number of Sages among the allied forces and revolt during the crucial moment.

"To speak the truth... Although I cannot trust the alliance of

dream masters, this does not mean that I can trust the Imperial Court!"

Fang Yuan entered another tent and started to laugh to himself.

He was not only a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master now, but he had also purified his dream elemental force. He was harnessing pure energy from the Demonic Heart Realm and would, therefore, be a tier higher than the native dream masters. He was not only skilled in illusionary tactics and concealment, but could also accurately identify others.

Although the two Source Crystals which the Head of the Hidden Dragon Guards had given him seemed to be normal, it still gave Fang Yuan a mysterious vibe which ultimately led him to conclude that these crystals might cause harm.

Since they could possibly cause harm, it would only be wise to settle them as soon as possible.

At this point in time, the force of a spiritual territory appeared. With the brilliance of the burning flames, the majestic spiritual territory could still segregate Fang Yuan from the outside world, albeit not as complete as how a Sage could create a hollow as a separate world in itself.

"Elder Fang Yuan, why are you looking for me?"

Fiery Dragon Child appeared and from him came the voice of Elder Smelter. "This is a reminder that we should do things with privacy."

The creations of these Illusionary Divine dream masters would be their most loyal subordinates. For instance, Fang Yuan could possess any Sword Child he liked and if the Sword Child were to be killed, he could revive himself in the Sword Child.

"I am only looking to trade!"

Fang Yuan smiled before retrieving a crystal.

"This is..."

Fiery Dragon Child's eyes widened. "Oh my, such a huge Source Crystal! This will be enough for you to breakthrough to the 6th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage! Why are you willing to trade it away?"

"I am already a True Divine. Since the war is coming, does it matter if I increase my cultivation as an Illusionary Divine dream master? Unless it can allow me to breakthrough to the 7th Tier..."

Fang Yuan shrugged his shoulders. "Therefore, I want to change for something more useful to me!"

"Alright, just name it, I'll give you anything as long as I have it!"

Fiery Dragon Child could not take his eyes off the crystal as though he was gazing at a beautiful lady.

"I won't take advantage of you. I just want War Credits!"

Fang Yuan smiled and stated his request.

"War Credits?"

This request was unexpected but reasonable.

Since the 5 Grand Organisations came together, they had created a War Credits Rewards. They would assign missions to dream masters and reward them for their accomplishments. The 5 Grand Organisations had taken out many valuables for the dream masters to exchange with their War Credits, including their unique techniques, secret spells or even treasures.

Unfortunately, Fang Yuan had not contributed much to the war and therefore did not have much War Credits.

However, things were different for Elder Smelter.

Such an aggressive person would have fought at the frontline and had earned himself a considerable amount of War Credits.

"Alright, it's a deal!"

Elder Smelter clenched his teeth and agreed to Fang Yuan's terms.

He knew that although Fang Yuan would ask for an astronomical amount of War Credits, the fact that Source Crystals were extremely valuable to the point that even Sages would use it for themselves made the trade worth it. Furthermore, Source Crystals were not available on the War Credits Rewards.

If Elder Smelter were to miss this opportunity, he might not come across it in the future.

"Great!"

Fang Yuan nodded his head and tossed the crystal across.

"Hehe!"

After the trade, Elder Smelter started to examine the valuable Source Crystal in his hands and fell in love with it. "It seems like you have reaped quite a lot of rewards from your previous dream-traversing experience... I wonder what could have attracted your attention on the War Credits Rewards?"

Looking at Elder Smelter, it seemed like he was now interested in Planet Earth Realm and might just hop into it if not for the war.

Without fear, Fang Yuan replied. "I'm collecting!"

"Collecting?"

"Mmm, among the rewards on the War Credit Rewards, the price of the treasures which could be used to restore one's energy or recuperate one's injury are spiking. On the other hand, records or long-term techniques or even research information are dirt cheap due to the low demand. Some of these techniques are secret techniques... It is only human nature to have the lack of foresight. In this war, the allied forces will surely be victorious and in the near future, the price of all that I have just mentioned will surely spike!"

Fang Yuan calmly explained himself.

"Oh? Interesting, interesting indeed!"

Elder Smelter seemed a little interested as he nodded his head. However, he started to shake his head. "Although this is a path for you to get rich, looking at the intensity of the war, which low-tiered cultivator will be able to assure himself that he will be able to survive? Therefore, as soon as one gets War Credits, it will only be wise to exchange for treasure which will be able to ensure one's survival. If any of the treasures were to attract my attention, I will already exchange for it to use it. Also, you need to have a lot of War Credits with you, otherwise the profits you will be getting will be insignificant..."

The group of elders were extremely experienced and Elder Smelter could immediately think of the pros and cons of Fang Yuan's plan.

"Fang Yuan, you have a strong foundation and great foresight. I admire you for that."

Fiery Dragon Child paid his farewell. "If you have trades of such nature in the future, please look for me and I will make sure that you are satisfied."

"Thank you!"

Fang Yuan took his leave and left the tent. Looking at the War Credits on his inscription plate, he started to snicker to himself. 'After all that, Elder Smelter must be laughing at me for initiating such a trade. However, it doesn't matter to me. It is already a bargain for me to gain all these War Credits by trading away a possibly problematic Source Crystal.'

With the help of the Dream Realm, it would only take a single thought for the exchange of information, research materials or even secret techniques.

Fang Yuan did all of these in preparation to leave the 5 Grand

Organisations.

After the war, regardless if others were to find out about Planet Earth Realm or the 8 Gates Sword Array, Fang Yuan would most likely have to stay hidden and therefore, he had to prepare for that.

'Before thinking about victory, I need to consider defeat... In the worst scenario, if the allied forces are to be victorious and if they realise my secret, I will need to disappear as far as I can go... Of course, a more probable outcome is that I will be hunted down by a sage and if that is the case, all preparations will be futile.'

Fang Yuan casually thought about the possible outcomes as he unknowingly entered another area.

In there, a deity-like young lady was already waiting.

"Elder Extreme Darkness..."

Fang Yuan smiled sneakily. "Do you want to engage in a trade?"

...

It was nightfall.

Fang Yuan, who had just reaped a huge amount of War Credits from both elders was now wandering in the Dream Realm, quickly browsing through the War Credit Rewards.

"In becoming a True Divine and a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master, I have already consumed most of my resources..."

He gazed at the streaks of information and started to exchange for those he felt interested in.

"For any building to be built, the foundation is the most important! I shall not think about the path after True Divine. More importantly, I shall perfect my cultivation as a dream soldier master and my knowledge of arrays. From there, I can perfect the 8 Gates Sword Array, and create the 9th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage!"

Fang Yuan quickly exchanged for the relevant information and paid most attention to information regarding arrays.

After all, this not only concerned his future cultivation but also his survival!

The theory proposed by Sage Changli on the 9 Heavens and 6 Earths stemmed from the creation of arrays. The battle among sages was also through these two gigantic arrays and therefore, Fang Yuan knew that he had to pay close attention to it.

"I still need to find out some insider information about the happenings in the royal family..."

Fortunately, time passed at a different rate in the Dream Realm as compared to the outside world. Also, Fang Yuan could top his War Credits up with his contribution points and therefore, without any reservations, Fang Yuan spent everything.

# Chapter 475: Beast Swarm

---

On the second day, war drums roared.

Fang Yuan stood on top of a tall platform along with other elders as he defended the few 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters beside him.

'According to Sages' arrangements, the 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters should be making their moves today... The first wave of attack should be from the dream beast masters from the different organisations!'

Fang Yuan was currently standing side by side with Elder Smelter as they guarded Elder Thick Earth who was behind them.

This honest and sincere looking middle-aged looking elder was a rare dream beast master in the Realm Alliance! He had even cultivated to the 7th Tier of Illusionary Divine stage!

"Before the 7th Tier of Illusionary Divine stage, dream beast masters placed greater emphasis on the transformation of their own body. After reaching the 7th Tier of Illusionary Divine stage, dream beast masters will possess their own prosperous land and thus, they will be able to develop their beasts. However, this development is costly and consumes too much, even powerful beings will be exhausted. Therefore, only huge organisations can provide the support for them! Furthermore, compared to other powerful beings, they have the weakest self-defence and required bodyguards!"

Fang Yuan quickly calculated the pros and cons of such dream beast masters.

Although they could transform into magical beasts, it was still too weak for these powerful beings.

Of course, if they were given sufficient time, dream beast masters would be undefeatable in massacring normal people and



conquering lands.

"Rest assured, Thick Earth! With us here, no enemy can disrupt you!"

Elder Smelter assured.

"Of course I am assured."

Thick Earth rolled his eyes, "The two armies are battling it out now and behind me is the Sage, unless the Head of Hidden Dragon Guards is so impetuous, who could kill until here?"

Although Thick Earth was afraid of decapitating war tactics, after all, he was still a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master. Once he transformed into a magical beast, normal 6th Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters would all die to him. Thus, he naturally had some haughtiness to him.

"I'm starting!"

Behind Elder Thick Earth, the illusory image of a prosperous land appeared and began to become more real. A grassland bordered with reality and opened up some sort of gigantic space passage.

Large amounts of dense black dots rushed out from the prosperous land as though they were guided by something.

'Prosperous land...'

Fang Yuan felt rather emotional as he watched.

Since he had also cultivated to the 7th Tier of Illusionary Divine stage, he also had the ability to open up a prosperous land. However, such a huge investment was the prime example of high expenditure, high returns, but slow results. With the big war impending, only fools would slowly tend to their prosperous land.

"There are many benefits to prosperous lands, not only is it a completely safe logistics base, it also acts as a protection for family members and loved ones. It also provides good returns... Furthermore, the greater the prosperous land, the stronger the

spiritual territory's power is. It can even save one's life in key moments!"

Previously when Fang Yuan fought with Feng Buer, he would not have won so easily if his 7 Constellations Sword Array and torrential array did not happen to suppress Feng Buer's prosperous land and hollow.

'That Feng Buer is a dream spells master, which is the most common path, of course his prosperous land is nothing much. But this Elder Thick Earth is different..."

Fang Yuan carefully stared at the door to the prosperous land. It appeared as though golden flames were sparkling in his eyes.

Elder Thick Earth did live up to his name. The prosperous land was vast and its breath of the earth was abundant. It was much better tended to compared to Feng Buer's.

"Chi! Chi!"

"Chi! Chi!"

Immediately, the sea of black dots swarmed out from the door of the prosperous land. They were all humanoids that were 9 feet tall and covered in black fur. They had tusks and their eyes were bloodshot.

"Iron-armed Spiritual Monkeys?"

As Fang Yuan looked at their thick and solid claws, he immediately thought of a certain creature, "I heard such Iron-armed Spiritual Monkeys have extremely powerful arms and their skin and fur are as tough as iron. They have explosive temperaments and even a group of Wu Zongs at the Meridian Opening Realm would be battered dead by them."

Over 10,000 ferocious beasts had appeared!

Large amounts of Iron-armed Spiritual Monkeys formed an orderly wave as they roared and rushed towards the city walls of

the Jade Capital without caring about the nearby allied soldiers at all.

Although the city walls were tall, thick and shiny, it was child's play for the spiritual monkeys' sharp claws.

"Victory! Victory! Victory!"

The allied forces chanted and they were filled with confidence.

This swarm of 100,000 Iron-armed Spiritual Monkeys was merely a prequel. At the same time, from another direction, other dream beast masters began their performance.

"Chirp! Chirp!"

A prosperous land door opened and a dark cloud emerged that covered almost half the sky. Immediately, big savage looking birds with black feathers that covered their entire body emerged and charged towards the Jade Capital City.

"Putt! Putt!"

As they flapped their wings, black feathers flew down immediately which pierced down like nails.

"Nail Feather Vultures..."

Fang Yuan mumbled. He then heard something again.

The soil was moving up and down while the sound of sand moving about could be heard. This wave motion even reached the base of the city walls and caused strong tremors as though an earthquake was happening.

"There is a swarm of beasts below the ground too! They are Steel-toothed Giant Ants! This dream master is so devious, he wants to directly dig under the Jade Capital until it collapses!"

Fang Yuan nodded his head slightly.

Dream beast masters could summon hundreds of thousands of beasts with a wave of their hands! This was their strength and

fundamentals!

In actual fact, from Elder Thick Earth's performance, these Iron-armed Spiritual Monkeys were merely just cannon fodder.

Only the dream beast masters themselves knew which of their beasts were the true elites!

As they had the ability to create living things, no one could predict what kind of ferocious beasts they could create in their prosperous land.

With just these, it was already enough for the soldiers of the Jade Capital to tremble in fear.

"Shoot!"

On top of the city walls, a general's command could be heard loud and clear. Evidently, he was a Wu Zong at the highest level of the Meridian Opening Realm, he might even be a True Divine!

At this stage, Da Qian Imperial Court could no longer hide their strength. All their Wu Zong's and spiritual knights appeared one by one.

"Pew! Pew! Pew! Pew!"

On top of the city walls, numerous weird looking arcuballistas were used to fire arrows. They had a strange design and each of its core was a black coloured rectangular box. Every time it was launched, countless fire arrows flew out from the topmost layer of the box.

In the blink of an eye, millions of arrows landed on the swarm of monkeys.

"Kababoom!"

Tens of thousands of arrows were shot at the same time and formed a fire net. After each arrowhead struck its target, it immediately exploded which resulted in additional damage.

Sparks and flames covered the skies. It was as though it was a

hurricane of arrows and thousands of Iron-armed Spiritual Monkeys were turned into ashes.

"Change the arrows!"

After the command from the top of the city walls, the machinery noise of the arcuballistas could be heard. The black coloured box was dismounted and another giant box was loaded up. It was then ignited and launched in an instant.

It's launching speed was astonishing fast and so was its arrow consumption. Soon enough, three giant boxes had been used up.

Its effect and results were astoundingly good too. After a few rounds, the 100,000 strong monkey swarm was close to being completely annihilated. Broken limbs and remains were scattered all over the battlefield. There was also a nauseating and repulsive stench from the blood and burnt flesh mixing together.

Seeing such a scene, the allied soldiers quivered in fear. Even Shi Longtu was drenched in cold sweat as he knew that if his troop was faced with such a deadly weapon, they would turn into ashes in just a day!

"Eh?"

However, Fang Yuan saw something different from it, "Shouldn't such powerful weapons be used at the very last as the killing move? The best way to handle a powerful dream beast master would be with another powerful dream beast master... Looks like, the Imperial Court does not have such an expert!"

"That's natural... The Imperial Court's dream masters are within the Hidden Dragon Guards!"

As Elder Smelter mentioned that, he was rather infuriated, "But how many dream masters could they have? They would at most have the same number of dream master as our alliance, of course they would not have enough manpower."

On top of the city walls.

The Head of Hidden Dragon Guards calmly looked at the scene in front of him and ordered, "Since they are already used, there's no need to hide them anymore. Anyway, this Exploding Flames Divine Fire Arrow is only useful against lower tiered cultivators. The allied forces would also find a way to suppress it by tomorrow! Just use up all the remaining stock."

"Yes, Head!"

On top of the four-sided city walls, the arcuballistas shot towards the skies. Large amounts of Nail Feather Vulture shrieked in pain as they exploded and landed on the ground. Feathers and blood covered the ground as though a black and red coloured storm had just past.

In the blink of an eye, the tables have turned.

Two out of the three swarms of beasts had already been obliterated by the Imperial Court's powerful weapon which they had stored for years.

"The Imperial Court still indeed has its strength!"

Seeing such, Fang Yuan and Elder Smelter did not say anything. Elder Thick Earth's face turned red as he summoned another beast swarm.

"Chi! Chi!"

"Chi! Chi!"

This time around, the beast swarm which appeared was still made up of monkeys. However, there were only 10,000 of them this time. Each of them was strong and capable looking, their fur was of a shiny silver colour and each of them had a pair of wings. Fang Yuan could not think of their name at all.

"This seems like a mutated form of Iron-armed Spiritual Monkeys. Rumour has it that their monkey king has pure golden fur. Silver fur and with wings... what kind of monkeys are they?"

As Fang Yuan muttered, he purposely made sure Elder Thick Earth could hear him.

"Truth be told....."

Elder Thick Earth looked slightly excited as he explained, "This is a brand new species I created after spending years on it. I expedited the growth of a group of iron-armed monkeys until they are silver coloured and are at the elite level before I combined them with the wings of the East Sea Feathered Tribe. Initially, while I was creating them, I failed thousands of times! I'm naming them as Winged Monkeys. They have wings on their backs and can fly, hehe..."

Elder Thick Earth was filled with excitement which made Fang Yuan thought of the crazy scientists in the previous realms.

7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters could create beasts but they could not just create whatever they wanted. Instead, it was like an experiment. If it was too out of the norm, it would lead to the collapse of the genes and the resultant creature would not be able to successfully reproduce!

This was just like how Elder Thick Earth had to obtain his resources from Da Qian World and how he had to try his best to adhere to conventions in order to create this new species of monkey. Even so, he only succeeded after he failed so many times.

"Rumble! Rumble!"

The ground shook stronger and stronger. Numerous Winged Monkeys roared as they flapped their wings and flew to the sky.

"This is... the Steel-toothed Giant Ants?"

Fang Yuan looked at the slowly sinking foundation and immediately knew what was going on, "Because the city walls are protected by arrays and cannot be broken through, we are thus going downwards and preparing to sink its foundation?"

...

On top of the city walls, even the person under the giant yellow umbrella could feel the slight tremors.

"Your Majesty!"

The Head of Hidden Dragon Guards walked to Emperor Zhao Ming and slightly nodded his head, "It can't be avoided anymore, please command the grand secretaries of Spiritual Light Hall to make their move now!"

Although his demeanour was not respectful, no one felt displeased about it at all. Even the emperor himself felt it should be this way too, "Pass down my orders, the grand secretaries of Spiritual Light Hall are to assist Head in clearing the rebels!"



# Chapter 476: Prominent Divine

---

Dream masters were proud of being the strongest in the world. Normal Wu Zongs or spiritual knights could only be servants.

The Imperial Court had the backing of the Head of the Hidden Dragon Guards and therefore attracted these Wu Zongs and spiritual knights.

The Spiritual Light Hall was built for these high-tiered spiritual knights and only True Elementals were allowed in. These spiritual knights were conferred with a high status and were not required to bow down to the emperor.

"I have received your orders!"

At the same time, next to Emperor Zhao Ming, 7 ministers wearing purple robes with a crane sewn across their chests walked out to pay their respects.

They were all old-looking and appeared solemn like antiques. However, as soon as they walked out of the emperor's field of vision, there were visible changes and all of them became mysterious in their own ways. Spiritual light gathered around them and they all had an inconceivable amount of spiritual property.

"Lord Xue and Lord Zhang, I shall leave the problem of the ants to you!"

The Head of the Hidden Dragon Guards gazed towards the military formation from afar and sounded composed. "If we allow the city walls to shake one more time and startle the emperor, it will be our fault!"

"Head, don't worry!"

The two officers exchanged looks as a surge of spiritual force started to gather from the ground silently.

"Ground Shaking Spell? Fire Tunneling Spell?"

Through his Fiery Golden Eyes, Fang Yuan could see a lot more and started to feel excited.

These two spiritual spells were extremely ordinary and even spiritual knights below the level of Elemental Opening Realm would be able to cast them.

However, through these two True Elementals, Fang Yuan could see something magical happening from these two ordinary spells.

Fang Yuan could detect that after executing these two spells, a domino effect seemed to have started to spread out downwards, all the way beneath the Jade Capital.

"Rumble!"

An immense vibration came in contact with the attacking ants and the ground above was levelled.

The Fire Tunnelling Spell spread flames across the land and seeped through the cracks caused by the tremor.

"Rumble! Rumble!"

In a few moments, a dark hue of red appeared. It was raging magma which started to sweep across the ground towards the incoming ants.

"Whooosh!"

White smoke filled the air and the intense magma swallowed everything in its path. Furthermore, it started to flow through the tunnels which the ants had burrowed.

In an instant, tens of thousands of ants were wiped out and on the outside, there were cries coming from the base of the allied forces. Flames were spreading everywhere.

Although the fire was quickly dealt with, it had already embarrassed the dream masters in the base of the allied forces.

"Alright, is this the power of a True Elemental? Every spiritual spell is cast to perfection, blended with nature... Most importantly, a True Elemental is able to bring out the extraordinary in the ordinary. Even the most rudimentary spiritual spell will be able to create a devastating outcome!"

Fang Yuan examined how the various spiritual knights executed their spells and was deep in thought.

"Wind!"

On the city walls, a grand secretary of Spiritual Light Hall stood firmly. With the wave of his hands, a green tornado appeared and slowly picked up speed to resist against the Winged Monkeys.

"Fire!"

Beside him, another grand secretary with a long beard shouted and a flame appeared in his hands before disappearing into the tornado.

"Roar! Roar!"

In an instant, two humongous fire dragons emerged and each of them was about 2 miles long. They were almost as awe-inspiring as a real dragon and with a single roar, they split into hundred and thousands of dragons in the sky which flew down towards the Winged Monkeys.

The fire would become stronger in the wind!!!

At this point in time, every single fire dragon was full of life like it was almost real. They could even split up and were comparable to the beasts on the ground. Within moments, they burnt many Winged Monkeys alive.

Fang Yuan used to like using such tactics but looking at how powerful it could become, Fang Yuan felt a little ashamed.

They were indeed True Elementals to be able to push these two simple spiritual spells to its maximum potential.

To such a stage, there was no such thing as a low-tiered spiritual spell or a high-tiered spiritual spell. Every single spiritual spell being cast had its own spiritual property! The fire dragons being created not only had wisdom but were also not afraid of death. In fact, they were better than the Winged Monkeys in all aspects.

"Haha... It's Red Dragon!"

Witnessing this scene, Elder Smelter let out a weird laughter, licked his lips and revealed a murderous look in his eyes.

"Huh? Elder Smelter, do you know this person?"

Fang Yuan asked, full of curiosity.

"Of course I know him. He was always the loser and was once chased to the ends of the world by me. I thought that he had changed his name to live in seclusion. Who would know that he has now been recruited by the Imperial Court!"

Elder Smelter chuckled. "Let's settle this once and for all!"

Although it seemed like that had a lot of hatred for each other, Elder Smelter did not abruptly attack. He controlled himself as he gazed towards the soldiers.

On an elevated platform, Shi Longtu stood up and his face was full of respect as he severed the two cloud beds in the centre.

The Ancient One and Li Qingmian crossed their legs and appeared emotionless as they witnessed everything.

The two powerful spiritual wills started to converse in mid-air:

'Is the Head of Hidden Dragon Guards looking for an ultimatum with this move?'

'If he really wants it, so be it. Considering our full might, the Imperial Court will only be trampled by us!'

Even though the Imperial Court had planted spies, the fact that they were on the losing end in terms of the number of powerful beings would explain that it was the 5 Grand Organisations

attacking the Imperial Court now and not the other way round.

As the two sages spoke to each other, they completely treated the 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters as pawns. They were prepared to sacrifice anyone and everyone, even though their family members might be among those ready to be sacrificed.

'Something is not right! I'm afraid that the Imperial Court has an ulterior motive!'

The Ancient One was not supportive of the ultimatum. 'We should wait for our three brothers to fully activate the 6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array. By then, we will have the upper hand. For now, we should just manage and let things continue as per how they are!'

'Alright!'

As the leader of the Source Seeking Sect, The Demon Killing Divine Pen Li Qingmian was well-known among the sages to be ruthless. Therefore, his willingness to agree to The Ancient One was a surprise.

...

"Rumble!"

"Rumble!"

Just went both sides thought that there was no conclusion to the war, a slight tremor started to rumble from the depths of the earth.

"This is..."

Fang Yuan shuddered as he looked up into the sky.

The sunset was beautiful but it was not meant to last. As the last ray of the sun slowly retreated into the horizon, the sky was tinted a beautiful golden hue.

The full moon was already hanging in the sky, forming a majestic sight of both the moon and the sun in the same scene.

"This..."

The Head of Hidden Dragon Guards witnessed this and his emotionless face finally twitched. "Send my command down... All leaders, grand secretaries of Spiritual Light Hall and generals of Martial Arts Court are to gather at the city walls to wait for instructions!"

"Yes, Sir!"

Behind him, a silhouette slowly appeared. Taking a bow, it swiftly disappeared.

"The 6 Extremes Earth Dragons..."

The Head of Hidden Dragon Guards started to become filled with emotions as he witnessed everything. "How could it be completed so quickly?"

"Rumble!"

"Rumble!"

The small vibrations slowly picked up and within moments, it became an obvious earthquake which stunned the soldiers on both sides.

"6 Extremes Earth Shattering..."

Fang Yuan closed his eyes. With his imagination, he could vaguely see the nodes of the array being ignited throughout the entire piece of land. The energy was being transferred throughout the array in the form of vibrations.

Throughout the entire world of Da Qian, the 6 Earth Dragons raised their heads and roared in unison towards the Jade Capital!

"Da Qian has already lost this round! Did Zhang Jin or Wu Yue claim victory to disrupt the breath of the earth here?"

Fang Yuan mulled to himself. This was also the thought the Head of Hidden Dragon Guards had in his mind.

Not long after, the news started to spread among the armies.

While Shi Longtu was painstakingly trying to invade the Jade Capital, Wu Yue and Zhang Jin were continuously invading the Yong Region and the South at the same time.

Just as the 30,000 soldiers surrounded the Jade Capital, the Imperial Court was forced to send their elites and highly skilled people to the Jade Capital to protect the emperor and the city. On the other hand, both Wu Yue and Zhang Jin had received reinforcements.

Two hours ago, both the North and the South had already erupted into war. Since both Wu Yue and Zhang Jin had the assistance of dream masters, they could naturally win their wars effortlessly.

In a single breath, Wu Yue had managed to take down 6 regions.

In the South, Zhang Jin had attacked down the river and 10 over regions had surrendered. His combat power had multiplied by folds as the armies in the invaded regions had changed their loyalty to Zhang Jin. Now, he was the leader of 3 rebel leaders!

After this invasion, Da Qian was heavily crippled and finally lost control of the dragon energy in the realm. The disruption of the breath of the earth finally led to the earlier formation of the 6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array.

"This is using what they have against them!"

After reading about the latest development of the war, Fang Yuan sighed to himself.

They had a surplus of dream masters. Even if they were to split their combat power, they still had sufficient strength to win all three wars.

On the other hand, Da Qian did not have as many resources as the 5 Grand Organisations. Coupled with the fact that the Jade Capital was under attack, the Imperial Court could do nothing but

retreat its forces from the North and the South to protect the city even though they knew that this was a ploy by the 5 Grand Organisations. With that, they had lost both wars in the North and South!

This was the difference in outcome due to the difference in ability between both sides. No tactics or ploys could be used to reverse the outcome!

"Roar! Roar!"

Accompanying the increasingly loud dragon roars, the tremors started to increase in intensity. The sky darkened and it was as though 6 Earth Dragons appeared on the ground. All 6 of them were roaring towards the Jade Capital.

"Rumble!"

There was chaos everywhere!

An earthquake of extreme magnitude exploded in an instant. The dream masters and the soldiers of Da Qian were out of control, but the higher-tiered dream masters had long prepared for this scenario. They started to activate their arrays to protect the main base of the allied forces.

Dust spewed everywhere, covering the sun rays.

When the dust settled, everyone took in a deep breath.

The city walls which lasted 7 days without crumbling were now filled with holes. Cracks appeared on many parts of the walls as well.

Stretches of city wall crumbled in that instant, revealing the Jade Capital behind it.

"This is fate!"

Witnessing this scene, Shi Longtu hollered. "Fate is with me!!!"

Fang Yuan and the other elders paid no attention to him. Instead, they paid their respects towards mid-air. "Greetings, Sages!"



"Buzz! Buzz!"

A huge presence started to descend and 3 illusionary silhouettes appeared in mid-air. These 3 silhouettes gave off an awe-inspiring vibe and each of them had a huge cloud stemming from their heads.

"I'm sorry for the wait!"

These were not magical clones or spiritual wills, but the actual sages themselves. Without a sound, they descended before everyone!

Although they did not give any warning, the vibe and pressure which came along with them could be felt by everyone. The entire Jade Capital was thrown into a dead silence.

These 3 sages were waiting for the final opportunity to secure a resounding victory. The Imperial Court could do nothing, and not even the Head of Hidden Dragon Guards could fend off such an attack!

# Chapter 477: The Pen and the Sword

---

5 Sages appeared at the same time!

Colourful clouds released their glow at the same time, each representing a powerful presence.

It was as though the air around them had solidified in an instant. Everyone around, even True Divines and True Elementals, were being pressured by an invisible and immense force.

"Ha!"

At this moment, from the royal city, there was a loud exclamation.

It sounded like the roar of a dragon. The mighty roar seemed to have as much energy as the sun, being able to support even the weight of the skies.

"Phew....."

Countless cultivators heaved their sighs.

If they hesitated, they could be suffocated by the immense pressure which came from the presence of the sages.

"The annoying fogeys are here!"

The 5 Prominent Divine dream masters appeared solemn as they gazed towards an approaching storm originating from the royal family.

It was approaching neither swiftly nor slowly. Casually, but within a few moments, a silhouette had arrived on the city walls.

With every action of his, the clouds would lumber and slowly, they formed an eye of a tornado which followed him closely.

He was one with nature!

All of his actions represented the heavens! With the blessings and strength from the heavens, this person's powers were immensely

boosted.

"Superior Wu Zun!"

Fang Yuan mumbled the name of this Da Qian True Divine.

It was this person who neutralised the combined attack from the 5 sages with a single shout.

If Fang Yuan were to close his eyes to imagine, he would visualise a huge star as huge as an entire sun standing on the city walls!

No! Not just a star, but more like a black hole.

If Fang Yuan's spiritual will were to approach this person, it would be disintegrated immediately and he would not be able to detect anything. Therefore, he could only use his naked eyes to observe.

"Haha... It is my good fortune to be able to go head-on against 5 Prominent Divine dream masters! This is a happy occasion!"

Superior Wu Zun seemed like a normal looking middle-aged man with a squarish face and big ears. However, his ear-shattering laughter could shake even the strongest cultivators all the way back in the base of the allied forces.

"This is an extremely powerful martial artist willpower!"

Fang Yuan was a martial artist himself and knew how scarily powerful this martial artist was. "This person's willpower is like an entire mountain made out of metal. He can use it to disrupt reality like how the mind could affect matter! If any 5th or 6th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master were to encounter him, they would die from merely hearing his shout and will be unable to use any of their illusionary techniques."

"Is this how powerful a fated True Divine will be? What about a fated True Elemental?"

With a single thought, a fiery glow appeared in Fang Yuan's eyes as he started to observe the arrival of another storm.

The other party floated in mid-air and was a majestic looking young man. However, this young man's eyes were filled with sorrow as though he had given up on love. With that, he seemed wise and mature.

On his arrival, elemental force started to flow towards him like a river in a continuous cycle, spreading his vibe more than a 100 miles across!

"Accompanying the wind, I shall take command of all objects!"

This fated True Elemental was different from Superior Wu Zun. All elemental force in the realm and even objects had already recognised him as their owner, allowing him to manipulate anything at will.

"It seemed as though he has control over the entire world!"

Fang Yuan swallowed some saliva and knew that if he were to pit himself against any of them using his status as a True Divine or a powerful dream master, he would still undoubtedly lose. He might not even be able to escape alive.

"Qian Guiyi!"

Beside Fang Yuan, Elder Smelter was already shaking in fear as he revealed the name of this fated True Elemental.

These two spiritual knight and Wu Zong were the rare talents among all True Divines and True Elementals. They were already recorded in history books as they continued to impress everyone wherever they go.

After becoming the imperial advisor of Da Qian and receiving the blessings from the heavens, their cultivations were pushed one step further, breaking through their original limits to allow them to pit against Prominent Divine dream masters!

As they made their appearance, 10 other silhouettes started to appear on the city walls as well.

They all had mysterious spiritual auras or aggressive vibes and were all powerful beings, be it True Divines or True Elementals. Together, they were equally impressive as a bunch of sages!!

This was all the combat force from the Martial Arts Court, Tai Temple and the Spiritual Light Hall and was as powerful as the Hidden Dragon Guards. They were the pinnacle of the Imperial Court!

"Phew..."

Witnessing this scene before him, Fang Yuan took a deep breath.

Even Extreme Darkness, who was an Illusionary Divine dream master, appeared vexed as she bit her lip.

All of them knew that if they were to go head-on, considering the number of powerful beings the Imperial Court had, even a 9th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master could not be confident of ensuring its own survival.

"The 6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array should be completed. However, they have not activated it yet. The 5 sages are indeed mysterious in their ways!"

Fang Yuan gazed at the 5 sages in mid-air.

Although the Imperial Court had revealed their most powerful assets, the 5 clouds from the sages seemed unaffected.

The sages knew that they had control over the 6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array.

As soon as the array was activated, the source of the realm would directly be sacrificed and a high-dimension passage connecting to the Demonic Heart Realm would be formed.

The previous earthquake and crumbling of the city walls was nothing. The sages merely released the repercussion of activating the array and coincidentally awakened the Earth Dragons.

"Hidden Dragon! Qian Guiyi! Superior Wu Zun! The 6 Extremes

Earth Shattering Array is already completed. If you continue with your futile resistance, you will all turn into dust and will never be able to be reborn!"

From the 5 sages, a powerful spiritual will was heard.

"We are only following the trend of the heavens. Da Qian has never let anyone down. You guys are crazy to think about destroying our world and sacrificing it..."

Superior Wu Zun hollered with a thunderous voice. "We shall correct everything even if we have one man left!"

"Stubborn!"

The 5 sages roared together as their clouds floated up, breaking through the skies.

"Haha... I am already intending to take on the 5 of you!"

The sages tore the skies apart, revealing outer space as the battlefield.

Witnessing this scene, Superior Wu Zun laughed out loud and jumped into the battlefield without any reservations.

After all, if they fought in the Jade Capital, a single blow from any of the sages might just kill all the low-tiered cultivators in the vicinity.

Therefore, they had to fight somewhere else.

These 5 sages collectively opened up another void above the Jade Capital, which was the most suitable place for the fight to occur.

Only when the 5 of them combined forces against the 3 powerful beings from the Imperial Court could they guard their surroundings at the same time.

This was not to protect themselves. In fact, it was because the Jade Capital was also an important array eye of the array and it was best not to destroy it before the sacrifice.

The 5 sages appeared composed as they created the battlefield. They had the advantage but the 3 powerful beings from the Imperial Court could only enter the battlefield unwillingly, for they did not want to risk the destruction of the Jade Capital.

Although the Head of Hidden Dragon Guards had a lot of other considerations, he did not have much choice.

"Move the mountains!"

Superior Wu Zun hollered as he released his energy. The surroundings around the Jade Capital shook as mountains were being plucked from the ground before flying towards the 5 sages.

His strength was enough to move mountains!

As a fated True Divine, his first move was an extreme one.

"Great!"

Qian Guiyi took a step out and entered the battlefield. At the same time, across a radius of a thousand miles, a storm started to pick up as though all the elemental force of the world had gathered in a singularity.

"Leaders of Hidden Dragon Guards, listen up! Protect the Jade Capital and never retreat!"

Head of Hidden Dragon Guards took a quick glance towards the base of the allied forces before taking a step into the battlefield.

Fang Yuan raised his head.

The ability of the sages to create a void and a separate space from earth was impressive. It was as though another dimension had opened up above the Jade Capital. In the dimension, stars covered the background and silver-coloured storms were raging everywhere.

The 8 powerful beings each took up a spot and held their ground. Even the storm within the dimension started to calm down.

Before the stars, Superior Wu Zun's act of tossing mountains was

a mere joke. As soon as the battle commenced, the mountain was swiftly disintegrated by the silver storm.

"Kill!"

The cultivators exchanged glances before roaring together.

Spiritual territories were released and the space around the battlefield was warped. The entire place turned into chaos. Anyone who was not a powerful being would die without a question if they were to enter the spiritual territory.

"Haha..... Red Dragon, let's see who can save you today!"

Elder Smelter had already long targeted this True Elemental spiritual knight. With a roar, 6 fiery dragons appeared beside him before flying towards the city walls.

"Hmph, you have destroyed my entire sect and I shall avenge them today!"

A hint of fear flashed across Red Dragon's face. Suddenly, he transformed into a 3-headed fiery dragon with 6 talons and flew forward into the battlefield.

"Hehe..."

Witnessing the scene, Fang Yuan snickered to himself. "From the sages' plans, everyone will be sacrificed... Indeed, anyone weaker than a sage is a mere ant!"

Considering the fact that Fang Yuan was well-known, many other powerful beings were already plotting to kill this 'talent'.

Behind Fang Yuan, Elder Thick Earth transfigured into a 6-legged beast and burrowed into the ground, disappearing in an instant.

This elder knew that on the battlefield, be it him, the dream beast master or Fang Yuan, the talent, both of them would be targeted by the enemies. Since even Elder Smelter had already made up an excuse to leave the battlefield, if Fang Yuan and Elder Thick Earth were to remain together, they would surely be



surrounded.

Instead of sacrificing oneself in the name of brotherhood, it was wiser to escape.

After all, a dream beast master needed a safe environment to be able to continuously summon a beast army.

"They are the best teammates I can ever ask for!"

Looking at the fleeing Thick Earth, Fang Yuan chuckled. In the next instant, he could feel that his life was in danger.

# Chapter 478: Chaos in War

---

Shadows flickered about.

Fang Yuan knew that today was the first time he had seen so many powerful beings come together.

The final showdown between the two sides had seen the best of the best pitting against one another. Among the Imperial Court, True Elementals and True Divines gathered and shouted as they advanced.

In such a war, normal soldiers were expendable.

Even Shi Longtu himself could only flee with embarrassment and couldn't care less about his own army.

"Rumble!"

Fists and palms were flying about, and so were spiritual spells and dream soldiers... Everyone displayed their powers beneath the wall of the Jade Capital and in no time, the already tattered wall became even more damaged.

At this stage, the forces of the Imperial Court were continuously retreating, giving up more and more land to the powerful beings to fight with each other.

The soldiers who were unable to escape from the battlefield, be it from Da Qian or from the allied forces all died a gruesome death and had no way to escape.

It was from this chaos which Fang Yuan could detect a murderous intent coming for him from somewhere.

This murderous intent was extremely strong, like the sun rays coming from a huge sun. If anyone else were to be targeted, he would have no chance of escaping alive.

"Is a True Divine trying to ambush me?"

Fang Yuan leapt up and quickly retreated. In an instant, he had

already moved 35 yards backwards.

"Hmph! As a True Divine, how can you allow yourself to be the lackeys of dream masters!"

"You deserve to die!"

Two spiritual wills were heard in Fang Yuan's consciousness.

From afar, two majestic looking silhouettes appeared. They were both True Divines.

Seeing that their ambush had failed, they quickly adapted and started to strike towards Fang Yuan in quick succession.

This was similar to if a dream master were to encounter another dream master from the Hidden Dragon Guards. They would treat the latter as a traitor. Therefore, the True Divines and True Elementals of the Imperial Court would treat Fang Yuan as a traitor since he was with the allied forces.

Traitors were always more hated than normal enemies and this was the perfect representation.

The Imperial Court was the base of martial arts and spiritual spells. It was no surprise when these two True Divines had a murderous intent towards Fang Yuan whom they assume to have defected from the Imperial Court.

"The information about me in the Imperial Court should only include that I am a dream master and a talented martial artist, my cultivation as a dream master is at the 4th or 5th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage and that I have just achieved a breakthrough to become a True Divine. I am the perfect weak person for them to pick on..."

In a flash, Fang Yuan understood everything. "These two True Divines are combining forces to deal with me to ensure that they will be victorious. Furthermore, they can use me as an excuse to avoid the stronger enemies. They are really scheming!"

However, Fang Yuan felt pleased.

Although these two True Divines were looking to use Fang Yuan to avoid the other powerful beings, they had no idea that Fang Yuan was thinking about the same thing, which was to make use of the both of them.

In such a chaotic war, the wise ones would be those who remain a low profile.

With a sidestep, Fang Yuan attempted to escape to the sidelines of the battlefield.

"Don't think of escaping! Today, the Lefty and Righty Ambassadors will take your life!"

The two True Divines hollered in unison as though they were up against their nemesis.

A True Divine would be extremely quick in his footsteps!

In a few moments, the 3 of them had already ran a few miles and had arrived at the sidelines.

"This place is scenic and is most suitable to be your place of burial!"

Fang Yuan examined the both of them with his hands behind his back. With a smile, he glared at the both of them who were already catching up.

"You're overconfident!"

These two True Divines were well trained in combat. Without resting, they immediately struck their opening moves.

"Thousand Crane Claw!"

"Tiger God Searching Palm!"

The both of them bellowed. Their martial arts were not only at the peak but could also complement each other to deliver the perfect blow.

Martial arts willpower gathered from the surroundings to form the illusionary shape of a ferocious tiger and a white crane. Together with the wind, the strikes went for Fang Yuan's weak points.

These two people were True Divines and both of them had already formed the martial artist Divine Body. However, they held back and did not reveal them. Instead, they were purely harnessing their physical strength, but it was already enough to even split mountains and oceans.

"You shall know in a moment if I am overconfident!"

Fang Yuan took in a deep breath. Similarly, he did not release his Pangu Eagle Body and only leveraged on his physical body to receive the hits. "Eagle Claw!"

"Bang! Bang!"

He struck towards the left and the right to deflect the incoming attacks. As soon as the martial arts willpower settled into Fang Yuan's consciousness, it was destroyed in an instant. A loud gong was heard as soon as the energy of the illusionary tiger and crane landed on Fang Yuan's body.

"Metal Body Technique?!"

Lefty and Righty Ambassador were shocked. Having such a level of cultivation in this technique meant that Fang Yuan was as skilled as those highly-skilled generals in their army.

After shock came embarrassment.

Both of them were experienced True Divines and they could not even take down a junior in a single hit. Instead, both of them were being counterattacked.

How could they accept such a fact?

"Brother, let's go all out!"

Lefty Ambassador roared as his physical body started to expand

in size. Energy started to flow on his back as he turned into a giant with the prints of a ferocious tiger on his skin.

"Alright!"

Beside him, another Divine Body was being formed. It was long like a crane from the heavens. With outstretched wings, it started to fly.

"So, it's the Tiger and Crane Divines!"

Fang Yuan laughed as he recognised the both of them.

"30 years ago, in the South of Da Qian, there was the Divine Dragon Sect. The Sect Head, Lord Divine Dragon was a True Elemental. He had two ambassadors under his charge and another 5 lone cultivators. All of them were True Divines. However, your sect had offended the Source Seeking Sect and Lord Divine Dragon was killed. The 5 lone cultivators had surrendered to them while the both of you were missing. I see, so you guys have turned to the Imperial Court!"

"We shall avenge both our sect and our country today!"

The Tiger and Crane Divines roared and manipulated their divine bodies to attack.

"Tiger Crane Double Kill!"

The two True Divines combined forces and since they were in close proximity with each other, coupled with the fact that the two brothers had exceptional chemistry with each other, they could easily kill even a True Elemental!

"Whooo..."

Fang Yuan released a long breath and his skin started to turn into a natural violet hue.

"Whoosh!"

The spiritual aura which he exhaled was long and sharp like an arrow. Swiftly, it flew towards the two of them.

"Pangu Eagle Body!"

Fang Yuan started a chant and an empty plot of land appeared behind his back. A muscular giant started to emerge from the land.

Although Fang Yuan had already restrained himself, the divine body which he had just released was still much taller than the Tiger and Crane divine bodies on the other end. It was as though he was bullying two kids.

"Kill!"

The 3 silhouettes quickly came together and fought at a speed unable to be observed by the naked eye. As the fight progressed, space around started to warp and the ground beneath them turned into an irreversible mess.

"This is impossible! He is merely a new True Divine. How can he even keep up with us combining forces?"

In an instant, the 3 of them had already fought over a thousand times and the Tiger and Crane divine bodies started to retreat.

"This person seems to have cultivated a perfect version of martial arts and he must have only broken through after reaching his limits. This is perfection!"

Lefty Ambassador appeared pale and started to feel an indescribable sense of jealousy. "You are indeed a talented and a powerful True Divine.... Why do you want to join the dream masters?"

"We have 5 sages in the allied forces and our victory is unquestionable. It is the both of you who are confused as to which side you should choose!"

Fang Yuan laughed heartily and his heart sank as he gazed and the both of them who remained silent.

As Fang Yuan gathered his spiritual will, he could vaguely observe the 9 Heavenly Sky Net Array. Although it would be hard

to imagine a fight among sages, it was almost impossible for the 5 Prominent Divine dream masters to lose this war.

Suddenly, Fang Yuan struck his hand out and the Pangu Giant behind him started to roar. With an open palm, it started to grab towards the two True Divines.

'After all, I am not looking for recognition in this war. I am only hoping that I do not offend anybody... I have already done my part to hold these two True Divines back, considering the cultivation level which I have revealed...'

After engulfing the two True Divines with his energy, Fang Yuan could still look around and observe the other fights between the other powerful beings.

The situation now was tensed.

However, something was not right!

'How could the Imperial Court gather so many powerful beings? Why are all the powerful beings so loyal to the Imperial Court?'

Fang Yuan felt that all of these were unbelievable. 'Everyone can see that as soon as the 5 Prominent Divine stage dream masters win the fight in the battlefield in outer space, even if the other powerful beings win here, their victories would not matter.'

Although Da Qian had dream masters, they had more True Divines and True Elementals and these martial artists and spiritual knights were willing to put their lives on the line. Not only were they able to resist against so many 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters, they had slowly gained the upper hand and everything was unbelievable.

...

On another battlefield, Elder Black Water had black water gushing about him. As the black water flowed, it corroded everything in its path.



"3,000 gallons of black water shall corrode everything!"

"Whoosh!"

From the black water, a few thick Xuan Snakes appeared. Sticking out their tongue, they targeted a spiritual knight and two other True Divines within. It was as though a spider had trapped its prey in its spiderweb and was about to slowly enjoy consuming it.

"How dare you 3 servants dare to fight against your master?"

Elder Black Water controlled the black water towards the 3 of them and appeared satisfied. "Or would you prefer to be corroded by my Black Water Array?"

"Let's give it our all!"

The two True Divines shrieked as they walked on the black water. They were surrounded by a dense layer of elemental force.

"Hiss! Hiss!"

Two Xuan Snakes appeared and blocked their path.

"Kill it!"

"Buzz! Buzz!"

The two True Divine immediately revealed their divine bodies. With a ferocious punch, they smashed the snakes' head and continued walking. They were making their way towards Elder Black Water!

As they ran, white smoke started to form beneath their legs. Thick layers of elemental forces started to corrode and even their feet were beginning to bleed. The black water started to cover them and corroded through their flesh, revealing parts of their bone.

"How dare you kill my Black Water Xuan Snakes!"

Elder Black Water was infuriated as he unleashed a tsunami.

"Even if you manage to find our the weakness of my array, I can alter it immediately to kill the both of you in an instant!"

Before Elder Black Water could alter the array, a silhouette appeared behind him and a spiritual will entered his consciousness. "Calm!"

Elder Black Water froze as he glared at the silhouette approaching him with a sharp knife. He appeared stunned for a moment before his head exploded and blood spewed everywhere.

"Whoosh!"

At the side, a Black Water Xuan Snake appeared. Its forehead started to split, revealing Elder Black Water's face. "This is the Head of Hidden Dragon Guards' bodyguard... Shadow Dragon Guard?!"

The ambush had gone undetected. Fortunately, Elder Black Water had prepared a few bodies for himself and with some time, he would be able to restore his powers.

"Kill!"

At this moment, the True Divines had let loose and came before the black snake. With their bloodshot eyes, they hollered in unison. "Die!"

"Roar! Roar!"

As the two divine bodies sandwiched the snake in their palms, a gruesome explosion happened. A soul emerged from the snake which was subsequently stabbed by Shadow Dragon Guard before dissipating.

The 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master of the Realm Alliance, Elder Black Water, was dead!

# Chapter 479: Battle

---

This Elder Black Water was really unlucky.

Dream masters at the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage had lots of survival tactics. Even if their original body was killed, they could transmigrate themselves to a temporarily prepared body.

What Elder Smelter spiritualised was the Fiery Dragon Child whereas what Elder Black Water created were the Black Water Xuan Snakes.

However, such possession-cum-reincarnation technique could only be used once in a short period of time.

As Elder Black Water was fighting against 4 others all alone, the spiritual knight he was fighting against discovered the flaw in his array. The two True Divines persevered through the black waters to kill him and in the key moment, there was even a sneak attack from a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master, Shadow Dragon Guard!

Under the combined attack from the four of them, not only did Elder Black Water die, even his temporary magical clone did not manage to escape too and died aggrievedly.

This was the reality of such a chaotic war!

Even if one could defeat three and was mightily fierce, he would still die a tragic death under such crossfires!

The moment Elder Black Water's corpse landed on the ground, it immediately disappeared. It was as though this piece of land had become alive and was consciously devouring the soul, blood and flesh on top of itself.

"Splash!"

The Black Water Array disappeared at once. A few Black Water Xuan Snakes appeared and were killed at once too.

"Thanks for the help, leader!"

The trapped True Elemental spiritual knight walked forward with large steps and thanked Shadow Dragon Guard.

"We are all working for the Imperial Court, you're welcome!"

Shadow Dragon Guard's figure disappeared at once as he faded into the shadows. Even his spiritual aura was gone without a trace.

"Are you two okay? These Clear Spirit Jade Pills have a magical effect on healing wounds, you all can use it..."

The True Elemental spiritual knight took out two bottles and poured the medication on their wounds, "Bear the pain!"

"No problem, to be able to kill a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master, it's all worth it even if we die!"

The two True Divines chuckled.

Elder Black Water could cast his array with just a thought. The torrential black waters were overwhelming and could submerge everything and anything. Furthermore, it was extremely noxious and caustic.

There were no other ways of going against such black waters other than resisting it with their True Divine bodies.

"Abominable, die!"

Before the three of them could fully recover, a lightning bolt struck from mid-air. Elder Extreme Darkness appeared with a cold look on her face, "How dare you all kill an elder of my Realm Alliance! Tell me, how do you all want to die!?"

"She is Extreme Darkness from Realm Alliance, be careful of her eyes... she..."

As the True Elemental spiritual knight exclaimed, he immediately felt an appalling and biting sense of chilliness enter his body. It immediately made him shiver in cold and a layer of frost covered his face at once.

"You killed General Han Nuo and the Grand Secretary of Wind?"

The two True Divines looked at the two heads Extreme Darkness was carrying and their expressions changed at once, "We must avenge them!"

"I've killed countless of people before! You want to look for me for revenge? I'm afraid you all have to wait until aeons later!"

Extreme Darkness suddenly smirked and added, "But now, I don't mind fulfilling your wishes! Extreme Darkness Chilly Territory!"

"Swoosh!"

The power of a prosperous land expanded and formed a spiritual territory. The skies changed at once and the moon rose from the mountains. An astonishing sense of chilliness came along as the moon rose and even froze the void around it, forcing a shadow to appear.

"All of you... have to die!"

Extreme Darkness said calmly. A tinge of bloodiness appeared in her eyes too.

"Be careful, this woman is at the 9th Tier of Illusionary Divine stage! She's only below the Sage in Realm Alliance!"

As Shadow Dragon Guard hollered, the four powerful beings immediately gathered together and stared at Extreme Darkness.

"Haha... Old fogey Red Dragon, you finally died in my hands!"

On the other side, the sky was covered in red clouds. Elder Smelter rode on the fiery dragon and emerged from the clouds with a head on his hand. The moment he saw the four powerful beings trapped by Extreme Darkness, his eyes lit up, "Elder Extreme Darkness, I'll come and help you!"

"Scram!"

Extreme Darkness' spiritual will could be felt. Her intention to kill was so strong that even Elder Smelter was shocked. He knew

that if he were to take advantage of the situation, she would have dared to deal with him too! Because she was a lunatic!

"Till now, Extreme Darkness' character has not changed at all..."

Elder Smelter sighed, "I can't believe Black Water actually died? It's all caused by being too high profile... Hehe, I wonder how's my young friend doing?"

As Elder Smelter looked down and took a few glances, he quickly noticed Fang Yuan who was at the edge of the battlefield. He then appeared shocked, "He's at such a stage?"

...

On the edge of the battlefield.

A primaeval giant was fighting against two giants with tiger and crane tattoos respectively. This primaeval giant was at a huge advantage and pushed its opponents to their limits.

"Impossible..."

The Tiger and Crane Divines looked baffled as they could not believe how they were being defeated by a new True Divine!

"There's nothing impossible in this world! Old fogeys, the time is up for both of you!"

Fang Yuan guffawed. At the same time, he was constantly paying attention to the entire battlefield.

Currently, numerous True Divine martial artists, True Elemental spiritual knights and even 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters had already died. The moment their corpses landed on the ground, they were quietly devoured by the breath of the earth. It was a rather shocking sight to behold.

'They are even using the powerful beings as blood sacrifices!'

Fang Yuan felt a chill inside his heart, 'Most importantly... even Da Qian side is allowing it to happen and not stopping it. It means they must be confident everything will be still under their control,

or they had already grasped the counter to the 6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array! Is the 9 Heavenly Sky Net Array ready?'

This 9 Heavenly Sky Net Array was built from the heavenly will as its foundation. The one Fang Yuan cast in Planet Earth Realm was just an incomplete version of it which only had one array eye.

However, Da Qian Imperial Court had been preparing for half a year! Its ambitions would be imaginable!

'The complete version of this sky net array can quietly envelop the heavens and earth. Even if it's activated, we will have no clue that it's activated already...'

Suddenly, the mists surrounding the battle inside the void in mid-air dispersed. Indeed, the five Prominent Divine dream masters had already forced the three other sages into a corner and victory was imminent.

"Now!"

Fang Yuan quickly seized this opportunity as the Tiger and Crane Divines was realising what was happening in the battle between the sages. At this time, their thoughts were not focused and Fang Yuan suddenly made his move.

"Chaos Divine Fist! Kill!"

Fang Yuan roared and both his fists struck out with insurmountable force, as though it was creating the world and splitting apart the heavens and earth.

This was a creative move Fang Yuan obtained from the 7 Constellations Sword Array. Although it could not really break the world and reconfigure earth, fire, wind and water, it still bore some meaning related to the mythology of Pangu creating the universe.

"Oh no!"

Facing such deadly fists, the Tiger and Crane Divines finally

realised the lethal mistake they committed.

Even though they tried their best to overestimate Fang Yuan's power, they could not imagine he was hiding his martial arts skills up till just now!

"Bang!"

The giant of Pangu Eagle Body roared and struck a punch too.

This earth-shattering punch landed on the body of the tiger giant and immediately caused it to disintegrate and turn into sparks of light scattering.

"Blergh!"

Lefty Tiger Ambassador's expression changed at once as he retched up a stream of blood.

"Big brother!"

After Righty Crane Ambassador saw how severely injured his brother was, he stopped for a moment and looked backwards.

And just at that instant, he no longer had the chance to escape.

"You, stop too!"

Fang Yuan opened up his arms and the Pangu giant behind him made the same action and surrounded the crane giant before giving it a tight hug!

"Bang!"

The martial artist Divine Body exploded. The minds of two True Divines connected with each other as they fell to the ground with severe injuries and their lives hanging on a thread.

Fang Yuan took a few steps forward. Suddenly, he frowned and immediately struck three punches to the left, "Who dares to ambush me?"

Light rays distorted and a midget looking old man emerged. His body was still retreating backwards rapidly, "Oh my god! How



come the youngsters nowadays are more and more per-ver-ted!"

"Old fogey, how dare you!?"

Fang Yuan bellowed in anger, "Just a mere True Divine that learnt some assassination tactics and you think you are Shadow Dragon Guard? Chaos Divine Fist! Die!"

Fang Yuan's angry roar condensed and forcefully penetrated into this old man's sea of consciousness.

Although Fang Yuan was not as powerful as Superior Wu Zun who could turn his will into a physical object, his murderous aura and mind power were still the strongest amongst these powerful beings.

Whereas, this old man was a once famous True Divine who was well versed in assassination tactics. Although he was mighty looking, he was not good at face-to-face fights. With just a move from Fang Yuan, he was already as good as crippled.

After he regained his sense, he suddenly saw the fist coming for him in front of him.

This was an earth-shattering fist!

"Bang!"

The old man tried to block the fist with his arms and he flew backwards. Nevertheless, he could not escape from the punch. Immediately, a mist of blood covered the skies.

With just a fist, this nameless True Divine died in an instant!

"Chi! Chi!"

Blood landed on the ground and immediately disappeared in the blink of an eye. It was as though it was met with a greedy big mouth which quickly devoured it.

Seeing such, Fang Yuan's face turned slightly gloomy. He then arrived in front of the Tiger and Crane Divines.

"No... don't kill me..."

The more powerful a person was, the more afraid he was of death.

As True Divines, the two of them were already at the peak of the world. Faced with death, they trembled with fear.

"Tell me... what is the Imperial Court's trump card?"

Fang Yuan's voice was low as he asked, "Why are you all so loyal and fearless?"

"Trump card? We don't know!"

Righty Crane Ambassador had a puzzled look on his face as he answered.

"He really doesn't know. He still subconsciously thinks he is the Imperial Court's man and wants to fight against us dream masters!"

Seeing such, Fang Yuan felt cold in his heart.

As a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master, Fang Yuan naturally had the ability to differentiate things. After he sensed for a while, he came to a conclusion, "Something's not right! Really not right!"

"You all still have a chance to survive now! If the two of you defect to the Realm Alliance and become my slaves, I will spare your lives!"

Fang Yuan thought for a while and laid down his conditions.

"Dream on!"

"We will never work with dream masters!"

The Tiger and Crane Divines became enraged.

"Bang! Bang!"

Fang Yuan struck out both his fists, one for each True Divine, and their heads exploded at once. As Fang Yuan watched their

corpses disappear into the earth, he remained silent.

The two of them refused to surrender, thus, they could only be killed. If Fang Yuan waited any longer, the opposition support would have arrived.

Such unyielding resolute was unbelievable!

'Could it be... mind control? However, this requires the person to be wholeheartedly willing, like how I planted the Eternal Love Tribulations Imprint on Liu Mengmei... It also requires fate and coincidences and cannot be replicated... Impossible!'

Fang Yuan thought through rather bewilderedly.

"Kababoom!"

Suddenly, high in the skies, the void battlefield shattered.

Three meteors landed on top of Jade Capital city walls before revealing the figure of the Head of Hidden Dragon Guards and others.

Five streams of lights then landed orderly. They appeared unfazed and overbearing.

Seeing such, it was evident that the three sages of the Imperial Court were at a disadvantaged position in the battle.

"Whizz!"

After the sages battled it out, it was as though a signal was sent out and the powerful beings on both sides that were still fighting with each other immediately retreated. Once again, it was now a situation whereby both sides were awaiting confrontation.

# Chapter 480: The Appearance

---

"Does the three of you really intend to continue this?"

The 5 pressurizing spiritual wills smashed across the crippled city walls like a huge tsunami wave. The pressure started to grow and finally, it became unbearable.

"We will remain loyal forever!"

Superior Wu Zun started to laugh to himself. Even though they were on the losing end, together with Qian Huanyi and the Head of Hidden Dragon Guards, there were no visible injuries on them.

"Since that is so, it is only fate that the three of you will be reduced to ashes today!"

The Sage from the Evil Divine Sect heaved a huge sigh and swept the surroundings with his spiritual will. "We have enough blood sacrifice now. How about activating the array?"

"Since the Imperial Court is brazenly resisting our attacks, they must have something planned out!"

The Sage from the Divine Lotus Cult was the only female there. Unknowingly, she began to examine the Sage from the Evil Divine Sect.

"If that is so, then what should we do?"

The Sage from the Evil Divine Sect felt a little affected. Ever since the episode at the Changli Hollows, he constantly felt as though this lady was picking on him or testing him. Perhaps, she was suspecting that he might have hidden a secret inheritance from the hollows.

He was unfortunate! Until now, there were only 5 portions of Sage Changli's inheritance and none of it was in his possession!

"From my observations, I believe that the Imperial Court is not totally against us opening the passage to the Demonic Heart Realm.

They must have something in place already, for instance, the heavenly array described in Sage Changli's inheritance..."

The Ancient One joined the conversation. "It's a pity that we do not have the complete inheritance. Otherwise, we will be able to perfect Sage Changli's 6 and 9 Arrays!"

"Although we might not be able to perfect it, it is still almost impossible for them to stop us."

Li Qingmian continued. "Let's not bother about the Imperial Court. As soon as we open the doors, we shall leave everything to fate. By then, do you think the Imperial Court will be able to go against us? What do you think, Sage Baize?"

"Alright!"

Sage Baize who remained silent all the while finally spoke as he nodded his head.

"Alright!"

"Alright!"

In an instant, 4 Sages had come to a consensus. Lord Yin of the Divine Lotus Cult sighed and remained silent.

...

"It's beginning!"

Fang Yuan shuddered and his hair stood on its ends.

In the sky, dark clouds started to gather and purple streaks of lightning flashed across the sky.

This was a sign that the will of the realm was awakening; it was ready to strike anytime.

"The heavens are enraged! The three Sages of Da Qian, if any of you are looking to go all out to prevent the arrival of the Demonic Heart Realm, this is your chance!"

Under the rage of the heavens, even a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine

dream master could only step aside. Everyone made way for the 8 Sages.

"Rumble! Rumble!"

The skies turned a dark violet. The streaks of lightning blended in with the clouds before unleashing a heavenly bolt of lightning with the power to split the earth!

This was true power with the potential to destroy worlds!

Before such a destructive power, the secret technique of the 8 Gates Sword Array was nothing.

"The heavenly will of Da Qian is... too strong!"

Fang Yuan's pupils contracted as he remained dazed.

Such a powerful will of the realm was born from the collective lifeforms living in the realm, akin to being programmed in a specific way like an artificial intelligence and there was nothing one could do about it.

For instance, the will of Planet Earth Realm could not even activate its own tribulations to deal with the high-tiered cultivators when they turned rebellious against the realm.

However, it seemed as though the will of Da Qian had already broken through these limitations and was much more adaptable than what it was expected to be.

"Kacha!"

As soon as the will of the realm struck, a devastating violet streak of lightning with a green hue struck towards the 5 dream masters of the allied forces.

"It's too early for the realm to fight back!"

The Ancient One started to predict and frowned at the same time. "Lord Yin, Baize, Evil Divine... Continue the activation of the array. Demon Killing Divine Pen and I should be enough to deal with this!"

"Rumble!"

As soon as he finished his sentence, the two clouds above the sages started to grow, covering the entire sky, including the violet streak of lightning.

"Kacha!"

5 streaks of lightning landed on the protective clouds, forcing them to dissipate. With a loud exclamation, the 2 Sages continued to transfer colourful energy to restore the clouds. In that instant, they had momentarily held off the attack, dispersing the bolts of lightning in the process.

"Hehe... the both of them are indeed powerful sages to be able to hold off such a powerful strike without getting injured!"

Fang Yuan continuously retreated as he stared at Lord Yin and the 2 other Sages.

Beneath the clouds they were sitting on, the roar of dragons emerged from the earth meridians. There was a fearful force coming from the roars.

"6 Extremes Earth Shattering, rise!"

With that shout, a mysterious glow of light flew out from the hands of the 3 Sages, fusing together above the Jade Capital.

"Roar! Roar!"

The earth dragons flipped around and an earthquake of 10 on the Richter Scale rumbled. The nodes of the realm shook violently and took up the form of 6 giant earthly dragons. The dragons roared before rushing out from the surface of the earth, gathering above the Jade Capital.

"Kacha!"

"Rumble!"

Streaks of lightning zipped around the sky and blood rain started to pour.

The heavens were enraged enough for blood to pour from the skies!

Even more lightning erupted from the skies and heavenly violet lightning struck down. Even the protective clouds could not recover in time and was being forced away.

Fang Yuan shuddered at the sight of such exasperation from the will of the realm. He knew that other than Sages, if anyone were to be caught in such a situation, they would undoubtedly be killed.

"Roar! Roar!"

The 6 dragons stretched over 20 miles. After diving into the ground, they all gained the vibes of a true dragon. All 6 of them swiped their claws in mid-air as though they had caught something.

A mysterious and huge force seemed to have been pulled out from the Jade Capital. The force had a purple hue as it gathered above the capital.

"This is... the natural source of the realm!"

Fang Yuan's expression changed.

The 6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array was completed!

"They are indeed powerful sages! 3 of them are activating the array while 2 others are resisting the heavenly tribulations. In fact, they were still able to watch over the actions of the Imperial Court while doing all these..."

As the only person on the battlefield who had experience manipulating the 6 and 9 Arrays, Fang Yuan was still overwhelmed with emotions after witnessing all these.

The vibes given off by these Sages and their method of operation was much more perfect than what Fang Yuan had once done. Needless to say, this complete version of the array was much more powerful than his incomplete version by many folds.



"Why are the 3 sages of the Imperial Court not fighting back?"

There were lightning streaks from the skies and the dragons from the ground, but Fang Yuan shifted his attention to the 3 sages on the city walls.

Ever since the 5 sages had activated the array, the 3 of them had since stood on the city walls like figurines, frozen on the spot.

"Is it because they are already aware that the allied forces have something like this, or could it be that they are all heavily injured from the previous fight?"

Thoughts ran through Fang Yuan's mind. Suddenly, he noticed the 6 dragons chasing the mysterious light above the Jade Capital. As the light sunk underground, the dragons smashed themselves into the ground as well.

"Rumble!"

The space around the dragons shattered and was undergoing a form of destruction!

With the energy from the natural source of the realm, the violet streaks of lightning were being pushed away. The mysterious glow was directing itself towards an empty space of higher dimension and suddenly, it broke through space.

"Whoosh!"

Air currents started to form around the space and as a black hole opened, a silvery-white door was revealed!

A mysterious spiritual aura started to disperse and all dream masters on scene could feel that the dream elemental force within them was tingling with excitement. Everyone was full of anticipation.

The source of dream masters, the Demonic Heart Realm! It was finally here!

"This is the second stage, the opening of the energy passage.

Physical bodies cannot pass through it yet..."

Fang Yuan was extremely familiar with this. However, all the dream masters around him, including the elders, were all filled with emotions.

"This is the true Dream Master's Realm!"

"I can feel the dream elemental force calling out for me!"

"This is the right feeling!"

...

Many 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters were overcome with their own emotions and could no longer care about the fight among the sages. Without hesitation, they leapt towards the black hole and in that instant, they had already forgotten all the hatred they had for each other, as well as the mission at hand. They were purely looking for their dao.

Even Elder Smelter and Elder Extreme Darkness wavered under such an influence.

However, Fang Yuan had already experienced this before and had more resistance to such an influence. Therefore, he was able to remain composed.

To others, their lifelong pursuit was presented before them. Therefore, they could neglect all risks. This was akin to religious people encountering their Gods, and they would do anything to go for it.

...

"This is indeed... the Dream Master's Realm!"

On the walls of the Jade Capital, Head of Hidden Dragon Guards was watching all these and his eyes twitched. "After years of planning and preparation, it is finally completed today and our wishes will come through."

"That's right!"

Superior Wu Zun and Qian Huanyi laughed to themselves and had the same expression.

"This is not enough... It is only an energy passage. We want the Dream Master's Realm to completely descend into our realm for both realms to be completely connected!"

As soon as the 6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array started to absorb energy from the natural source of the realm, the intensity of the heavenly tribulations would start to reduce.

The 5 sages bellowed together as they attempted to create the eternal gateway between the realms.

As soon as they succeed, the two realms would be completely connected and physical objects would be able to pass through.

Previously, on Planet Earth Realm, Fang Yuan had secretly altered the arrays and the natural source of the realm was not enough. Therefore, only an energy passage could be created.

However, things were different for the realm of Da Qian!

This was a realm capable of the existence of sages!

The sacrifice of its natural source would surely be able to attract the Demonic Heart Realm!

"It's about to begin!"

Head of Hidden Dragon Guards gazed at the gathering dragons and calmly commented.

"I have waited for this day for too long!"

Behind him, a skinny and tall daoist appeared. It was Shang Hou!

However, now, he was as skinny as a wooden plank and his face was filled with wrinkles. He no longer had any teeth and his eye sockets were deep. He resembled a walking skeleton.

"Although the 9 Heavenly Sky Net Array is completed, we still need a blood sacrifice!"

He gazed into the skies and shook his head.

"We have prepared the sacrifice!"

Superior Wu Zun disappeared for a moment before reappearing. There was a person in his hands and the person was shivering in a dragon robe. It was the emperor of Da Qian, Emperor Zhao Ming!

"It is sufficient to sacrifice him! Great!"

Shang Hou nodded his head.

"No..."

Fear was written all over Emperor Zhao Ming's face. "Great Ancestor... my 3 sages, ever since I have taken up the role as emperor, I have only contributed to Da Qian for my entire life..."

"Hehe... My grandson, if we do not sacrifice you just because you have made contributions to the empire, wouldn't the world be in chaos?"

Shang Hou giggled. "As the emperor, you have indeed done a good job. To make the heavens respond, who else would be a better person to sacrifice than you? Your death will be meaningful."

Emperor Zhao Ming wanted to rebut but in the next moment, Superior Wu Zun had struck a palm out.

In that instant, he had turned into a blood-red essence which shot up into the sky!

"Rumble!"

In the next instant, an unimaginable huge array had appeared!

# Chapter 481: Steel Seal

---

"Eh?"

Fang Yuan's eyes glistened as he saw a blood-coloured true dragon leap out from within Jade Capital City and charge towards the skies. It then opened up some sort of gigantic and invisible array.

"9 Heavenly Sky Net Array?"

As Fang Yuan thought, his heart was pounding, "Wow... I previously thought the dream master alliance's act of blood sacrificing numerous powerful beings to activate the 6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array was rare and costly enough, but now, Da Qian Imperial Court is even sacrificing the emperor... This blood-coloured true dragon is no doubt Emperor Zhao Ming!"

Emperor Zhao Ming had ruled for 10 over years. He was adroit and had a strong foundation. He was even the true dragon recognised by the heaven and earth.

Now that he was used as the key to activate the heavenly array, they were definitely after something big!

However, what Fang Yuan was curious about now was not about the backlash Da Qian would face. Instead, he was curious about who was the one who made the decision; who could possibly make the emperor Da Qian become a sacrificial offering?

...

"Kababoom!"

Sudden changes were occurring in the skies!

After the 9 Heavenly Sky Net Array was activated, not only did the heavenly violet lightning stop, even the dark clouds dispersed slowly to reveal a sky full of stars.

Although the dream masters were no longer the threat of

heavenly tribulations, all of them felt extremely uneasy as they had a premonition that disaster was impending.

"The emperor is sacrificed? The emperor has dragon energy, there might be changes!"

The 5 Sages also immediately noticed the situation.

"It is indeed the 9 Heavenly Sky Net Array! Why would Sage Changli leave behind this two mutually conflicting arrays in his inheritance?"

"The one who's giving the orders in Imperial Court is Shang Hou?"

The Ancient One noticed something else instead, "Shang Hou is a distant relative of the royal family, he only entered the echelon of powerful beings through sheer luck and was ordered to manage all the dragon energy in this world. How could he have such prestige and might?"

"Hehe..."

Lord Yin laughed coldly, "I think this Shang Hou is really familiar looking, he is similar to an acquaintance I know!"

"Indeed, he is really similar to an old acquaintance!"

Evil Divine nodded his head and spat out the words one by one, "Great Ancestor of Da Qian! I can't believe you aren't dead!"

This powerful being who established the Da Qian dynasty was naturally a hero and an Energy Soul. Unfortunately for him, he did not reign for long.

From the conversation between these few sages, there seemed to be some hidden information withheld about the past events.

"During that time, three of us joined hands and killed the Great Ancestor of Da Qian. By right, his body and soul should have been totally annihilated... For that, we suffered from backlash and could not topple Da Qian in time and thus, we quickly secluded

ourselves..."

Li Qingmian recounted rather hesitantly.

"Looks like a tinge of this person's spiritual will was not destroyed. It then absconded and reincarnated before entering the royal family again?"

"What a scourge indeed!"

Numerous spiritual wills had confirmed this Shang Hou's identity already. The old guy Shang Hou did not bother to hide it anymore as he carefreely floated out, "My old friends, long time no see! I'm so happy I can finally seek vengeance!"

"Sure enough, it's you, Great Ancestor of Da Qian!"

It was the first time Evil Divine lost the calm and indifferent look on his face, "This reincarnation technique of yours is really not bad! Even your mind and spiritual aura have changed! You are a totally different person now, no wonder we couldn't deduce it!"

"It's all smoke and mirrors!"

The Great Ancestor of Da Qian chortled, "What's the point of delving in this?"

"Heh... don't make it sound so nice, you think we don't know your ins and outs?"

Lord Yin's spiritual will suddenly spread across as it intended to divulge some secrets to the powerful beings at the Imperial Court's side, "This Great Ancestor of Da Qian of yours was originally a Prominent Divine dream master too. He is well-versed in enslavement techniques and the 'Spiritual Will Steel Seal' he created can enslave anybody to become his loyal slave!"

The moment Lord Yin divulged it, only a few lower-tiered cultivators appeared shocked. The rest of the powerful beings appeared expressionless as they looked at Lord Yin.

"Impossible!"

Lord Yin's face turned ashen, "They are all..... Steel Seal Puppets!?"

The other 4 sages were horrified too.

It was reasonable that the Imperial Court gained the liking of the commoners and managed to garner True Divines and True Elementals to their side.

However, it now seemed like these powerful beings were all long controlled by the Spiritual Will Steel Seal! This included all the grand secretaries, generals and priests!

"Spiritual Will Steel Seal?"

Fang Yuan pondered quickly. He then suddenly remembered a recording he saw on a secret text he purchased, "This seems to be briefly mentioned on a secret text I read before. This Spiritual Will Steel Seal Technique can segment spiritual will and turn one spiritual will into nine, forming nine child seals. The holder of the parent seal can do anything to those inflicted by the child seal. It is the most supreme controlling technique... However, not only is this technique extremely hard to cultivate, it has a limit too. It can only segment nine times and the victim has to be willing. At its peak, It controlled nine powerful beings and led to some blood brawls."

"But now..."

Fang Yuan looked at the powerful beings at Jade Capital City and felt his head went numb.

"Haha... I must thank you all for it!"

Shang Hou moved back a few steps. Numerous powerful beings defended him closely and fully surrounded him.

"If the three of you did not chase after me and almost annihilated me, how could I have made a breakthrough while I was between life and death and improved and turned my 9 Times Steel Will into 9 Times 9, 81 Times?"



"Superior Wu Zun, Qian Guiyi, Head of Hidden Dragon Guards... does the three of you still want to hold a candle for the devil?"

The Ancient One sneered and was immediately faced with three pairs of eyes filled with enmity and hatred. It was as though The Ancient One fell into an icy pit as he exclaimed, "Impossible!"

"Even the sages... are..."

Lord Yin's voice sounded dry as she suddenly realised something wrong had happened to this world.

"The three of us willingly submit to His Majesty, The Great Ancestor!"

The Head of Hidden Dragon Guards slowly spoke, "His Majesty, The Great Ancestor, is a brilliant hero, he is the only one who can bring back peace to the entire world! We are loyal to him and that is a matter of course, how can you treacherous rebels understand you?"

"Impossible!"

Seeing such, Fang Yuan shook his head, "If this Shang Hou could really enslave sages, what's there to fight? Da Qian Imperial Court would have long united and ruled everything."

"In the past, you created this spiritual will technique and quickly rose up during the turbulent times and established Da Qian. You are the true Fate Soul and we are not..."

Lord Yin spoke slowly to Shang Hou, "But, your greed knows no bound! You even unscrupulously enslaved other dream masters! After news of your deeds spread, we then chased after your life! If you wanted to seek vengeance, you would have long done it! Thus, there must still be some limitations now!"

"To enslave a sage, the sage has to fully cooperate and the consumption is too much, right?"

After all, the five of them were sages. After they momentarily lost

their composure, they quickly regained it and started deducing.

"Hehe... since all of you are my old friends, I shall tell the truth. To control a sage, not only does the sage have to fully cooperate, one sage would already consume ten portions of my spiritual will. Also, it's a great burden on me..."

Shang Hou's eyes glistened, "After enslaving so many people, my soul is barely supporting it. Do you all want to try?"

Instantly, all the dream masters of the allied forces unconsciously kept a distance from each other. Even the sages began to suspect one another.

This Spiritual Will Steel Seal was the most deadly and powerful enslavement technique. Even though it only had 81 portions, it was already extremely terrifying and threatening.

After all, Imperial Court's side did not use up all its shares even with their three sages included. It was extremely possible that there were puppets under their control inside the 5 Grand Organisations!

"Originally, when you all wanted to topple Da Qian, I was still quite opposing of it."

Suddenly, Sage Baize slowly spoke, "But looks like you must die now or else there would be no peaceful day in this entire world forever!"

"Holy! How can such a horrifying technique exist in this world?"

Fang Yuan tensed up and looked at Elder Xi Chen who was at his side. He then immediately asked, "If such a divine technique spreads, wouldn't there be no peace in this world forever?"

"I'm not sure regarding its details..."

Even though the energy passage to the Dream Masters' Realm had opened up, such an unforeseen event attracted the full attention of the dream masters.

Elder Xi Chen sent back a message with a solemn look on his face, "I've only heard about it from my master. This Great Ancestor of Da Qian's talent is extremely unusual. After he reached the Prominent Divine stage, he even opened his own path. That's why he can cultivate this Spiritual Will Steel Seal. The cost of it is that, he has the weakest fighting power amongst sages and he has no hollows! From my deductions, he gambled everything that was gifted to him from the Dream Masters' Realm and also his ability to create living things on his Spiritual Will Steel Seal Technique."

"Even if that's the case, it is still extremely horrifying."

Fang Yuan looked towards the Head of Hidden Dragon Guards and immediately felt his skin crawl.

Even if one was afflicted by this Spiritual Will Steel Seal, his actions and even personality and thinking would still be the same as before. The only thing added was the thought of full-fledged loyalty to its owner. This itself was enough to make anyone shiver in fear.

After losing one's most precious freedom of soul, even if he looked like a human, in actual fact, he was only a puppet.

"Great!"

Shang Hou suddenly laughed from within the layers of defence, "Now that the opening of the Dream Masters' Realm is impending, do you all want to settle me first or connect the two worlds and obtain the gifts from that realm first?"

"Roar! Roar!"

Fang Yuan raised his head and looked to the skies.

He could see a translucent sky which was covering almost the entire world. A blood dragon was also soaring in it.

Shang Hou intentionally revealed his identity in order to drag time to allow the entire 9 Heavenly Sky Net Array to be fully activated!

"Now, you all shall receive my gift!"

Shang Hou chuckled oddly.

Suddenly, a fearful thought could be felt which made Fang Yuan immediately move back.

"Smelter! Extreme Darkness! What are you all doing?"

Within the dream masters' base, seven to eight powerful beings were emitting a red glow. Their faces changed drastically as they began to viciously attack their companions.

This included Elder Smelter and Elder Extreme Darkness!

"Head of Hidden Dragon Guards!"

As Fang Yuan was far away from them, he was not affected by it much. However, his expression appeared extremely unsettled.

"After being enslaved and controlled, unless the controller is killed, the seal cannot be removed!"

In mid-air, the 5 Sages looked at each other and suddenly turned into five light walls. They then trapped the eight powerful beings who renegaded like an ice mountain.

"Hehe, there's no use! Don't you all want to fully connect with the Dream Masters' Realm? I shall help you all!"

"Roar!"

The blood dragon fell from the void and opened up a strong connection with these eight powerful beings.

Furthermore, six earth dragons emerged and chased after the true dragon energy. They then changed directions and arrived on top of the allied forces' base before suddenly crashing on to it.

"The true dragon as the lead, the blood sacrifices as support! The two worlds converge and the door to the realm is everlasting!"

Under the curses, the blood dragoon and the six earth dragons suddenly merged into one and crashed onto the ground, setting off

tons of smoke and dust.

"Rumble!!!"

# Chapter 482: Demonic Shadow

---

How big would a force need to be to be able to break through dimensions in order to allow two realms to collide?

Even at the sidelines where Fang Yuan had already started to distance himself from the epicentre, he felt like a small boat riding a tsunami. Many others around him were already severely injured by the violet storm happening in the space around them as they spat out mouthfuls of blood.

"Ruthless!"

He quickly retreated away as thoughts flooded his mind. "The sacrifice of 8 powerful beings and using a true dragon as a bait will bring the power of the 6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array to the side of the allied forces..."

This diversion technique was indeed well thought out.

After making his way out of the path of destruction, Fang Yuan finally turned around and could only see a hue of violet on the ground behind.

The 30,000 strong army, together with Shi Longtu had already ceased to exist.

A hundred-mile radius from where everything happened, the ground was being pulled apart by a mysterious force.

It would be expected for normal human beings to die under such circumstances. However, many elementary dream masters or even some powerful beings were not able to escape as well. Under such an all-round attack, they could only accept their fate and simply die as though they were grass being cut.

In order to achieve their objective, the remnants of vibration were enough to wipe out half of the Jade Capital.

The mere activation of the array had resulted in the destruction

of 10,000 soldiers, 1,000,000 civilians and even a 10 powerful dream masters of the Realm Alliance! All the low-tiered dream masters were long dead!

This was too much of a price to pay!

In the history of the war between the Imperial Court and the allied forces, none of the conflicts even came close to an outcome like that, with such an unbelievably high casualty rate.

"The power of the 6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array comes from the collision of the 2 realms. If Sages were to receive the blow directly, they would also be severely injured... If any powerful being were to remain in the epicentre of the collision, they will have no chance of survival..."

Fang Yuan flew up into the sky and looked down upon the Jade Capital.

Everywhere was a brilliant violet hue and the ground started to turn dark red. The rocks were slowly being melted into magma and were flowing about.

The 6 earth dragons coiled up on the ground, revealing an array which resembled the skeleton of a dragon.

Coming together with the black hole in mid-air, a huge Bone Door appeared!

This was the true gate between the realms, created from true bones and formed from the blood and flesh of the sacrificed powerful beings! Linking Da Qian with the Dream Realm, it had unbelievable power!

"Buzz! Buzz!"

A white light flashed by and the 5 sages appeared. The space before them opened up, revealing a few lucky survivors.

During the collision, due to the fact that the 5 Sages had the control over the 6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array, they were able

to ensure their own survival as well as protect a few of their beloved disciples.

However, that was all they could do.

Compared to before, what was left of the originally strong dream masters allied forces were but a few lone survivals.

"Haha! How's that?"

Shang Hou stood behind the Head of Hidden Dragon Guards and the 2 other powerful beings as he laughed heartily. "Don't you want to open up the passage to the Dream Master's Realm? I have helped you with that and there's no need to thank me!"

The sages and powerful beings no longer paid any attention to his sarcastic remarks.

With a creak, a slit appeared on the Bone Door.

The Dream Master's Realm which they had always been after was finally here!

"You have finally descended, Dream Master's Realm!"

Evil Divine gazed at the Bone Door. His eyes were filled with a burning fire of passion. On the other hand, Lord Yin appeared uneasy.

"Shang Hou is crazy and unpredictable. Now that he has helped us complete our array, I'm afraid..."

Just as Sage Baize completed his sentence, the Bone Door opened all of a sudden and a bright glow started to spill out of the door.

"Rumble!"

Silvery dream elemental force overflowed into Da Qian. This was a rite of passage for all realms who had opened the passage to the Demonic Heart Realm.

This gate was not just an energy passage, but a door capable of allowing physical objects to transcend dimensions!



"Ah!"

In that instant, a few 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters shrieked.

The dream elemental force from a higher dimension forcefully flowed into their bodies, forcing out the original dream elemental force in them.

Although they would be able to achieve a peak in cultivation after accepting the pure dream elemental force, they were now in extreme pain as though they were being haunted by something in their minds.

Fortunately, those who survived the war moments ago were the true highly skilled ones. If any low-tiered dream masters were here, they might go crazy or even get possessed by the Demonic Heart Realm after being overwhelmed by the pure dream elemental force.

"Kill!"

Taking this opportunity, the highly skilled people of the Imperial Court shouted as they advanced.

These were all True Divines and True Elementals, natives of Da Qian. Therefore, they were unaffected by the overflowing dream elemental force. Up against the 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters who were still being overwhelmed by the dream elemental force, it was a much simpler task to take them out. Another round of killing ensued.

"Is this true pure dream elemental force?"

The 5 Sages took in deep breaths and forced their spiritual auras to adapt. In an instant, the entire process was completed for them. Within moments, they were up against 4 other sages.

At this point in time, Shang Hou was also greedily absorbing the dream elemental force as he forcefully attempted to reduce his age. Within moments, he became a middle-aged man full of energy.

"Since the Demonic Heart Realm is now open, all of you are criminals of the realm! Killing all of you will only be just!"

"This is not right!"

Sage Baize gazed towards Head of Hidden Dragon Guards and Shang Hou with a hint of fear in his eyes. "You are already aware of all these!"

At this point in time, all dream masters from Da Qian had to undergo a process of change in their bodies to adapt to the pure dream elemental force and this applied to sages as well. The hollows of the 5 Sages started to appear unstable.

However, on the other side, Shang Hou appeared adapted and something was not right.

"Great Ancestor of Da Qian has always been a mystery to us. Even after our in-depth investigations, we are still not able to find out everything about him..."

Lord Yin interrupted. "Looking at how things are now, you seem to originate from this Dream Master's Realm, the Demonic Heart Realm!"

"Keke... Although the Divine Lotus Cult is filled with a bunch of stupid ladies, I'm surprised that you are a smart lady, Lord Yin!"

Gazing at the Bone Door, Shang Hou revealed a perplexed expression.

It seemed as though he was reminiscing, hating and even fearing what was behind the door.

"That's right. Since all of you can traverse to different worlds, why can't I do the same?"

Shang Hou admitted to his identity as a foreigner. "However, the Demonic Heart Realm is not a kind-loving realm as you would expect. Only a bunch of fools like you guys will go all out after it... Hehe, if you continue to allow this Bone Door to open, I'm afraid

the entire Da Qian will soon become a living hell."

With the wave of his hands, the 4 sages started to attack from all directions.

The 5 Sages from the allied forces bellowed as they revealed each of their hollows to create resistance.

However, at this point in time, the crystal walls of the hollows started to crumble. The dim and silvery pure dream elemental force started to seep in and the 5 hollows started to weaken.

"Keke!"

"Haha!"

The Bone Door hollered once more before releasing billions of spiritual bodies into Da Qian.

These spiritual bodies were like locusts. As soon as they entered the realm, they started to screech and fly in all directions.

"This is the You Spirit. It is not a strong spirit but is known as the Demonic Heart in most other realms. This is because it is able to possess other living things, absorb their energy and cause it to mutate... Although it begins as small, it is the source of mutating! Can you see the excitement in them? This is because they finally have a huge realm in which they can start their killing spree."

Shang Hou spoke with a reminiscent tone.

"Since you know that the realm will be turned into a living hell after opening the Bone Door, why are you still doing it?"

12 huge demonic illusionary shadows started to appear around The Ancient One. Every shadow had the cultivation level of a powerful being as they gathered to form an array, protecting him in within. "Are you thinking of returning to the Demonic Heart Realm. After sacrificing an entire world, the Demonic Realm will surely adore you and reward you with whatever you want! All that we have done is actually in your favour!"

"That's right... so what?"

Shang Hou laughed. "I don't want to be the adored by the Demonic Heart Realm!"

"Rumble!"

The Bone Door hollered for the third time.

The space around the door shattered, releasing a fearful spiritual aura.

A huge shadow appeared on the other side of the door as though it was attempting to break through the space to enter Da Qian.

Just its spiritual aura was enough to strike fear in the hearts of all the sages around, as though they were now up against their nemesis. "This... this is..."

"This is my original form. Are you shocked?"

Shang Hou stood before the Bone Door and scanned around, unsatisfied. "You 5 are merely frogs in a well and you still dare to call yourselves sages! Keke... a powerful being with the power to create worlds? Do you think you understand all of these? You are merely a little unique and were lucky enough to ride the waves of power from the Demonic Heart Realm."

"Roar! Roar!"

The huge black silhouette on the other side started to force itself through and even the Bone Door started to crack.

"You are not attempting to return to the Demonic Heart Realm, but escape from there!"

Sage Baize seemed to have understood it. You are now a mere magical clone and are interested in Da Qian. Therefore, you want to completely leave the Demonic Heart Realm, bringing along your true body with you!"

"That's right!"

Shang Hou smiled. "Now that the few of you have given up this world and since I am its only protector, it can only choose me! I'll have to thank the few of you for this!"

The few sages from the allied forces appeared devastated.

All the while, they had wrongly thought that the Imperial Court was in the way of the dream masters, preventing the dream masters from finding the Demonic Heart Realm.

Never would they have thought that they were just looking at things on the surface.

In fact, every single action of theirs was already part of Shang Hou's plan. This time, they had failed miserably!

"The Demonic Heart Realm is not someplace you would want to live in. I never wanted to stay there..."

Looking at his physical body slowly making its way into Da Qian, Shang Hou could not hold back. "... Afterwards, I have created a magical clone which was being brought away by the currents during a war in the Demonic Heart Realm. I had lost all hope but never would I have thought that I would be able to find such a perfect realm... When my physical body arrives, I will destroy the Bone Door and separate the two worlds! After the purification of dream elemental forces and the alterations done by the Demonic Heart Realm, the realm of Da Qian is now extremely suitable for me to live in, and it now has everything the Demonic Heart Realm has to offer. Hehe... this is great!"

"Rumble!"

Everything shook.

Just as the black silhouette was continuously trying to break through the Bone Door, in the Demonic Heart Realm, an invisible force seemed to be pulling the silhouette back. A dark-red streak of lightning struck on the Bone Door, turning it into powder.

"Indeed..."

Witnessing this scene, Shang Hou remained composed. "I need to provide enough sacrifices before they will let me go!"

# Chapter 483: Demon Lord

---

The 5 sages remained silent

Now, everything was clear.

Shang Hou was merely a magical clone of a demonic king in the Demonic Heart Realm and had arrived in Da Qian by accident before maturing here.

Compared to the harsh environment of the Demonic Heart Realm, Da Qian was like heaven.

Therefore, after inspecting the plan of the 5 sages, Shang Hou devised a plan to help himself by bringing his true body over after opening the gate of the realm and in the meantime force the environment of Da Qian to adapt to become his personal playground!

Therefore, his plan was to open the passage for a short while before destroying it!

Compared to the 5 sages who were willing to sacrifice Da Qian, this foreigner chose Da Qian instead! Shang Hou even had the plan to protect Da Qian.

Da Qian was still able to gain the support of the heavens to manipulate the 9 Heavenly Sky Net Array because it had no choice!

The natives of Da Qian had already chosen to betray it. Therefore, it could only rely on a foreigner.

"We have... done wrong!?"

Lord Yin and the other sages gazed towards the demonic shadow in the Demonic Heart Realm as well as the weakened Bone Door with their wavering hearts.

It was true that they would be able to increase their cultivation as soon as the passage to the Demonic Heart Realm was formed. At least, they would be able to purify their dream elemental force.

The quality of their dream elemental force was now increased and they now understood the Demonic Heart Realm. If they were to cultivate in isolation, the sages might be able to achieve yet another breakthrough.

However, all of these was assuming that the passage to the Demonic Heart Realm was to remain open. As soon as the two realms break off, everything to revert back to how it once was before the collision of realms!

Therefore, it was an all-in to sacrifice Da Qian for the Demonic Heart Realm.

Would Shang Hou let them have their way?

If the Demonic Heart Realm was a friendly place, why would this demon try all means to bring its true body to Da Qian?

Even if the sages had decided to enter the Demonic Heart Realm for good, Shang Hou's true body was in the way and recklessly entering the door would only be sacrificing oneself.

Unknowingly, the 5 sages had realised they had arrived at the desperate situation which Shang Hou had plotted for them!

"The will of Da Qian has no other choice!"

Shang Hou laughed as he looked towards the 5 sages. "I need 3 sages as a sacrifice. The remaining 2 shall remain as my loyal servants and will be able to ensure your survival if you allow me to imprint my Spiritual Will Steel Seal on you. The opportunity is here and it is up to the few of you if you want to take it!"

"Don't fall into his trap!"

Sage Baize sounded hoarse. Although the 5 sages did not break up immediately, the clouds above them started to separate and everything was clear.

"The heavens are just while the sages are selfish... Keke!"

Seeing this, Shang Hou let out a weird laugh as he stood before



the Bone Door.

Behind him, his true body started to solidify, revealing a tall demonic shadow - it had purple skin and black tattoos all around. There were two small horns on his head and his eyes were bloodshot. He had fangs like Asura and a ghostly claw covered with a layer of magma on it. The other hand was strangled in chains and fire.

"Rumble!"

At this point in time, dim red streaks of lightning from the Demonic Heart Realm started to strike down, preventing this Asura from leaving its realm.

Although it was a devastating demon, it still found it hard to progress under the might of the Demonic Heart Realm!

"Asura..."

The purple demon roared and started to holler a chant which could not be understood. At the same time, one of its hands, the ghostly claw, managed to go through the Bone Door, entering the realm of Da Qian!

"Demonic Heart Realm..."

Shang Hou appeared serious and started to shout towards the skies. "I shall offer these sacrifices as a price to pay for my departure!"

"This is not good!"

In that instant, the 5 sages felt a sense of danger and felt like their lives could be taken from them anytime.

They finally understood Shang Hou's plan. Shang Hou wanted to use them as a sacrifice in exchange for Asura's entry into Da Qian!

"Sigh... things have escalated to such a stage and the only solution is to sacrifice..."

The Ancient One sighed and gazed towards the attacking Head of

Hidden Dragon Guards, Superior Wu Zun and Qian Huanyi before shaking his head. "Hollow... annihilate!"

"Rumble!"

The space behind him started to vibrate. The hollow which was originally still resisting the pure dream elemental force started to crumble. The mountains, trees, birds, animals and even cultivators in the hollow turned to dust in an instant, through flames, turned into the natural source of the realm.

"The 12 Witches Magical Array! Rise!"

Beside The Ancient One, 12 weird-looking witches appeared with ferocious looks on their faces. They gave off an ancient vibe and roared as they formed the array, summoning an unknown giant which struck an axe out!

"Where... does such power come from? What kind of magical body is this?"

Superior Wu Zun's eyes glistened as he struck his fist out in retaliation. "Superior magical fist!"

"Bang!"

The giant axe shook before falling to the ground. Superior Wu Zun's arm was severed. Where the axe landed, space was torn apart and everything there was destroyed!

"The Ancient One... is indeed decisive!"

The remaining 4 sages sighed.

After their hollows were all being refined by the Demonic Heart Realm, although they were all temporarily weakened, after the ordeal, there were countless benefits.

However, now, they did not have the time. They could only resort to desperate means and retrieve the natural source of their realms to fight! This was the decisive ultimatum of a sage!

Under the threat of death, the remaining Sage Baize, Evil Divine,

Lord Yin and Li Qingmian started to refine their hollows as well, filling their bodies with an unimaginable amount of energy from their natural sources.

"Flowers from the Dream Pen!"

The pen in Li Qingmian's hands shook and a colourful lotus flower started to bloom at its tip. In every flower, there would be another world and in every strand of grass, there would be another heaven. In the next instant, the flower started to wither and energy capable of destroying a world was created. Without hesitation, he directed the energy at Qian Huanyi.

"Heavenly Divine Force!"

"Fine Deity Lady!"

"Baize Magical Beast!"

...

Within moments, the 5 sages had all unleashed their killer moves. The clouds above them started to spread out, separating the heavens from the earth.

On Evil Divine's body, there was a mysterious variant of dream elemental force and Fang Yuan could feel a sense of familiarity. It was the heavenly evil force which Fang Yuan had once experienced.

Under the influence of the heavenly evil force, powerful beings of the Evil Divine Sect appeared. They all had ancient looks and extremely realistic. They were a bizarre variation of puppets.

Beside Lord Yin, thousands of heavenly ladies danced around, intoxicating and seducing anyone looking at it.

Comparatively, Sage Baize only called out the true physical body of a magical beast.

This magical beast had the body of a goat, the claws of a dragon and a horn on its head. It was a legendary auspicious creature - the

Baize.

This was different from the animals created by dream beast masters. This magical beast had true ancient blood and even a breakthrough in its own cultivation.

With an exclamation, its hooved feet crashed into the ground.

The spirits of the entire world were seemingly summoned for this fight and powerful fighting forces formed an army of powerful spirits!

It was once recorded that the Baize was an ancient magical beast which led many ghosts and spirits.

The Baize which the Sage had summoned had another powerful ability. He would be able to summon any ghostly spirit which he knew about! With that, he would be able to call out tens of thousands of spirits!

With the 5 sages combining forces and putting their all in this, they would even be able to destroy a small realm or even kill a sage!

With the tremor from the Baize, Head of Hidden Dragon Guards and the 2 other powerful beings shook together with the space around them. The energy from their natural sources slowly dissipated and it was evident that they were now severely injured.

"Die!"

After forcing the 3 powerful beings to a corner, the 5 sages quick shifted their attention to Shang Hou, who was standing before the Bone Door!

Shang Hou was now standing on the ghostly claw and appeared awe-inspiring. Even against the 5 sages, he maintained his composure.

"Asura!!!"

With a roar which seemingly came from the Demonic Heart

Realm, the purple ghostly claw struck forward and the black tattoos on its arm became obvious. This claw seemed as though it had come from the depths of hell, gripping tightly on this realm.

"Rumble... Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!"

After 5 distinct sounds, a shocking scene started to unfold.

The awe-inspiring sages were suddenly silenced by the arrival of the cursed ghostly claw, as though their influence had been wiped out of existence!

"Your power comes from the Demonic Heart Realm. How will it be possible to use it against an even more powerful being from the realm?"

5 streaks of light struck through the skies as the clouds appeared above the sages. Seeing this, Shang Hou snickered.

"Kacha!"

"Kacha!"

Shang Hou froze as he gazed at his ghostly claw.

The 5 fingers on the claw started to crack before falling to the ground, turning into powder. With that, the claw lost all signs of life.

Furthermore, the solidification started to spread upwards towards the palm.

"I've looked down on the few of you..."

Seeing this, Shang Hou seemed devastated. "To think that the few of you can harm my physical body. You guys are indeed sages... and the fact that we are in a foreign realm! However, all resistance is futile... All of you will have to die today! You will become the sacrifice for my departure!"

"Asura!!!"

With another roar, the Asura behind the Bone Door stretched out

its other hand, which was being restrained by chains. Without restrictions, it entered the realm of Da Qian just like that.

"Sha! Sha!"

Blood-red chains stretched into the realm like spider webs and in an instant, it seemed to have caught a prey.

"Kacha!"

Lord Yin of the Divine Lotus Cult realised that her limbs were being chained. Shocked, she was being pulled towards the Bone Door. Within moments, the chains started to burst into flames.

All the other heavenly ladies started to scream and turned into a green smoke.

Lord Yin had a look of disbelief on her face. In an instant, she was being pulled across the Bone Door.

"No!!!"

Her final shriek was heartbreaking.

Although all of them had always wanted to enter the source of dream masters, none of them had envisioned that it would be through such a means!

In that instant, all the sages were dumbfounded. "What kind of chain is that to be able to trap a sage?"

"As soon as she enters the Bone Door to arrive at the Demonic Heart Realm, she will surely die to my true physical body!"

"Let's give it our all to seal up the door!"

The situation had changed!

The 4 sages who had originally wanted to open the passage to the Demonic Heart Realm were now risking it all to seal up the door!

Although it might seem like a joke, everything was logical!

Under such a life-and-death circumstance, anyone would change their stance to ensure their own survival!

# Chapter 484: The Realm's Final Blow

---

"Things have finally escalated to such a stage!"

From afar, Fang Yuan witnessed everything and smiled to himself.

He had actively purified his dream elemental force before all of these happened and therefore was the least affected by the opening of the Bone Door.

Under the attack of the True Divines and True Elementals, Fang Yuan still had enough energy to fend them off.

"Now... is the crucial part!"

Although Shang Hou would seal up the Bone Door, he would only do so after welcoming his true physical body into Da Qian, gaining control of everything!

The preparation he had put in place to break the two realms apart was the 9 Heavenly Sky Net Array. Therefore, the array was the source of all problems!

"The 9 Heavenly Sky Net Array has its foundations on the will of the realm! Previously, the 5 sages had rebelled against their own realm and Shang Hou had taken the opportunity. The will of Da Qian had no choice but to support Shang Hou! However, things are different now... The 4 sages are regretting their actions and the will of the realm will surely prefer its own children when compared to a foreigner... As long as they make use of this fact, they will be able to survive through today's ordeal!"

Fang Yuan's eyes glistened as he gazed at the Bone Door with a cold smile. "I shall help out!"

"Where are my Sword Children?"

With a clear command, 3 streaks of sword radiance surrounded Fang Yuan, forming the 7 Constellations Sword Array. "Master!"

"3 Talents, you guys shall seal from above. Chaos Sword Array, kill!"

The 3 Talents Sword Array flew up, sealing all escape routes. Fang Yuan's spiritual territory started to expand with the power of Earth, Fire, Wind and Water.

The True Divines and True Elementals were stunned beyond words. "7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage?"

"You're right, but there's no prize for a correct guess!"

The silhouette of the swords quickly overwhelmed one of the spiritual knights within the spiritual territory.

With a single step, Fang Yuan transformed into the Pangu Giant, drawing a few striking similarities with the 12 witches of The Ancient One. With a single punch, he hollered, "Chaos Divine Fist, split the heavens and earth!"

"Rumble!"

Together with the power of the spiritual territory harnessing the energy of Earth, Fire, Wind and Water, this powerful punch turned one of the True Divines into a pile of flesh.

As a powerful being well versed in both spiritual spells and martial arts, Fang Yuan's combat power was only weaker than that of the sages! Even Elder Extreme Darkness might not be his match!

"There are 6 Extremes on Earth and 9 Heavens in the sky! Go!"

Fang Yuan made his way out, came to the vicinity of the Bone Door and commanded his spiritual will to split towards the heavens and the earth, entering the arrays.

"Rumble!"

The Earth Dragons started to rumble and roar. A screen of light appeared in the skies, harnessing the power of the realm's will.

"Little thief, how dare you!"



Witnessing Fang Yuan's interference, Shang Hou was shocked.

"Is this... the 9 Heavenly Sky Net Array?"

Although The Ancient One was shocked at Fang Yuan's level of cultivation, he quickly reacted to the situation. "This array was put in place by Shang Hou to separate the realms. Quickly activate it!"

"As long as we seal off both realms, his physical body will not be able to enter. We will then be able to deal with his magical clone!"

The 4 sages quickly worked together. The clouds above their heads shot up and expanded as they duelled with Shang Hou for the control over the array.

"I know it now..."

Fang Yuan could feel 4 powerful spiritual wills forcing their way into the array to contest Shang Hou's spiritual will. Therefore, he forced himself to a corner of the array.

"The 9 Heavenly Sky Net Array is ultimately the will of the realm! Now, the 4 sages and I are intending to close the doors to the realm, but Shang Hou is still insistent in allowing his physical body to enter... Therefore, the tables have turned and the will of the realm will favour us now. This is the basis for us to contest Shang Hou for the control over the array!"

"Ah, Head of Hidden Dragon Guards, Superior Wu Zun... quickly help me!!"

With a ferocious look, Shang Hou started to sweat profusely as he shouted.

"Buzz! Buzz! Buzz!"

3 other spiritual wills as powerful as the sun entered the battlefield, pushing Fang Yuan's spiritual will to its limits.

At this point in time, Fang Yuan left the fight without any hesitation.

Although he was powerful, it was necessary for Fang Yuan to put

his life under such risks by involving himself in the battle among the sages.

Naturally, he would have to pull out.

"You're a mere rabbit!"

Shang Hou cursed Fang Yuan. If not for the fact that his subordinates were weaker than Fang Yuan, he would have ordered them to kill Fang Yuan.

"Master... this person seems to be the disciple of Heartless. It seems like he had given the two source crystals to others and is therefore not under control."

Head of Hidden Dragon Guards commented.

"It is indeed him..."

The 8 powerful beings were in a tense battle of their spiritual wills as they put in their all to contest for the control of the array. Therefore, they paid no attention to Fang Yuan.

Even Shang Hou could only order a few powerful puppets to deal with Fang Yuan. However, Fang Yuan treated them like nothing as he effortlessly dealt with them.

"This array... It is indeed put in place by Shang Hou to seal up the Demonic Heart Realm! This is his great plan!"

Evil Divine and the other sages finally understood everything. "For your own selfish gains, you placed the entire realm in danger. You are also a criminal!"

"Haha... This world is all about the survival of the fittest!"

Shang Hou laughed heartily. "That kid is smart enough to figure this out, but so what? Even if the heavens are not helping me now, with the restrictions of the 6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array, I don't think any of you will be able to do anything."

The 6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array would continuously suck the natural source of the realm. This was the source which

supported the existence of the Bone Door!

Even if the 4 sages were to understand everything now, the will of the realm could only muster so much energy from its natural source to support them.

"You have forgotten that the few of us are Prominent Divine stage dream masters!"

The 4 sages exclaimed as their clouds shot up into the skies. Together with the will of the realm, the clouds rushed towards the ground.

Although they knew that Fang Yuan's actions had forced them to fight it out with Shang Hou, they already had the intention to do so.

The spiritual wills of the 4 Prominent Divine dream masters glared like the burning sun. With the assistance from the heavens, a single blow was enough to injure Superior Wu Zun and Qian Huanyi, kicking them out of the battlefield.

Following which, the Head of Hidden Dragon Guards was now outnumbered. With the immense pressure, his spiritual will was soon kicked out as well.

Finally, the 4 Prominent Divine dream masters cornered Shang Hou's spiritual will with much confidence.

The fight between spiritual wills could not be described easily. To outsiders, it would seem that the 4 sages came out victorious within a short moment. With the control over the array, they quickly activated it.

"Invisible net, seal!"

"Rumble!"

The 4 sages worked together as the 9 Heavenly Sky Net Array started to screech. Finally, it became visible, forming a heavenly net which landed directly on the Bone Door.

"Kacha! Kacha!"

The Bone Door shook and an ear-piercing screech was heard.

Previously, the realm was stable and it would be hard to destroy the Bone Door. However, the 9 Heavenly Sky Net Array was specially designed by Shang Hou to seal off realms and therefore, it was extremely effective in serving its purpose.

The enter Bone Door turned grey and a realm had seemingly left.

"Noooooooo!"

Shang Hou was enraged and the body behind the door started to roar in anger as well. However, there was nothing that could be done.

How big would a force be to be able to separate realms?

Just as the stone door solidified, a pitiful cry was heard.

Shang Hou's physical body was quickly trying to withdraw its hand. It had already lost 5 fingers on one hand and the palm which was cemented was too slow. The entire arm was being severed by the door as it came crashing down.

"Roar!"

A shocking roar was heard. Even the Prominent Divine dream masters were stunned at such a roar and almost puked blood.

"This is a magical demon's arm!"

Fang Yuan gazed at the decapitated arm which was as big as a hill and was lost in his own thoughts.

Although the sages were like ants in the battlefield, in a fight among the powerful beings, the sages would be like giant crocodiles, ferocious in attack and not giving others the chance to strike back.

"Keke... They deserved it, the sages..."

Seeing how everything had changed, Fang Yuan snickered.

"These sages are almighty and are already used to plotting against others. Never would they have thought that they would be like ants, manipulated by others! Even though they might be like ants, they will still fight back, regardless if the will of the realm is with or against them!"

The protagonist had not yet arrived and these supporting casts were already heavily injured!

"Kacha! Kacha!"

Indeed, in the next moment, as the Bone Door solidified, the 6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array came to a halt. A fearsome will was felt as it expressed its anger!

Streaks of heavenly violet lightning struck down towards the Bone Door with the intention of destruction.

"Rumble!"

The original 6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array and the 9 Heavenly Sky Net Array started to reject other sages and instead started to accept the will of the realm.

Which sage would be more powerful than the will of the realm of Da Qian?

"What's happening?"

Sage Baize understood everything. "This is the realm trying to take over the two arrays!"

"The heavenly array was created with the assistance of the heavenly realm and it is only normal for the will of the realm to regain control of it. As for the 6 Extremes Earth Shattering Array, it is already affected for it had continuously absorbed energy from the natural source of the realm. It would be good if the array could be controlled. If control is lost, it will be able to control whoever trying to control it in the first place!"

Li Qingmian continued. "We have corrected our actions at the

end and the will of the realm cannot do anything to us... After all, it still needs us to deal with Shang Hou!"

As he spoke, he took a quick glance at Fang Yuan, making Fang Yuan shudder in fear.

The earth shook and the skies gradually became dark.

In an instant, from the skies above, Da Qian would resemble a giant violet web, seemingly resisting against another realm.

Furthermore, the force of the net became like a sharp knife, severing a certain connection.

"This is..."

Shang Hou's expression changed. "The invisible net! This is not good! The realm is about to sever its relationship with the Demonic Heart Realm!"

Shang Hou wanted to bring his physical body in and at the same time alter Da Qian to suit his own needs. Therefore, it would be disadvantageous to him if the radiation of dream elemental force was removed.

"Will of the realm... why are you so extreme?"

The Ancient One and the other sages were also shocked.

What would it mean to sever all ties with the Demonic Heart Realm?

From then on, the absorption of dream elemental force would become extremely arduous and even Prominent Divine dream masters would experience a reduction in their cultivation level to a level even below that of a True Divine!

They would never be able to allow something like that to happen!

# Chapter 485: Deprivation

---

This chaotic war between the sages brought about great sufferings to Da Qian World.

Even its right-hand men, Shang Hou and his fellows, revealed their untrustworthy nature in the key moments.

As Da Qian's will, it naturally had to choose the option that is the most in line with its own benefits!

Undoubtedly, the best way to maintain stability would be to strike down on the dream masters and revoke such immense powers. This was the way to ensure progress!

Therefore, once Da Qian's will, which suffered greatly this time, was to finally escape, it would immediately take control of the 6 and 9 Arrays to completely sever ties with Demonic Heart Realm!

Even the sages were shocked by how resolute this will was.

"It... it... it dares to do so?"

As the sages were suddenly retaliated by the world, they were all stupefied for a moment.

The big war this time was a total bloodbath for the dream masters. Before and after the Bone Door opened, numerous lower tiered dream masters were severely injured and died. At the last few stages, all of them were annihilated. Even 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters were not spared as many of them died and became blood sacrifices.

Now, Da Qian's will was about to make its move to completely eradicate this dream masters' source of trouble!

"There's no use... even if there's complete segregation, the large amounts of dream elemental force from Demonic Heart Realm that entered our world this time around is sufficient to support us in restoring our hollows! It might even be enough for us to seek

revenge and break ourselves free from this world!"

The Ancient One clenched his teeth and smiled coldly.

Due to the opening of the Bone Door just now and the large amount of energy from the Demonic Heart Realm, the current Da Qian World was extremely abundant in dream elemental force. It was sufficient enough to support for a period of time for the dream masters to search for other countermeasures.

"Hehe..."

However, Fang Yuan already expected such a long time ago.

After he experienced the experiment in Planet Earth realm, he was very clear about such worlds' baseline. He was also very clear about the way they operated.

With these few close shaves with the complete destruction of the world, the will of the world could use it to rationalise itself to breakthrough some sort of limitation and make great changes to the world.

"But would this crisis really pass so easily?"

Fang Yuan was very doubtful of such. After all, Da Qian World was much bigger than Planet Earth realm and its natural source was rich and dense. Furthermore, a physical door was already opened!

"Wooo! Wooooo!"

At the next moment, a fearful feeling appeared in everyone's mind. Even Prominent Divine dream masters felt chills all over their body and all their hair stood up at once.

"What is... that?"

Numerous bolts of heavenly violet lightning flashed crazily in the skies and struck on the already petrified Bone Door like a waterfall.

However, there was suddenly a demonic glow of light shining on the door as it slowly opened.



"That is..."

An extremely aghast and frightened look appeared on Shang Hou's face as he then immediately ran for his life without turning back. It was as though he saw his nemesis.

"Knock! Knock!"

A few knocks could be heard. It was as though there was a certain 'presence' opposite the door that was trying to test out how strong or weak the world on this side was.

At the same time the door was about to break apart, all the living things inside Da Qian World immediately felt uneasy and irritated. It was as though they had a hunch that death was imminent!

At first, Shang Hou's original demonic body should have been stuck opposite that Bone Door. However, none of his spiritual auras was around anymore now.

"That..."

The Ancient One and the other sages felt their skin crawl as they sensed the unknown terror and chaos behind that door. That was...

"How could... there be such a thing..."

Sage Baize lost the soul in his eyes and was rather dispirited, "If I knew this was the case earlier, I would have never wanted to connect with such a world!"

"Creak!"

The Bone Door opened slightly and there was now a small gap.

At that instant, all the living things in Da Qian World were suffocated. Even the world's will was quivering.

'The other party is too strong... The current me is still too weak. I can't even abandon my flesh body and dream-traverse to other realms to survive...'

Fang Yuan held his breath and looked at the Bone Door that was slowly opening. His eyes were filled with stubbornness and perseverance.

Fang Yuan's stats and abilities shook and immediately made him felt like a sage as he barely gained some mental capability for action. He then immediately began to plan his escape route.

"What exactly is behind the door?"

Under the eyes of everyone, the Bone Door opened for the fourth time.

"Rumble!!!"

An unimaginable and indescribable presence descended.

Even Prominent Divine dream masters could not move at all under such a mighty presence. They were just like ants now.

Immediately, Fang Yuan felt a line of sight, or should he say, a will that was projected from the door. It immediately scanned through the world and was elated as though it was a predator that had finally seen its delicious prey.

'This is... the true horror of Demonic Heart Realm?'

A bead of cold sweat rolled down Fang Yuan's forehead, 'Previously, it was just a pure energy passage as Planet Earth Realm was too small and could only attract a Hades... But now, what kind of horrifying presence is descending?'

Suddenly, a neverending voice rang inside every dream master's heart.

This voice was constantly changing and its pitch was fluctuating high and low. For a while, it was sharp and piercing and moments later, it was warm and gentle sounding. It was singing an unknown note which formed a meaning.

"I am taking away your path!"

'Taking away... path, what does it mean?'

Fang Yuan frowned and his expression changed at once.

Inside his actualised dream world.

The original actualised dream world of his that was like a small paradise suddenly began to shrink. A mysterious energy was continuously being pulled out and made the sword children degenerate. One by one, they lost their spiritual awareness/spiritually aware and even their bodies were gone as they turned into the most basic long sword.

Furthermore, even the actualised divine swords began to debase and corrode as though they had been through millions of years.

"Ouch!"

An intense pain stemming from the soul suddenly struck Fang Yuan as though it wanted to tear apart the entire person. Even with Fang Yuan's steel-like will, he could not help but to groan in pain.

Pain!

Such an immense pain that was as if the person's veins and bones were being pulled out alive was suddenly felt by all dream masters in Da Qian!

Some lower-tiered dream-accessing masters and Illusionary Divine dream masters even died from such an intense pain!

Fang Yuan forced himself to raise his head and saw the four sages had fallen to the ground too. Their lips and eyebrows were twitching and it was evident they were not spared too.

At the same time, the spiritual aura on their bodies was quickly dissipating too.

Soon enough, from being Prominent Divine powerful beings, they fell to the 9th Tier, then the 8th Tier... the 7th Tier, their cultivations were falling like the roller coaster.

On Fang Yuan's own body, it was the same too.

His cultivation at the 7th Tier of Illusionary Divine stage fell drastically and slowly maintained at the beginning tier of Illusionary Divine stage. Furthermore, Fang Yuan felt empty inside his heart as though he had lost something very important.

"Dissipation of cultivation?"

A phrase suddenly appeared inside Fang Yuan's mind. He then immediately shook his head, "No... it's the deprivation above all rules..."

Even if Fang Yuan lost his dream master abilities, he was still a True Divine martial artist! Fang Yuan stood straight and thought quickly. He then immediately knew what he lost, "The ability to spiritualise at the 7th Tier Illusionary Divine stage, and also... the ability to actualise!"

Illusionary Divine dream masters could actualise spiritual spells and magical soldiers. They had thousands of paths which were profound and marvellous. They were incomparable.

After the 7th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage, dream masters had the ability to spiritualise and they could open prosperous lands and create living things!

Prominent Divine dream masters were known as the creator gods! They could create another race of humans! They could also civilise them!

This was how dream masters went up the tiers and it was a path unique to Da Qian; it was very different from the Demonic Heart Realm. Furthermore... it was more lively and more promising!

But now, this path was snatched away by the Demonic Heart Realm!

The other party really acted like how they said they would. They completely took away the hopes of the newly thriving dream masters in Da Qian!

Such a divine technique was truly unimaginable! It was above

and beyond any law!

"Thud!"

The Bone Door closed as if it obtained what it wanted. The entire door turned light grey and was immediately bombarded by the heavenly violet lightning into ashes.

'Let me think about it...'

Fang Yuan's face was extremely cold as he quickly ruminated, "Stripping away the path... such an event is truly shocking and horrific. But since it's the Demonic Heart Realm, anything could have happened... Strictly speaking, the path of us dream master dao lies, the dream dao, is rooted from the oddity of dream elemental force. Since the foundation is in the hands of others, there is naturally the possibility of it being taken away by others."

If the path of dream masters was described as the most eye-catching fruit on a fruit tree, then dream elemental force would be its soil!

Demonic Heart Realm would then be the land. Since it controlled the land, it could naturally do anything it wants to the crop on top of itself!

"But... what exactly is that presence just now? Could that be the Demonic Heart Realm's heavenly will?"

Fang Yuan thought hard, "Da Qian World was clearly rich in heavenly energy, why didn't it directly harvest it? Wait a minute, who said this wasn't harvesting?"

Fang Yuan was enlightened at once, "The Demonic Heart Realm was like the apex predator! If it meets a normal realm, it would naturally annihilate everything and devour its natural source as it only cared about the short-term benefits. However, although our Da Qian World was eyed and infiltrated with dream elemental force, we have countless powerful and capable people. We created the unique path of dream master and thus, it used another method

of harvesting. It is akin to how the Demonic Heart Realm is planting a fruit tree and it will periodically harvest its fruit but will not destroy the tree as it anticipates future harvests... That means, the Demonic Heart Realm valued Da Qian greatly."

This self-created system of dream masters could also greatly patch up Demonic Heart Realm's foundation!

Hence, the other party directly snatched away such a path but did not destroy it. Perhaps, it was even anticipating the next round of benefits!

"This is a higher levelled form of harvesting that's beyond just harvesting the natural source? By spreading its seeds and allowing it to grow freely before snatching away such an excellent path to complete its own foundation?"

Fang Yuan pondered silently as he clenched his fists.

With his current state, he was just like those magicians who lost their magic tricks. Even though he still had his dream elemental force, without the system, his mind could no longer affect matter and his consciousness could no longer affect reality. Thus, he could not unleash sufficient power.

This was the case for sages too!

"Of course, luckily I broke through beyond the 7th Tier of Illusionary Divine before and have contact with the ability to create living things before. Sooner or later, I will be able to start from the most basic uses of dream elemental force and discover some stuff... Sages might be more powerful than me, but even if they recover, they might not be as strong as their old selves."

Fang Yuan immediately recognised this point, "Previously, I hastened my cultivation at all cost because I had slight worries regarding this area. However, I thought at the very most, only dream elemental force would be segregated and would become harder to obtain. I never thought the result would be so drastic!"

Such a detachment from laws could even spoil the foundation of lower tiered dream masters and cause them to die!

Fang Yuan heaved a long breath and looked to the skies as he felt an extremely inauspicious omen.

# Chapter 486: Retribution

---

"Are the glory days of dream masters over?"

With the Demonic Heart Realm snatching away the dao of dream masters and the internal pressure from the will of Da Qian, Fang Yuan was pessimistic about the future of dream masters.

In the past, dream masters had much animosity with the others and could only gain the upper hand by brute force.

Without their powers, dream masters would now be dealt with by the rest!

"Right now, I can control as much dream elemental force as a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master. However, without the technique of a dream master, it will be akin to a magician not having any magic tricks. My ability will be reduced drastically and I would be as weak as when I first achieved a breakthrough into the Illusionary Divine stage! This will be the same for the other sages and they can only depend on their rich dream elemental force to maintain a cultivation level of a 5th Tier Illusionary Divine stage dream master. The normal dream masters will have it worse off as they will now be a mere normal human being!"

In the world of Da Qian, there were other paths to become supernormal.

The True Divines and True Elementals who were once treated as slaves by the dream masters would still be as powerful as they once were!

The shift of powers meant that something exciting was about to happen.

"This means that... it's my time to shine!"

Fang Yuan disappeared in a streak of light and blocked the path of the fleeing Shang Hou. "Don't think of leaving! Old thief, you shall die!"



If it was a few moments before when this Great Ancestor of Da Qian was still a sage, Fang Yuan would never have dreamt of doing this.

However, now was his best chance!

"Take this punch!"

With an exclamation, the Chaos Giant appeared behind his back and struck out a devastating punch. It was all out to kill the Great Ancestor of Da Qian!

'If dream masters were to really lose their status in Da Qian and even if the Great Ancestor of Da Qian were to lose his ability of Spiritual Will Steel Seal, he would still be a problem. Furthermore, he still has control over the Imperial Court! He knows a lot of secrets!'

Thoughts ran through Fang Yuan's mind as he released all his strength.

Other dream masters froze as they witnessed this scene. 'This person must be crazy to attack a sage!'

The 4 sages of the allied forces were still able to compose themselves. However, as they became weaker, their bodies started to shake.

"Save the emperor!"

Shang Hou's face started to twitch as his voice shook the heavens.

His magical clone was also a dream master. Although his Spiritual Will Steel Seal technique became another variant after he had become an Illusionary Divine dream master, he was still a similar dream master compared to the many others in Da Qian. Now that everything was gone, he could at most preserve his cultivation level at the 5th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage. He might have the knowledge of techniques from the Demonic Heart Realm in his consciousness, there was no way he could re-cultivate all of it in an instant.

At a disadvantage, he could only forcefully receive the punch from the True Divine. His defences immediately broke through as he started to spit blood. Unwilling to give up, he relentlessly called for help.

"Old thief!!!"

The True Divines and True Elementals from the Imperial Court all gave perplexed looks.

Suddenly, a True Elemental started to holler and his voice was filled with hatred. "You killed my entire family, wiped out my people and even use your evil spells to put me under your control! I will have to take revenge today no matter what!"

"Demon Slaying, seal him off!"

With a shout, he started to manipulate the earth energy around him, transforming himself into a 6-headed demon. Mustering up all his strength, he swung black chains out of his arms, sealing off all of Shang Hou's escape routes.

With a shriek, Shang Hou started to avoid the black chains. Although he was extremely nimble, he was still unable to escape as he ran into Fang Yuan's fist. His chest became indented and many ribs were fractured. Blood spewed everywhere.

"Huh?"

The dream masters witnessed this scene and knew what it meant for them. However, the other True Elementals and True Divines started to think to themselves. 'Could a True Divine and a True Elemental really take down a sage? Hmm...'

Gazing at the expressions of the other dream masters, there was the chilly vibe.

"Kill!"

"Shang Hou has enslaved us for too long!"

"Kill him to take our revenge!"

...

The True Divines and True Elementals who were on the Imperial Court's side shouted as they made their way towards the Great Ancestor of Da Qian.

Witnessing this scene, Head of Hidden Dragon Guards laughed and looked at the two beside him. "What do you guys think?"

He could feel the will of the realm over Superior Wu Zun and Qian Huanyi weakening. This proved that the will of Da Qian was desperate to wipe out all dream masters.

After all, there was no longer the threat of Prominent Divine stage dream masters. Therefore, there was no need to continue strengthening these two in maintaining their status as temporal sages.

Even so, these two people were the strongest True Divine and True Elemental of the realm, if they did not consider that other person.

Head of Hidden Dragon Guards gazed at that person in mid-air as the Chaos Giant raged on.

"Without the control, it feels like everything was just a dream!"

Superior Wu Zun spoke first. "We are passionate and yet this is how the Imperial Court treat us, hehe..."

"Lord, are you still thinking of saving that person? Cough..."

Qian Huanyi shook his head. "We have been heavily injured through all the fighting and even if we want to help, we are too weak now!"

"Sigh..."

Head of Hidden Dragon Guards let out a sigh. "It has been a thousand years since something big like this has happened. As the leader of the spiritual knights and martial artists, your actions and words will be extremely influential. It will be wise to be more

cautious.

"There is still animosity between dream masters and spiritual knights and Wu Zongs. You think too much of us."

Superior Wu Zun remained silent while Qian Huanyi continued.

"In reality, this is the best time to reconcile all conflicts!"

Head of the Hidden Dragon Guards gazed towards the 4 sages and had a murderous look on his face. "These sages are responsible for the hatred between us! Kill them here and everything will be settled, wouldn't it be? I am also a Prominent Divine stage dream master and I can tell you that as of now, all sages have lost the dream dao. They are now only as powerful as a 6th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master!"

"Hidden Dragon! Do you really want to see us being wiped from existence?"

"Those from the Evil Divine Sect, quickly protect me!"

"All dream masters, retreat!"

The 4 sages were stunned as they quickly gathered their remaining people.

Unfortunately, all the dream masters were extremely weak now and could only put up a weak resistance.

"Ah!"

A shriek was heard. It was from a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master who had the protection of a sage, which ensured his survival up to now. However, the protection was quickly taken down by a simple spiritual spell, killing the dream master inside just like that!

"Haha! The overbearing dream masters are finally getting their just desserts!"

"Head of Hidden Dragon Guards is right! This world is ours now!"

"Pui! Why are you still calling him the Head? He is a mere dog without his powers. What do we have to fear?"

Chaos!

As soon as the Demonic Heart Realm was sealed off and the will of Da Qian taking things into its own hands, there was only chaos!

All the True Divines and True Elementals in the battlefield started a killing spree against all the dream masters.

Furthermore, even the Head of Hidden Dragon Guards was being targeted.

"If the sages don't die, we will be taken advantage of! Kill him!"

"Hmph!"

Head of Hidden Dragon Guards quickly executed a technique.  
"True Elemental Needle Rain!"

"Whoosh! Whoosh!"

Needles started to appear everywhere around him and their illusionary glow was mesmerising.

A True Divine shrieked as thousands of needles pierced through him, turning him into a blood mist.

"A True Elemental?"

Qian Huanyi was shocked.

"Hmph, other than pursuing the dream dao, I have once cultivated as a spiritual knight and have achieved a breakthrough to become a True Elemental. It was once a mere entertainment for me and never would I have thought that I would use it one day!"

Head of Hidden Dragon Guards scanned his surroundings. "You can kill me, but I will pull a few of you down the grave with me. Who is willing to sacrifice themselves?"

As a dream master, he was among the talented bunch of people in Da Qian and it was normal for him to have cultivation as a spiritual

knight or martial artist.

Considering that the dream dao was the most powerful of them all, how many of them would be willing to be like Fang Yuan, putting in effort in both his martial arts and his cultivation as a dream master?

Unknowingly, those with cultivations as spiritual knights or martial artists were beginning to see the benefits now.

The True Divines and True Elementals of the Imperial Court were all unwilling to sacrifice themselves. Therefore, all of them left the Head of Hidden Dragon Guards alone and instead went for the 4 sages.

"Sigh... Let's find a place to rest!"

Superior Wu Zun and Qian Huanyi exchanged glances and calmly left the battlefield.

Considering that they had fought for a long time already and they had lost the strength given to them by the realm's will, the priority for them would be to look for a place to rest before they can plan something.

"Since the two of you are leaving, how about bringing me along?"

Head of Hidden Dragon Guards looked at them and laughed.

Although he was a True Elemental, it was still extremely dangerous for him to remain here. However, if the 3 powerful beings were to support each other, they would be able to leave easily.

"Alright!"

Superior Wu Zun and Qian Huanyi exchanged glances once again before nodding their heads.

Just as the 3 of them were on the sidelines of the battlefield, there was a huge explosion coming from another conflict.

"Ah! My true physical body will never let the few of you go!"

A voice of hatred was heard, which resembled the dying cry of a wild animal.

"It's His Majesty, the Great Ancestor!"

Head of Hidden Dragon Guards froze in his steps.

"That person is still extremely powerful and his true physical body is too mysterious for anyone to predict. Never would I have thought that that kid would really kill his magical clone..."

Qian Huanyi shook his head but did not stop running. In an instant, the 3 of them left the battlefield.

...

"Die!"

Fang Yuan came before the bloody Shang Hou. Ignoring his cursing and his final struggle, Fang Yuan landed a heavy punch on his head.

"Chaos Divine Fist!"

In his fist, the shocking willpower of martial arts struck through Shang Hou's consciousness, killing all hopes of survival.

"Bang!"

Even though Shang Hou might be the Great Ancestor of Da Qian, now, he was merely a dead man with a bloodied corpse too gruesome for anyone to look at.

With a single thought, Fang Yuan quickly took out his Mountain River Pearl and kept Shang Hou's corpse in it.

"What are you doing?"

Around him, the few True Divines and True Elementals started to become hostile. "Put it down!"

After all, Shang Hou was the boss of all these and would surely have treasures on his body. How could they allow a single person to take it all away?

"You want it? Exchange it with your life!"

Fang Yuan continued to be overbearing as he forced his way out. None of them was willing to risk their lives for a reward they could not be sure of. Therefore, Fang Yuan managed to make his way towards the 4 sages.

"Li Qingmian! Give me your life!"

Behind him, the Pangu Giant roared and its power was overwhelming.

Fang Yuan had killed Shang Hou because he was a threat to the entire realm and Fang Yuan knew he could reap some rewards from Shang Hou's corpse. However, he was looking to kill Li Qingmian now purely for revenge!

He could finally avenge Master Heartless today!



# Chapter 487: To Settle

---

487 To Settle

Translator:Sparrow Translations | Editor: JTJTY97

"I just want Li Qingmian's life today! Who wants to die with him?"

Fang Yuan leapt across numerous people from the Imperial Court in an instant and arrived at the epicentre of the battle.

"Fang Yuan, what are you doing?"

"As a dream master, are you trying to betray us?"

"You scoundrel! I knew you were so rapacious!"

...

Numerous dream masters berated.

All of them were the powerful beings of the 5 Grand Organisation. The reason they could survive till now was firstly due to their shocking powers and secondly due to the fact that they were protected by the sages. In the past, they were all formidable and talented dream masters. Surprisingly, the Old Mother of Tianmu, the one who guarded Changli Mountain Hollow, was also within the group of them.

But now, although they appeared strong on the outside, they were very weak. To Fang Yuan, they were all weak chickens.

The reason they could still survive against the attacks was due to their leftover equipment and scrolls. Additionally, it was also due to them having the sages in the centre as their command and the fact that the attacking True Divines and True Elementals were not willing to risk it.

"Bunch of useless things!"

Fang Yuan scanned the surroundings and took big steps forward.

"Rumble!"

A scroll was torn and turned into a lightning bolt that struck Fang Yuan's body, causing a loud but dull noise.

Green smoke rose. The Old Mother of Tianmu was aghast, "Impossible, this scroll of mine sealed a True Elemental spiritual knight's full strength attack before!"

"Courting death!"

Fang Yuan charged forward aggressively and reached out his right hand before immediately grabbing Old Mother of Tianmu's neck upwards as though he was grabbing a little chick.

"Ah! What are you doing?"

After her divine power was defeated, Old Mother of Tianmu lost her composure and let out a scream like that of a little girl.

"Revenge is a dish best served cold!"

Fang Yuan tightened his grip slightly and the piercing noise of bone cracking could be heard.

This once powerful dream master, the one who forced Fang Yuan to enter Changli Mountain Hollow, was now dead as a doornail. Her neck was strangled into a very sinister arc.

"Run!"

After seeing how Fang Yuan killed a powerful being so easily like he was killing a chicken, the remaining dream masters were panic-stricken and shell-shocked. They immediately shouted and fled for their lives.

Fang Yuan took a few steps forward again and stopped the four sages at once.

"Fang Yuan! Don't commit yet another mistake!"

The Ancient One stood forward. His fingers moved as though he was strumming chords and the surrounding elemental energy

moved along, forming a nebulous spiritual spell. The spiritual spell was as beautiful as a dream and turned into numerous colourful fluttering butterflies that surrounded them.

Dream masters could also cultivate in martial arts and spiritual spells. Evidently, this sage was similar to the Head of Hidden Dragon Guards, he was a True Elemental!

"I've said it once, those who hinder me shall die!"

Fang Yuan hollered and his right fist punched out, "Pangu Eagle Body! Chaos Divine Fist!"

"Hruuuu! Hruuuuu!"

Gale winds raged. The blazing winds of the fist and the intense will of the martial artist immediately made the surviving disciples of the sages scam out.

"Bang!"

Like how flame exploded, the wings of numerous spiritual butterflies ignited and turned into ashes before falling onto the ground.

The Ancient One quivered as he felt how strong and immense Fang Yuan's intention to kill was. He immediately stopped and dared not do anything else.

"You are the successor of that old devil Heartless, but did you know he was gravely wrong from the start?!"

Li Qingmian was wielding his brush pen and stood forward. He appeared calm as he asked; it was unsurprising that his poise matched his title of sage.

"I don't care who is right or who is wrong! I only know master's hatred was as deep as the ocean and this score has to be settled!"

Fang Yuan raised his head slightly and his eyes sparkled at once as a fist landed on the sage's chest.

"Bang!"

Although Li Qingmian was a sage, he did not cultivate in other divine techniques. He was no longer as mighty as before even though he used to be a dream dao powerful being.

Demon Killing Divine Pen let out a shriek as his chest sunk in and was thrown backwards.

"Smack!"

Fang Yuan went forward and took the brush pen Li Qingmian was holding. He then flicked it with his fingers.

A stream of light shot out and Li Qingmian's expression froze. A bloody hole appeared on his forehead at once.

After Shang Hou died, yet another Sage died!

Fang Yuan was breathing heavily and fiercely, his body and aura were vigorous and virile. He was just like a sun that was emitting a burning light that ablated all the remaining spiritual wills nearby. Fang Yuan waved his arm and likewise kept the corpse.

Although nothing was left behind, the corpse of a Prominent Divine dream master still had lots of research value, even if its power was stripped!

"Fang Yuan!"

The remaining dream masters were infuriated. They could not wait to chop Fang Yuan's corpse into pieces.

However, the moment Fang Yuan glanced around, all the hateful gazes disappeared immediately. Almost no one dared to look him in the eyes directly.

"Cough cough..."

The Ancient One walked forward and said, "Great! Now that you and Li Qingmian's score has been settled, what now for the rest?"

"What now?"

Fang Yuan sighed as he suddenly felt some sort of void inside his

heart.

This feeling was the same as how a person would feel when he starts seeking vengeance after he becomes successful only to realise this enemy of his has died of old age.

If Li Qingmian, this Prominent Divine dream master who was also the head of Source Seeking Sect, could not even stand a chance against this fist from Fang Yuan, how long could the remaining dream masters survive?

Furthermore, wouldn't live in this new Da Qian World be hell for the dream masters?

"Die! Die!"

Fang Yuan flicked his finger twice. Two 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream masters immediately collapsed and their breath stopped.

This was the last two remaining powerful beings from the Source Seeking Sect. After their deaths, everyone else remaining had nothing much to do with Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan then walked past the three sages. These sages were not their usual self as they did not even utter a single word.

Furthermore, even the powerful beings from the Imperial Court who were surrounding them appeared fearful as they moved away and made way for Fang Yuan to leave.

Although they were also True Divines, Fang Yuan and his fully opened Pangu Eagle Body struck great fear in their hearts.

"Time to leave!"

Since the score was settled and the current situation was too complicated, Fang Yuan needed somewhere quiet to organise today's gains and losses.

In the blink of an eye, his figure shook and he vanished in the horizons.

The remaining powerful beings looked at each other blankly before suddenly cooperating with each other to massacre the remaining dream masters.

An unfair battle immediately erupted!

The once formidable dream masters had become the weak prey now. Many of them died and blood spewed everywhere.

Such chaos was centred in Jade Capital City and was continuously expanding outwards. In the end, the chaos spread throughout the entire world.

...

"What a... long day and night!"

Fang Yuan straightened his back and immediately ran crazily once he walked out of Jade Capital City.

Although a large part of dream masters' ability was abolished, Fang Yuan was still a True Divine after all. He dashed like he was flying and one step of his covered thousands of feet. In a short period of time, he was already thousands of miles away. He then searched for a remote spot in the wilderness and soon found a cave. Fang Yuan hid inside the cave, sealed the cave entrance and cast some concealment spells.

"Phew..."

Only after all these steps were completed, Fang Yuan let out a long breath and sat on the ground lethargically. Cracking noises could be heard from his bones as he sat down.

Even Fang Yuan exhausted almost all his energy after these rounds of battles and after being stripped of his path. If those remaining powerful beings from the Imperial Court wanted to stop him, he might not even have been able to walk out of Jade Capital alive today!

Thankfully, Fang Yuan's performance scared away all those with

ill intentions.

After all, no one was willing to sacrifice himself to test how strong Fang Yuan was.

If those dream masters were smart, a few of them might be able to survive.

"The Imperial Court... dream masters... both sides suffered greatly this time... Disunity is everywhere.... Of course, dream masters were truly badly defeated this time, they have completely lost."

Fang Yuan closed his eyes and entered a deep state of regulation.

...

This was a deep and primal state of chaos and disorderliness.

Numerous dark green coloured energy currents gushed about turbulently. It was unknown how long had they existed for.

There was no light, no darkness, no sounds and no touch.

It was pure nothingness inside here.

"Rumble!"

Suddenly, a bolt of lightning flashed.

Above the most centre point, a small spark of fire suddenly grew.

Although this flame was weak, it was shining continuously within the numerous energy currents and lit up the surroundings.

At the same time, accompanied with thinking, the first thought appeared.

"Me!"

"Why me?"

"Who am I?"

.....

Under continuously thinking, numerous thoughts appeared.

They were like fuel which caused the spark of flame to become stronger and a greater area was lit up.

Finally, after an unknown period of time had passed, the flame shook and understood everything, "I am Fang Yuan!"

"Rumble!"

The entire void shook as though it was enlightened, The flame turned into the figure of a human directly. It was the figure of Fang Yuan.

"I can't believe I lost myself and was questioned by my inner demons! Looks like I'm severely injured after my dream master cultivation was stripped away... Is this my sea of consciousness? Impossible, I am still a True Divine, after all, I'm not injured until such a stage..."

However, this space was extremely familiar to Fang Yuan.

Fang Yuan pulled himself together and observed closely. He saw what seemed to be the inside of a cosmic egg and there were numerous holes on the ground. This void was just like a tattered hut.

In addition, this tattered hut was not sturdy at all. Outside it, there were even more streams of chaotic energy currents sweeping about that kept trying to invade into the hut as though it wanted to completely equalise this place.

"An even more familiar feeling!"

Fang Yuan took two steps and suddenly kicked something.

He picked up the object and realised it was a long and rusty stick. There were lots of rusts and corrosion on it and it looked like it went through thousands of years of damage.

"This is... the Mountain Sword?!"

Fang Yuan looked at this long stick and his body quivered, "This is... my actualised dream world!!!"



Fang Yuan was not surprised that this dream world was damaged until such a stage, he was surprised this actualised dream world still existed!

"Impossible!"

Fang Yuan clenched his teeth, "The Demonic Heart Realm has already snatched away the path of dream masters, the dream dao. But, for dream masters at the Illusionary Divine stage and beyond, the actualised dream world is the foundation and place for them to actualise! It is also the seed for the future prosperous lands and hollows! Even sages could not keep it!"

"Unless..."

Fang Yuan's expressions changed and he began to explore.

The current actualised dream world had already deteriorated to the extreme. Its range was not even 30 feet.

The original 8 Gates Sword Array had already disappeared without a trace left behind. However, Fang Yuan found a few other corroded long swords but they no longer had any spiritual property in them. Furthermore, they looked like they would fall apart with one touch and it was extremely tragic to look at them.

"This is really my dream world. Even at this stage, it can still survive!"

Fang Yuan's face was filled with joy. At another corner, he found Elder Extreme Darkness' stone figure. He was immediately clear at once and shouted, "Get out!"

# Chapter 488: Disaster

---

"Whoosh!"

There was a white flash.

A stone figurine appeared within the mountain cave.

Fang Yuan sighed as he knew that his actualised dream world has weakened once more and was on the verge of being destroyed.

"I can still actualise... Of course, without a source of energy, the actualised dream world will only continue to weaken!"

Although the surroundings were filled with dense dream elemental force from the collision on the two realms, the actualised dream world was unable to absorb any of it as though it was sealed away from the world.

"It seems like I still have some abilities as a dream master?"

Fang Yuan laughed to himself. "This is impossible. That being had transcended the rules of the reality of our realm and even sages were like ants before him. How will I be not affected by it? Unless..."

With a single thought, his stats window appeared:

Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 100

Spirit: 50 (100)

Magic: 33 (100)

Profession: ???

Cultivation: True Divine, Area Being

Technique: Pangu Eagle Body, [8 Gates Sword Array (???)], [Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell (Grade 5 (Completed))]

Skill: [Medicine (Level 3)], [Botany (Level 5)], [Fiery Golden Eyes (Level 1)]"

Compared to before, the words on the stats window were now flashing about and seemed unstable, especially for the information regarding Fang Yuan's cultivation as a dream master. There was a dark hue to the words as though they were being sealed away.

"Indeed... my special ability is working!"

Fang Yuan finally understood everything.

This ability to have fixed stats would allow him to restore his cultivation without any more bottlenecks if he had already broken through it before.

Even under such situations, his ability had allowed him to retain his foundations as a dream master.

"If this is so... That being has not taken away the complete version of the dream dao! I am the remaining piece it will require! Will this mean that all dream masters in Da Qian still have hope?"

Fang Yuan's hair stood on its ends.

Obviously, if that being were to find out what Fang Yuan had possessed, it would surely capture Fang Yuan and break him down into powder to absorb the remaining portion of the dream dao.

"However... it will not be simple for him to know of the existence of this part of the dream dao. It will need to spend some time digesting the complete dao! Furthermore, it is almost impossible for a higher dimension to descend to our dimension on its own!"

Since history, it had always been the lower dimension realm opening up the doors to the higher dimensions and not the other way round.

Fang Yuan started to think to himself. Even the Demonic Heart Realm would have to fret over how it would be able to go against the flow and open up the doors to Da Qian on its own. This would,

therefore, ensure the safety of Da Qian for the time being.

Of course, this would also mean that if Fang Yuan were to increase his cultivation further, he would surely encounter this being in the future.

This was the ultimate enemy and there was no turning back!

"Unknowingly, I have another enemy now, an enemy which I cannot put up a resistance against..."

Fang Yuan shook his head and laughed before revealing a determined look. "However, I will not give up on the dream dao!"

Although the Demonic Heart Realm was the true source of dream elemental force, the dream dao was wholesome and even after exploring countless other realms, Fang Yuan had never come across any other daos more complete and perfect than the dream dao.

Who would be able to give up on such a dao?

"Kacha!"

"Kacha!"

Suddenly, cracks started to appear on the rock figurine, revealing a fair-skinned young girl.

"You are... Fang Yuan!"

The young girl was dazed as she struggled to get on her feet. Unsurprisingly, she fell and finally realised what was happening. "Where is this?"

"Let me tell you a good news. This is Da Qian!"

Fang Yuan gazed at the Demon Weapon before him and felt a tinge of regret for not being able to use her as planned.

He had originally intended to use her against Extreme Darkness. Never would he have thought that before he could use her, Elder Extreme Darkness was already dead.

"Da Qian?"

The Demon Weapon suddenly appeared alert.

Why would Fang Yuan be so kind-hearted as to release an enemy of his? The Demon Weapon was now, in fact, a normal young girl with no powers and helpless before Fang Yuan.

"Are you intending to sell me to my true physical body?"

The Demon Weapon chuckled and continued. "Or... Are you looking for some insider information?"

Under threat, she had no thoughts about rebelling against Fang Yuan.

"None of these..."

Fang Yuan shook his head. "Elder Extreme Darkness's true physical body is already dead. From today onwards, you will replace her as the true Elder Extreme Darkness!"

"What?"

The young girl shuddered.

As a magical clone of Extreme Darkness and after experiencing so much in her realm, she now had all of Extreme Darkness's memories and therefore knew how powerful her true physical body was.

It was a powerful being at the level of the Divine Refining Grade! Close to attaining the most powerful grade!

How could she die just like that?

"Don't you magical clones love to hear it when your true physical body is dead, now that you can take over her?"

Fang Yuan continued calmly. "Of course... I saved you from your own realm and helped you. You need to repay me in the form of being my servant!"

"Yes, Lord!"

Extreme Darkness paid her greetings without a hint of embarrassment.

"Mmmm!"

Fang Yuan took out his robes and passed them to Extreme Darkness casually. "This realm is undergoing a huge change. For now, we shall look for a few people before securing a plot of land to settle down."

"Changes?"

Extreme Darkness took the robes over and covered her voluptuous figure, blushing in the process.

"That's right... Everything is changing and the realm is about to settle down in its new state now."

Fang Yuan revealed a sneaky smile as he mumbled to himself.

...

"Dream masters are overbearing and this is their fate!"

The dream masters of Da Qian had gained their status in the past by exerting dominance through their powers.

Now that the dream masters were weakened, their reputation started to crumble.

Not just that, years of pent up anger from the oppressed would undoubtedly be released upon the weakened dream masters as the dream masters became the prey of many.

Even those who had no grudge with dream masters would join in the fight in an attempt to take over the riches of the dream masters.

Next to the Jade Capital, in Tianhe County.

"Kill!"

On Baize Mountain, flames erupted everywhere and smoke billowed above the horizon.

"Haha... How do you feel now after oppressing us martial artists and enslaving us for so long?"

A Wu Zong stepped on a deacon and his face was filled with the satisfaction of taking revenge.

"You... The Sage will never let you off!"

That old man originally had the cultivation of a 5th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master and could simply kill this Wu Zong if it was in the past. However, now, he had no strength to even put up a meaningful resistance and could only curse him.

"Haha... What can the Sage do?"

The martial artist started to laugh heartily. "Everything has changed. You dream masters are criminals and now, all of you have lost your powers! Even sages won't be able to protect all of you! Brothers, attack!"

A group of martial artists roared and cheered. Finally, they broke through the protective array and quickly started their killing spree.

In an instant, they were killing, robbing and even raping the ladies. As they were taking their revenge, they resembled uncultured beasts.

"What do you see?"

The martial artist held the old man's head up and sliced his eyelids off. Fiercely, he glared at the old man. "I want you to see this. See how you have destroyed families before. Now, look at us killing your descendants and snatching your wives, daughters and your everything!"

"You thief!"

The old man bit his tongue and spat a mouthful of blood towards the martial artist's face. In anger, he had killed himself!

"Pui! You're indeed an evil man! Even your blood reeks!"

The martial artist wiped his face and continued to shout. "Kill! Kill all dream masters and return peace to our land!"

...

In the East of the city, within a mansion.

All the servants of the family were donned in leather and metal armour. They were equipped with longswords and bows as they looked at the chaos happening.

The fight against dream masters slowly escalated to a worldwide chaos as families joined in the conflicts.

As the most hopeful family of the county, the Meng Family was on guard.

"Jun'er, what are you doing?"

The family head of Meng Family held two iron balls in his hands as he gazed towards the young man with a strict look.

"Father... My Master is under attack. I need to save him!"

His young man was rather handsome and was giving off a wealthy vibe.

"Don't spout nonsense! From today onwards, you shall not go anywhere! Reflect on your actions at home!"

The family head of the Meng Family was angered. "Also... cut of all ties with dream masters!"

"Why! I have done nothing wrong!"

The young man turned angry as tears welled up in his eyes.

It was not like this the last time.

Ever since he had been tested as having the potential to become a dream master, his father had treated him very well and was even respectful of Baize Mountain.

However, everything had changed.



"Pa!"

The family head of the Meng Family gave the young man a tight slap.

"Young master is confused. Bring him away and lock him up!"

The family head of Meng Family did not bother to explain as he ordered the servants around.

If this young man had not displayed the potential of becoming a dream master, he would never have been treated as the young master in the first place.

Now, he was nothing.

If he was not clear of this, he would surely have it worse in the future.

"Yes, sir!"

Two guards held the young master and a housekeeper by the side walked up towards the family head. "Old master, the city is becoming chaotic. Do we want to leave?"

"There's no need!"

The family head waved his hands. "I have already come to an agreement with them. We shall split the rewards. It's going to be fine, so don't worry! As long as we defend the mansion properly and don't allow those troublemakers to enter the mansion, nothing is going to go wrong!"

He gazed afar and seemed satisfied as he looked at the burning flames within the county city.

After this ordeal, the Meng Family might even become more influential in the future.

As the leader of the family, it was not a simple task to ensure the family's safety throughout this ordeal.

"Eh?"

Two servants were examining the fight outside and realised that something was not right.

One of the martial artist engaging in a fight just at the doorstep of the Meng Mansion suddenly shrieked. 8 legs started to grow out of his back and in an instant, he had transformed into a monster, giving off a murderous spiritual aura.

"Hehe!"

With a human body and spider legs, he made a weird noise before biting the necks of the people around. He started to greedily drink up all the fresh blood and a small spider started to climb out of his body.

From somewhere not far from the spider creature, another scream was heard.

"Monster!"

"These monsters are eating people up!"

...

The You Spirit Inner Demons released by the Bone Door had finally taken effect in this realm, causing a devastating disaster!

# Chapter 489: Demon Spirits

---

In the 16th year of rule under Emperor Zhao Ming, there was a great war in the Jade Capital. Sages fell from power and Inner Demons appeared in the realm.

From then onwards, the entire Da Qian was thrown into chaos. The Imperial Court was brought down and the entire period was known as 'The Chaos of Demons'. Even the calendars named the period of time as the 'Year of the Demon'.

"Demons are appearing in Tianhe County? Demon Spirits are feeding on humans and more than 10,000 humans have already been infected. It's already spreading to the neighbouring counties already?"

Within a carriage, Fang Yuan slowly read a letter in his hands and remained silent.

Dream masters fell from power in just a single night and even lost the ability to enter the Dream Realm. Their usual mode of communication was destroyed and they could only make use of the most basic modes of communication.

Even this letter was obtained from the local authorities and was already rather outdated.

"Also... the royal family of Da Qian has been killed entirely. Is the Imperial Court already dead?"

Fang Yuan felt like laughing.

Sage Shang Hou was a scheming person and was able to deceive the 5 sages into believing that the Imperial Court was at its weakest. He was even almost successful in becoming victorious.

Unfortunately, none of them had expected that the Demonic Heart Realm would harvest the dream dao from Da Qian, resulting in losses for both sides. Furthermore, the dream masters of Da Qian had suffered the risk of being wiped from the realm.

The ineffectiveness of the Spiritual Will Steel Seal and the death of Shang Hou meant that the Imperial Court would have no one else to rely on. Therefore, it was not surprising that they were not able to fend off the attacks from the angered True Divines and True Elementals.

"If we were to keep Shang Hou alive, things would be different. He is a sage and with time, he will surely be able to change his profession to become a True Elemental or even something else more powerful..."

Fang Yuan rubbed the Mountain River Pearl and remained silent.

The removal of the dream dao resulted in a devastating outcome for the dream masters. However, this world had much more potential compared to the others and with time, people would surely be able to accomplish much with other daos.

Unfortunately, this was all that was lacking!

Unless these people were to train in isolation like The Ancient One, most of them would surely need to take some time to adapt. Of course, these sages already had a headstart and might even be able to completely change their profession in a short span of a hundred days to become a powerful being of another kind.

Even so, dream masters no longer belonged to this world.

"The 3 sages of the allied forces will at most become 3 True Elementals and the remaining dream masters might cultivate in other professions to preserve their own combat power. However, this will only ensure the existence of dream masters. There would surely be a great number of casualties after all of these!"

Fang Yuan sighed. He entered the Mountain River Pearl with his spiritual will, looking to scan Shang Hou's corpse.

"If there is any hope, it will be on this person's body!"

When Fang Yuan was on the battlefield, why did he target Shang Hou first even though his nemesis, Li Qingmian was right in front

of him?

This was because Shang Hou was a powerful magical clone of a person from the Demonic Heart Realm! He had to have other daos which made use of dream elemental force!

Fang Yuan did not know how powerful his special ability was then and assumed that the dream dao was over. He even thought of changing his profession!

With the foundations as a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master, Fang Yuan would surely be able to quickly restore his cultivation with another dao that involved dream elemental force.

Therefore, his first target was Shang Hou and he knew that he had to kill Shang Hou!

Why did he not leave a hint of Shang Hou's soul to grill it for answers?

Fang Yuan wanted to mind his own business. Why would he pit himself against a monster from the Demonic Heart Realm? He didn't want to risk his own life!

He would rather kill Shang Hou and reap treasures off him, even if there might possibly be nothing for him to reap. At least, this option was the safer one.

"If there is nothing on Shang Hou's corpse, I shall then pay a visit to the secret treasury of the royal family one day... Unfortunately, by then, I would have been too exhausted to continue anything. Considering that the Imperial Court is destroyed and the royal family is killed, it is likely that the treasures have already been stolen..."

Fang Yuan rubbed his forehead but did not feel regretful.

After all, this was his final plan only if everything went wrong.

Now that he had realised that still had his foundations as a dream master and could likely restore his cultivation, it was still better to

continue on the dream dao.

"Mmm?"

After a short while, Fang Yuan's eyebrows twitched. With the wave of his hands, there were a few more objects in his carriage.

There were jade pendants, hairpins and a few rings. All of these items had mysterious spiritual auras coming from them.

Even if Shang Hou were to have any protective magical equipment with him, they would all be destroyed by the attacks which had killed him. All of these leftovers were merely supportive treasures which would be able to assist him.

"Is this the... Ten Thousand Year Soul Jade?!"

Fang Yuan held the yellow jade in his hands and seemed to be filled with emotions. "With this jade, I can nourish my soul. Jades the size of a grain of rice is enough for dream masters to fight over and now, I have gotten my hands on such a big piece. He is indeed the Great Ancestor of Da Qian."

After a thorough inspection, Fang Yuan realised that there was nothing wrong about it. After all, such jades could not be carved on or imprinted on by one's spiritual will for it would be rendered useless.

In jubilation, Fang Yuan quickly wore the jade on himself and in that instant, he could feel a soothing sensation in his consciousness.

"This is indeed a great treasure!"

After examining a few other treasures, Fang Yuan realised that something was wrong with the hairpin.

"This hairpin is carved from Soul Resting Wood and there are no arrays or spiritual wills on it. However, the carvings on top..."

The hairpin was a dark purple and there were gold streaks on it. Similarly, there was no spiritual force coming from it.

However, Fang Yuan quickly activated his Fiery Golden Eyes and magnified the golden streaks. They were word carvings carved by hand and it was a majestic piece of work.

If not for the fact that Fang Yuan had his Fiery Golden Eyes, even powerful beings would not be able to detect anything in it.

"These words... what do they mean?"

After another round of close examination, Fang Yuan exclaimed.

For Shang Hou to protect such information with these means would mean that these pieces of information were extremely important. Unfortunately, Fang Yuan could not understand a single word on the hairpin.

These golden words had a weird appearance and each character had many strokes. In fact, the words appeared 3-dimensional and after a long time, Fang Yuan started to feel a little dizzy.

"Could this be the language of Demonic Heart! Words of the Demonic Heart Realm?"

Fang Yuan was utterly speechless. He quickly scanned across a few other objects, classified them and kept them for the future.

"Master!"

Extreme Darkness sounded shocked. "There is a large group of refugees ahead!"

"Mmm?!"

Fang Yuan pulled the curtains apart and saw waves of people flooded around, as though he was flowing through a river. With a straight face, these people seemed to be in a great shock.

"The disaster of the Inner Demons!"

With a sigh, he gazed towards Extreme Darkness and realised that she was extremely fortunate.

Since Fang Yuan could not understand the language of the

Demonic Heart, if he were to discover any new techniques, he would surely test them on her.

After all, this girl was the magical clone of Extreme Darkness. Now that her true physical body was dead, she would unknowingly inherit the fate energy of Extreme Darkness and her future would be limitless.

But for now, she had just narrowly missed a disaster.

"The county city ahead is plagued with Demon Spirits. Quickly run for your lives!"

Extreme Darkness blocked the path of an old man which then impatiently cautioned her of the dangers ahead with a look of fear.

The group of refugees gathered around the carriage and a few of them were martial artists equipped with weapons. They seemed hostile.

"The opening of the Bone Door had not only brought in a lot of dream elemental force, it had also brought in the Demon Spirits from the Demonic Heart Realm!"

Fang Yuan seemed to know what was happening ahead.

The Demon Spirits of the Demonic Heart Realm would feed on sentient beings and be extremely hardy. They also had the ability to split into many physical entities.

Even if Shang Hou would not admit, it would be the truth that these Demon Spirits were the foundation of the Demonic Heart Realm!

This would mean that the powerful beings of the Demonic Heart Realm might have evolved from these Demon Spirits.

Now that the Demon Spirits were released into Da Qian, it was akin to fishes being released into the water. Riding on the fact that Da Qian was already in chaos, the spread of this epidemic would be accelerated.



'To think about it, the destruction of the Imperial Court and the loss of order in society and even the uprising of power for Wu Yue and Zhang Jin were due to the fact that dream masters were powerful. Now that dream masters had fallen, everything that came with them would be destroyed... Armies would be destroyed and life would be slowly wiped out. This is the uprising of the Demon Spirits. If they are allowed to evolve from a few powerful beings, they would really cause chaos in Da Qian.'

Fang Yuan sighed and knew what the world would become in the near future. "Is this doomsday?"

If dream masters were still around, even if they were weakened, the sages would be able to lead the societies into a period of peace.

However, now that there were no sages and even powerful beings were all either dead or severely injured, the realm had minimal resistance against such foreign attacks. The future was uncertain.

"Let's go!"

Fang Yuan waved his hands.

"Wait a minute! Leave the carriage and the lady behind!"

The surrounding martial artists could no longer hold back. With a shout, they approached Fang Yuan. "Otherwise... Beware of my knife!"

"Really..."

Fang Yuan was speechless. Looking at the elegant but helpless Extreme Darkness, he held his forehead in confusion. "No... I must quickly improve her cultivation. Otherwise, I would really tire out by doing everything myself?"

In reality, Fang Yuan only had himself to blame for all these. If he had allowed Extreme Darkness to keep some of her own powers, she would not have ended up so helpless.

"Tell me! How would you like to die?"

With a solemn look, Fang Yuan gazed at the martial artist.

Suddenly, Fang Yuan could feel a vibration which made his expression change.

"Kid, watch your words!"

The martial artist hollered and suddenly, he froze in the air as he held on to his own throat.

"Boss? Are you okay?"

A martial artist rushed up to investigate what was going wrong.

"Whoosh!"

With a glow of blood, few of their heads started to roll on the ground.

"Hehe!"

This martial artist opened his mouth wide, revealing two tentacle-like arms. With a sticky green fluid around its tentacles, it started to sweep around.

"Demon!"

"He is possessed by the demons!"

The refugees became unsettled and quickly fled in all directions.

"Burp!"

The tentacles started to stretch outwards, about 20 feet long before revealing a sharp tongue within it. With that, it swallowed the corpses on the ground whole.

"Whoosh!"

A small weird-looking egg emerged from the tentacles and it appeared to be looking for a place to hide.

"The disaster of the Demon Spirits!"

Fang Yuan witnessed the entire scene and became vexed.

# Chapter 490: Pressured

---

"Demon!"

"Run quickly!"

In an instant, the crowd around the carriage dispersed quickly with occasional shrieks coming from the martial artists, as though they were trying to avoid a plague.

No! The effects of the Demon Spirit were scarier than a plague!

"Ah!"

A tentacle struck towards Extreme Darkness and a whisker started to grow out from the egg on the tip of the tentacle. With that, the screams of a girl were heard.

"Pa!"

Fang Yuan frowned. With a fist, he broke the tentacle in mid-air.

The tentacles and the egg exploded, tainting the ground black. Within moments, the black fluid started to corrode into the ground, leaving many small holes. A thick white smoke started to billow from these holes.

"Bloop! Bloop!"

The mutated martial artist started to transform. His head slowly turned into that of a large octopus. As his tentacles continue to grow, he was looking for a way to escape.

"Heavenly Eagle Claw!"

With a casual flick, the elemental energy in the air gathered, forming a huge palm which pressed down on the martial artist.

"Pa!"

Like swatting a fly, this mutated martial artist was flattened into a pile of flesh.

However, in mid-air, a grey and illusionary shadow started to

appear. It had the shape of an octopus. With two bloodshot eyes gazing about, it seemed like it was merely a projected imagery.

"Is this the Demon Spirit? Does it lie between being illusionary and real?"

Fang Yuan closed his eyes. He could sense anger, fear, cruelty and other absurd emotions, but there was no much wisdom in this entity.

"According to Shang Hou, this thing is only the most basic life form in the Demonic Heart Realm!"

Playfully, Fang Yuan toyed around with the elemental force around the octopus, giving it no chance of escaping.

"I'm afraid that normal knives will not be able to harm it! Even the elemental force from a Wu Zong might only be able to affect such a Demon Spirit by a little... This is indeed a higher dimensional life form!"

After a round of experimenting, this octopus did not seem to fear Fang Yuan as it started to stretch its tentacles towards him.

"Courting death!"

With a frown, he struck his fist out.

"Bang!"

A huge hole appeared on the body of the octopus and there was a terrifying scream coming from its spiritual will.

However, Fang Yuan did not appear satisfied with it. "Only the spiritual will of a True Divine will be able to injure or even kill it. Normal Meridian Opening Wu Zongs will only be able to defend themselves, let alone kill it!"

Only powerful beings were able to deal with these demons. If normal martial artists were to encounter them, they would only be killed.

"Could this be due to the fact that they have a source of energy

with a higher quality than ours? They have the purest form of dream elemental force..."

Fang Yuan sighed as he picked up a silver knife and stroked it.

"Buzz! Buzz!"

Immediately, a silvery glow started to appear on the knife.

"Extreme Darkness, go ahead and chop it up!"

He passed the knife to Extreme Darkness and instructed her firmly.

"Yes!"

Extreme Darkness gritted her teeth and walked up. With a single slice, she managed to chop off one of its tentacles.

"Screech!"

After its death, the entire Demon Spirit started to melt. The severed tentacle quickly disappeared, turning into dense dream elemental force which dissipated into the air.

"Indeed..."

Fang Yuan nodded his head and understood everything.

These Demon Spirits were able to feed on the negative emotions of humans and were able to quickly split themselves. Furthermore, while possessing someone, their true Demon Spirit body would be able to remain immune to attacks. Only a powerful being or someone with control over dream elemental force would be able to control these spirits.

After all, the dream elemental force projected into Da Qian from the Demonic Heart Realm was of a higher quality than what Da Qian originally had!

"It's a pity that dream masters are now useless and are all in hiding. Not only are the dream masters much weaker now, they are not likely to be effective against dealing with these Demon

Spirits..."

"However, these Demon Spirits will not be able to turn illusionary after possessing a body. Therefore, normal humans will be able to deal with them. Even if an army of 100,000 of them were to enter Da Qian, only a few hundred of them would have the ability to turn illusionary."

If not for Fang Yuan, these refugees would all be possessed taken over by the octopus Demon Spirit to become an army of demons.

At this point in time, it was hard to say if any one of them would mutate into an octopus in the future.

If such disaster were to continue on, Da Qian would be too chaotic and ultimately, the entire realm would be taken over! Everywhere would be living hell!

Fang Yuan shook his head. He quickly returned to his carriage and ordered Extreme Darkness to continue the journey.

"Master, where are we going now?"

Extreme Darkness rode her horse as she asked with curiosity.

"Divine Lotus Heavenly Pond! The headquarters of Divine Lotus!"

...

Divine Lotus Mountain.

This mountain was part of a huge mountainous ridge. It stretched into the skies and the peak of the mountain was covered in snow all year round.

On the peak, there was a huge and clear lake. Gold and white lotus flowers bloom within the lake and it was a dreamy paradise.

This was the Divine Lotus Heavenly Pond, where the headquarters of the Divine Lotus Cult was.

In the legends, the Divine Lotus Heavenly Pond would continuously shift its position. If not for it, the headquarters

would have been destroyed by the Hidden Dragon Guards during the ultimate war.

The reality was close to what was heard about the pond. There was a shifting array in the middle of the pond and everything was extremely majestic.

Unfortunately, only a Sage would be able to manipulate such an array.

With the death of Lord Yin and the weakening of the few other powerful beings, no one was able to manipulate it ever since.

This time, due to the war, Lord Yin had shifted the entire cult to a place somewhere close to the Middle Region. This was right in the centre of the demon disasters.

"Roar! Roar!"

"Keke!"

At the foot of the mountain, black silhouettes of a beast army had gathered.

There were 8-legged spiders and giant-eyed octopuses among them as they recklessly rushed towards the peak of the mountain.

Above the beast army, a group of black silhouettes shrieked. They were covered with a black ghostly fire. With a long fiery tail, they continuously patrolled in the skies as they made their way towards the Heavenly Pond.

"How dare you, beasts?"

In the middle of the Heavenly Pond, gold lotus flowers started to bloom, releasing a colourful glow which started to spread in the skies above the pond. A building within the Heavenly Pond became well-protected under the colourful layer of protection.

The building was built from bamboo and had an elegant vibe. It stood on a piece of huge lotus leaf and was a display of delicate workmanship.

A deity-like lady wearing a white veil and a handsome and gentlemanly male disciple stood on the huge lotus leaf. Their faces were filled with fear.

"What should we do? This place is surrounded by them!"

"Sage is not here and we are unable to manipulate the 9 Turns Transferences Array. We won't last long if we were to depend on the 9 Lotus Divine Array to protect us!"

One of the disciples screamed and was at lost.

Previously, they were all Illusionary Divine dream masters and were once involved in attacking the Imperial Court. Such an attack from wild beasts used to mean nothing to them.

But now, it was a life and death situation!

"Where is Elder Green Lotus?"

This elder was the last powerful being of the cult and had the cultivation of a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master. Ever since the fall of dream masters, this elder had always been in isolation.

"Elder is trying his best to restore his cultivation..."

A few of them tried to explain.

"Hmph... I'm sure all of you have heard that sound, right? If the piece of news is true and that even sages are unable to maintain their statuses, do you think an elder can do it?"

A middle-aged lady started to laugh hysterically. "Haha... we will all die here! Die here, I say!"

She appeared crazed and it was evident that she was too stressed and was pushed off her limits.

Everyone on the lotus leaf remained silent.

Suddenly, a female disciple started to sob and influenced the rest around her to do the same.



Thinking about how they used to be the most powerful people in the realm, none of them could accept reality now!

Needless to say, their servants were revolting against them as well and had already wreaked havoc in the headquarters. If not for the few arrays and magical equipment, none of them would be able to survive until today.

Now, against such a large army of beasts, it was the final straw.

"Sisters!"

Amidst all the sobbing, Liu Mengmei stood out. "Be strong and never give up. We still have hope!"

"Haha... hope?"

The crazy lady started to scream. "Even Sage is dead and our friends from the alliance have abandoned us. What is the hope you speak of?"

"Rumble!"

Her words were like an atomic bomb. As soon as she finished her sentence, everyone started to wail in despair.

"Lord Yin... Is she dead?"

"That's impossible!"

The disciples were in disbelief and were on the brink of killing each other.

"Rumble!"

The army of beasts was already attacking the protective array and the wavering array finally caught the attention of the dream masters.

"Who is manipulating the protective array now? Quickly assist her!"

Liu Mengmei seemed serious. "As long as we are surviving, we will have hope! Even though we might not be dream masters now,

we are still the ones with potential in this realm. Are we really afraid of not having a future?"

"It's me! I'll add a few crystals to the array!"

A deacon nodded her head and quickly ran towards the array eye.

At this point of time, Liu Mengmei remained composed and started to delegate work. Finally, there was order and the other remaining disciples nodded their head, impressed at her composure.

Many reserved Divine Ladies had already left the competition to become the Divine Lady. Liu Mengmei was all the while the last few.

However, now that the few reserved Divine Ladies had left for the Jade Capital to fight the war, she had risen to the occasion, taking up the responsibility of being the one making the decisions!

"Rumble!"

At this point in time, a streak of spiritual light shot out from the main hall. It was a weird-looking carriage with wings that flew towards the array.

"Buzz!"

An order plate flew out and the array froze for a moment before revealing an opening.

The flying carriage continued its way, bypassing the array through the opening.

"It's Elder Green Lotus! He is controlling the Heavenly Boat to flee!"

One of the deacons pulled his moustache in anger. "Damn it, the Elder's order plate is the only thing which can pause the 9 Lotus Divine Array!"

"Jerk!"

Liu Mengmei gritted her teeth. She knew that this elder was not thinking of a plan for the cult all the while in isolation. Instead, he was cultivating as a spiritual knight in seclusion. Now that he was able to control the flying carriage, he took the opportunity to flee.

He not only fled but also paused the 9 Lotus Divine Array, exposing the entire cult to the dangers outside.

"Keke!"

Seeing the opening, many beasts started to flood into the Heavenly Pond, beginning their killing spree!

# Chapter 491: Help

---

"Lord, we are too late!"

A horse carriage slowly approached the foot of the mountain. Extreme Darkness looked at the heavenly pond surrounded by demonic beasts and sighed.

"No, it's not too late!"

The area between Fang Yuan's eyebrows twitched and he then suddenly groaned. Countless of energy currents gathered behind his back and turned into the lofty Chaos Giant.

"Roar!"

The giant hollered and struck out its palm towards the space in front of him as though it was swatting a fly. The palm smacked down a stream of light.

"Fwoosh!"

Within the stream of light, a winged horse carriage cracked into pieces and a ravaged figure could be seen falling down from it.

"You are from Divine Lotus Cult, right? How dare you escape secretly? Tell me, what's the situation like inside?"

Fang Yuan's brows frowned. This middle-aged scholar person in front of him had the cultivation of a 4th or 5th Tier spiritual knight but that was all. If Fang Yuan did not control his strength just now, this person would have turned into a pile of minced meat.

"You are... Fang Yuan!"

The middle-aged scholar was astounded when he saw Fang Yuan's face. There was even a glow hatred shining from the bottom of his eyes.

"Oh? You know me?"

Fang Yuan quickly recalled information about Divine Lotus Cult and suddenly smiled, "Oh I know, you are Elder Green Lotus! Reserved Divine Lady Meng Lian's father?"

That woman was narrow-minded and petty; she was long killed by Fang Yuan at 9 Extremes Mountain.

As her father, Elder Green Lotus was definitely furious with Fang Yuan. If only he had the proof and that the big war was not happening, the two of them would have definitely fought against each other fiercely.

"Why are you here?"

Green Lotus looked at Fang Yuan with mixed emotions.

Although this person was closely related to the death of his daughter and he even suspected that he was her killer, but now, he was no longer a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine powerful being. Whereas Fang Yuan was a martial artist True Divine, the tables had turned! He was now weaker and Fang Yuan was stronger.

"Nothing, I'm just here to receive Divine Lotus Cult's inheritance!"

Within the two sects who lost their sages, Source Seeking Sect's headquarters was uncertain. Fang Yuan made use of Liu Mengmei to find out where Divine Lotus Heavenly Pond was located and thus, he naturally came over here.

The treasures of a sage's cult were very attractive to Fang Yuan.

"How dare you!"

Although Elder Green Lotus was abandoning his sect in the last moments to flee away, he could not help but feel enraged when he heard Fang Yuan brazenly said that.

"Oh, right, since you are abandoning your cult to flee, you must have brought along lots of good things! Take them out!"

Fang Yuan glanced at Green Lotus and smiled suddenly.

"How about we make a deal?!"

Elder Green Lotus' expression suddenly became calm, "You bring me away from here and I will hand over some of Divine Lotus Cult's rare treasures and secret collections!"

"Roar!"

The attacking beast army had already discovered this unusual situation and sent over thousands of beasts.

"Sounds like a good deal, but don't you know I'm your enemy who killed your daughter?"

Fang Yuan had a mocking look on his face.

"Even if my daughter is dead, I can still have another one! So how? Are you agreeing or not?"

Green Lotus's face twitched.

"Such a good deal, of course I am... not going to agree!"

Fang Yuan shrugged his shoulders, "You could have obviously taken everything, why would you only take some of it. You think I'm dumb?"

"Fang Yuan, you tyrant!"

Elder Green Lotus hollered and a few rings on his fingers suddenly sparkled with an eye-catching green radiance.

An invisible force landed on Fang Yuan's body in the blink of an eye.

Immediately, runes appeared one by one which represented the powers such as, 'imprison', 'weaken', 'pain' et cetera.

"You shall stay here and die then!"

Elder Green Lotus quickly retreated. A pair of illusory wings appeared behind his robes as he suddenly soared to the skies.

"Indeed, the Divine Lotus Cult has quite some hidden treasures!"

Fang Yuan looked at the rune chains on his body and shook his head and body casually.

"Crackle!"

A firecracker-like noise erupted as the rune chains on his bodies exploded immediately.

"Come down now!"

Fang Yuan then reached out his right hand and the wings behind Elder Green Lotus exploded at once. Elder Green Lotus wailed and fell hard onto the ground. His head cracked and blood gushed out.

"Impossible! How could you break free so fast! Even if you're a True Divine, it's impossible!"

Elder Green Lotus shouted. His expression was filled with disbelief.

"The weak will always question the world while the strong would only force the world to adapt to him!"

Fang Yuan walked forward and touched the area between Green Lotus' eyebrows with his finger.

"Thud!"

This powerful being elder quivered as he became soft and collapsed at once.

After being deprived of their dao, even powerful beings like dream master sages turned into a pile of dog shit if they did not have any other cultivation.

Fang Yuan had already slowly accustomed to such a situation. He then sighed and looked at the army of demonic monsters that were starting to surround them.

"All of you want to die?"

Fang Yuan coldly hollered and the Chaos Giant behind him immediately let out a loud roar.

"Rumble!"

True Divine levels of mind pressure spread to all sides of the surrounding from Fang Yuan as the centre.

"Keke!"

The attacking demonic beasts were a kind of 'human head spider body' monster. As they were suppressed by such a strong mental pressure that was almost physical, one by one, their eyes turned white as they fainted and died.

"Let's go! To the heavenly pond!"

Fang Yuan strode forward and Extreme Darkness followed closely.

"This... this is a True Divine? Da Qian's True Divine is so strong?"

Waves of demonic monsters charged after them with no fear at all. However, the moment any of them entered Fang Yuan's 1,000-mile radius, they would faint and die immediately with no exception. Extreme Darkness could not help but be very astonished as she watched.

"Keke!"

After a humongous beast died, a giant eye with eight wings emerged from its body. Its figure laid in between reality and the illusionary. It then fiercely charged towards Fang Yuan and Extreme Darkness.

"Bang!"

Fang Yuan casually struck a punch and the Chaos Giant behind him did the same action.

Under the loud bang, this Demon Spirit erupted into a pile of smoke at once.

"Squeak! Squeak!"

Such a scene evidently scared the other Demon Spirits.



When Fang Yuan moved forward again, a large pathway was cleared in front of him as no other Demon Spirit dared to block him again.

Within the heavenly pond, Liu Mengmei felt the surrounding forces became slightly weaker.

"There's someone"

"Someone's here to save us!"

A few female disciples could not help but to cheer as they saw a hole appear in the cluster of beasts and that a green coloured giant was slowly walking through it.

"It's him!"

The moment Liu Mengmei saw that figure, she felt as though her heart almost jumped out of her chest.

"How many of you all are left?"

Fang Yuan arrived at the headquarters of Divine Lotus Cult and asked directly.

"All of us! All here!"

Liu Mengmei did not reveal she knew Fang Yuan. She went forward to talk to Fang Yuan as she was the chosen leader, "You are..."

"I am Fang Yuan! Here to take over Divine Lotus Cult's inheritance!"

Fang Yuan smiled slightly. He did not have the hobby of saving others for no rewards.

"You all have two choices right now! First is to seek refuge under me! Second is to become the monsters' food!"

"You came to... conscript us?"

The disciples and deacons of Divine Lotus Cult had their mouths agape. They felt as though the world was collapsing and falling

apart.

Since when could a True Divine declare that he wants to conscript a sage's sect? If this happened in the past, they would have felt ridiculous, but now...

"As long as you can save us and get us out!"

As Liu Mengmei was undercover, she immediately agreed.

Seeing such, the other disciples wanted to say something but did not retort after all.

In the face of death, their pride and sense of shame were close to disappearing.

"Great!"

Fang Yuan nodded his head, "Bring along your sect's important texts and treasures and prepare to transfer them over to me!"

"No way! Us Divine Lotus Cult rather die than to submit!"

An old grey-haired female deacon held onto her walking stick with an intense attitude, "Liu Mengmei! How dare you side with an outsider?"

"Bang!"

At the next woman, this woman was grabbed by Fang Yuan tightly, "Since, you rather die than to submit, then you shall die! Who else is not submitting?"

As the disciples watched this deacon's skull roll on the floor, they became silent at once and none of them dared to resist as they cooperated and allowed Liu Mengmei to organise them.

"The monsters are attacking again!"

Suddenly, accompanied with a long screech, the beast army that stopped just now began to slowly inch forward again.

"Hmph, how silly!"

Fang Yuan took a deep breath and the Chaos Giant behind him

became even more solid. He then suddenly opened his mouth and roared, "Zha!!!"

"Rumble!"

Invisible soundwaves spread everywhere. Large amounts of ripples formed throughout the entire heavenly pond

"Thud! Thud!"

Rows of monsters fell to the ground one by one immediately. They did not even have any time to defend themselves.

"Pak!"

A disciple of Divine Lotus Cult could no longer hold it anymore as she felt an immense pressure inside her heart. The Fang Yuan in front of her seemed to become larger and mightier than ever like a god which caused her to kneel down.

"Pak! Pak!"

Like domino tiles, more and more disciples chose to kneel down to express their submission.

If they were still Illusionary Divine dream masters, they could naturally defend themselves against such mental pressure. Unfortunately, they were like fish meat now and were forcefully injected with the mental hint to submit due to Fang Yuan's martial artist True Divine willpower.

"Liu Mengmei!"

"Yes, Lord!"

Liu Mengmei looked at Fang Yuan and her gaze immediately became soft and gentle.

"From today onwards, you are their leader! Now, do a headcount immediately and prepare to leave!"

Fang Yuan ordered.

With Fang Yuan's prestige and their appointed mission, the

remaining disciples quickly followed the orders. The results of the organisation were out, "We only have 100 plus people left and most of them are disciples who just entered the cult....."

Liu Mengmei reported despairingly, "Other deacons and disciples have either ran away or are dead..."

"These are enough!"

Fang Yuan wanted to build up his own force and was actually not interested in the higher echelons of Divine Lotus Cult. It was all perfect now, "Bring along as many texts and treasures and follow me to leave!"

"Yes!"

After all, the relocation of 100 people was not an easy task.

After an hour, the group of people lugged their stuff and followed behind Fang Yuan trepidly as they entered the beast army.

The nearby demonic monsters flexed their sharp claws and teeth but could not get near them at all. Occasionally, there were a few Demon Spirits who could not resist charging forward and they were exploded by Fang Yuan's divine fist from afar.

The impression of such strong martial arts was immediately imprinted in the hearts of these 100 plus people. Seeds of submission soon began to sprout.

"Squeak!"

Suddenly, a long screech could be heard from deep within the beast army.

Accompanied by this noise, ten over Demon Spirits appeared and instantly charged towards Fang Yuan's team.

# Chapter 492: Demon Spirit

---

Although the might of a True Divine could easily overpower normal demons, this did not include Demon Spirits!

After the high-pitched exclamation, 10 odd-looking Demon Spirits appeared at once before targeting the group of them.

"These beasts are being led by a sentient being!"

With a laugh, Fang Yuan struck his fist out. "Chaos Divine Fist!"

"Rumble!"

The giant behind him struck its fist out as though it attempted to split the earth beneath its feet. An illusionary spiritual territory appeared, trapping 10 over Demon Spirits within it.

After a huge explosion, the Demon Spirits disintegrated, turning into a current of air. Even the weakest of their wills were being crushed by Fang Yuan's martial arts willpower, giving it no chance to revive.

"I've found you!"

Fang Yuan hurriedly made his way 300 yards into the swarm of Demon Spirits and disappeared among them.

"Chirp! Chirp!"

A sharp voice was heard once more and the demons around started to surround Fang Yuan without fear.

"Get lost!"

The Chaos Giant roared once more and the low-tiered demons were shocked to death.

The earth beneath them sunk down and there was a visible crater.

A few more unique-looking demons were surrounding what seemed to be a silhouette in them.

Fang Yuan was confused for the simple fact that the leader of these beasts had the form of a human.

"A demon in the form of a human?"

He walked forward and in a single leap, he arrived before this demon.

"Sikutumen, Moderik!"

Seeing Fang Yuan making his way in, the human-formed demon opened his mouth and mumbled something which sounded like a curse.

In an instant, two huge and black illusionary hands appeared in mid-air. Eyes lined the black hands and all of them were glaring at Fang Yuan.

"Roar! Roar!"

The two-headed demons guarding the human-form demon roared in anger. Flesh started to grow out from their back before exploding, revealing their true form: 3-headed 6-armed giants. Without hesitation, they rushed towards Fang Yuan.

The human-form leader nimbly leapt onto a carpet with wings as though it was about to flee.

"Screech!"

The eyes on the hands opened up and shot out a streak of light, which had the ability to slow, poison and corrode any adversary.

"This power... this makes him almost as powerful as a 9th Tier spiritual knight!"

Streaks of light landed on Fang Yuan's body but were swiftly deflected by a strong pulse of energy coming from Fang Yuan's blood.

With outstretched hands, Fang Yuan swung his claws out. "Heavenly Eagle Claw!"

"Screech!"

The giant hands fell to the ground in an instant.

The two 3-headed 6-armed demons were trapped by the fallen hands and could no longer move.

"Hadouken!"

Witnessing this scene, that human-form demon started to sound even weirder.

As he cursed, the flesh carpet started to flap its wings as it accelerated itself up into the sky.

"Come down!"

Fang Yuan brought his hands together and the Chaos Giant behind him mimicked his action. Full of energy, the two gigantic palms were forcefully clapped together.

"Buzz!"

The flesh carpet was caught in the giant's palm and was subsequently pressed on the ground.

"Are you still thinking of escaping?"

Fang Yuan walked up and grabbed the human-form demon.

The demon did not seem any different from a normal human being except for its dark skin and ruby-like eyes which glittered under the sun.

As it noticed Fang Yuan grabbing its arm, it smiled before it began to inflate like a balloon.

"Pop!"

It had chosen to kill itself and a black streak of energy shot away.

"I've said, no running away!"

In a flash, the giant hands seemed to have stretched beyond the boundaries of what was true and what was illusionary. It had

directly held the black streak of energy in its hands which then transfigured into a black shadow.

Fang Yuan wiped off the sweat on his forehead. "It seems like you don't understand human language!"

He clenched his fist and struck squarely towards the black shadow's face. Silvery dream elemental force started to stain Fang Yuan's fist as the black shadow wailed in pain.

"Moyana! Moyana!"

"Human language, I say!"

Fang Yuan continued to brutally assault it to the point where it was on the brink of death. "If you don't speak human language, you shall die!"

"St... stop!"

A hoarse voice sounded in Fang Yuan's spiritual will. It was a very simple tone as though a kid was still learning how to speak.

"Look at you, if you've tried earlier all of these wouldn't have happened!"

Fang Yuan kept his fist and gazed at the black shadow. "Don't try to run or I'll give you another beating!"

"I... I dare not!"

This black shadow transformed into the form of a Demon Spirit. He was a skinny-looking boy with a pair of black wings. With fear, he gazed towards Fang Yuan and especially at Fang Yuan's fist.

"What is your name?"

"I... I cannot say!"

"You're courting death!"

Fang Yuan turned serious and swung his fist up.

"Rumble! Rumble!"



The ground shook and even Liu Mengmei and Extreme Darkness couldn't bear to witness the scene.

This was no longer a fight but a bullying session.

Finally, before the Demon Spirit was about to dissipate, a weak voice was heard in Fang Yuan's consciousness. "Motana Aligu Saya Todoker..."

This name was extremely long with a more than 30 syllables. Reading the name was like reading a chant.

As soon as Fang Yuan heard its name, he felt as though he was now able to control the life and death of this Demon Spirit, commanding it to do whatever he wished.

"Now I know! It seems that you guys are similar to the evil demons in the legends. If anyone were to know your name, you will become enslaved to that person!"

He gazed at the shuddering Demon Spirit and casually commanded it. "I'll call you Ado. Why are you attacking this place?"

"Because... there's delicious food here..."

Ado the Demon Spirit shuddered as he replied Fang Yuan. "Only by eating will we be able to become stronger..."

It was evident that this demon was new. Although it had eaten quite a number of humans, it was still not fluent in the language of Da Qian.

However, Fang Yuan was patient and after a few exchanges, he could finally understand what it was trying to say.

According to Ado, it was originally a lowly You Spirit of the Demonic Heart Realm. At the opening of the Bone Door, it was sucked into this realm. It had gained the ability to think for itself and even had a name after eating quite a sizeable number of humans.

As long as there was enough food for them, any You Spirit would be able to evolve into potentially anything.

Therefore, after detecting all the 'delicious food' here, Ado decided to lead the other Demon Spirits and formed a demon army to surround the Divine Lotus Heavenly Pond.

To normal demons, the fear and flesh of normal humans were the best types of food. However, if any high-tiered Demon Spirit wanted to evolve, it would require food of even higher quality!

For instance, a high-tiered cultivator!

"Therefore, you started to eye this place. You are quite smart!"

"Do we have a lot of beings like you in this world?" Fang Yuan went straight to the point.

"With enough time and energy, any Demon Spirit will be able to achieve what I am and from there gain the ability to lead and control other low-tiered Demon Spirits!"

According to Ado, the Demonic Heart Realm was a harsh realm and high-tiered demons would be able to do anything to low-tiered demons.

After evolving, Ado had gained new knowledge and had newfound wisdom. Finally, he had achieved a higher status for himself.

Unfortunately for him, he was now under Fang Yuan's control.

"In the Demonic Heart Realm, normal demons and Demon Spirits are expendable. What cultivation level are you at right now?"

"Modor! If I were to translate it, it should be the level of 'elemental force' in Da Qian."

Ado was extremely careful with his words. It seemed that he had already consumed a few cultivators who had obtained elemental force.

'Is this the power of the Demonic Heart Realm? A small fry who

had just achieved an increase in cultivation is already comparable to a powerful Elemental Opening spiritual knight or Meridian Opening Wu Zong?'

Fang Yuan took in a deep breath as he mulled over the differences between the cultivators from the different realms.

"A final question! Do you recognise this name?"

Thinking about it, Fang Yuan started to draw in mid-air, forming a 3-dimensional rune which resembled a bunch of 3 flowers.

"Eh?"

Ado was shocked and quickly replied. "This is a character in the language of the Demonic Heart Realm. I have knowledge of this. This word means 'the heart of a flower'."

"Very good! You're quite useful. You shall follow me next time!"

Fang Yuan nodded head and was elated. He knew that he could finally translate all the documents and scriptures which Shang Hou had left behind.

"Yes... Master!"

Ado gazed at the two ladies behind and licked his lips. "Can I eat them?"

"No! Unless I allow, you are not to eat anybody! Otherwise, I will beat you to death!"

Fang Yuan twitched his eyebrows. He knew that after scaring Ado, he had to use rewards to motivate him. "Of course... If you are obedient, I will supply you with the energy you need."

"Yes, Master!"

Ado nodded his head innocently as he bit his tongue while gazing at Liu Mengmei.

Such an overbearing demon was only a form of entertainment in the eyes of the powerful.

However, Fang Yuan did not let his guard down.

'Looking at how things are, powerful beings will ultimately evolve from a Demon Spirit if there is enough time. However, the bad thing is that they seem to populate too quickly and are widespread around Da Qian now. It seems like there is no way to get rid of them... The future of mankind seems bleak.'

It was useless to think about all these. Fang Yuan quickly ordered Ado to regain control of the other demons and create a path for his group.

Originally, it would be an arduous task to force a path. However, with Ado's help, everything became simple.

As long as Ado could command its army to surround them at all times, the group of them would be able to avoid a lot of problems while travelling.

If no other demons were stronger than Ado, Ado would be able to easily control the entire army.

"Master, your plan is extremely feasible!"

After hearing Fang Yuan's plan, Ado nodded his head but appeared a little worried. "I would like to create another body. Can I use that?"

A demon bit a corpse in its mouth and dragged it over. It was the corpse of Elder Green Lotus.

"Your taste is rather good. You may use him!"

Fang Yuan nodded his head.

After getting permission from Fang Yuan, Ado turned into a black streak of energy and seeped into Elder Green Lotus.

"Crack!"

A cracking sound was heard from the corpse. The dead corpse started to stand on its feet and its skin started to turn black.

"Is this how Inner Demons possess?"

Fang Yuan frowned as he tossed a bamboo hat over. "Your looks are too scary. From today onwards, follow me closely and never reveal your looks."

"Yes, Master!"

Ado replied with fear and a hint of unjust in his voice.

# Chapter 493: Foundation

---

"Roar!"

"Keke!"

Atop the vast barren lands, a demonic beast army swept across it like a black torrent.

All the human sects and cultivators immediately retreated when they saw them as though they were escaping from a natural disaster.

Thankfully, this army of demonic beasts seemed to have a clear goal in mind. Not only did it chose to travel through the remote wilderness, it did not bother about creating more casualties.

Upon a closer look, beyond the defences of demonic beasts and You Spirits, they would realise that the core of this army was actually a group of carriages with around 100 people.

The disciples of Divine Lotus Cult that were in-charge of reining were terrified and scared at first. But now, they had already slowly gotten used to it. It was as though there was an invisible boundary between the humans and the demonic beasts that ensured the safety.

"Lord!"

The young girl, Extreme Darkness, carried a meal box and entered the carriage. The moment she saw Fang Yuan, she immediately smiled and reported, "Although we were met with a demonic beast army, with Ado in front, they did not suspect us and directly allowed us to leave. With our current speed, we will reach our destination in half a month."

"Great!"

Fang Yuan nodded his head. Liu Mengmei, who was beside him, opened the meal box smilingly and took out a few dishes and the

spiritual rice. She then glared at Extreme Darkness and said, "My husband, your servant is so thoughtful. Can you lend her to me for a few days?"

Extreme Darkness rolled her eyes, "You are just one of Lord's followers, how are you any different from me?"

"You!"

Liu Mengmei raised her eyebrows slightly before she immediately laughed, "Yea... sister, you used to be a respected elder of the Realm Alliance, but now, you have fallen to such a low. This is so indeed so saddening!"

"The two of you, enough! Leave!"

Fang Yuan was rather speechless as he saw such a scene.

For some unknown reason, this two women did not get along the moment they met each other. Throughout the journey, they were fighting against each other.

Luckily, the two of them knew their limits and did not provoke Fang Yuan.

"Hmph!"

The two women stared at each other, bowed and left. It was as though they were competing for love.

Truth be told, Fang Yuan felt good receiving these acts of care along the journey.

Fang Yuan smiled and quickly finished his meal. His hand glowed and a wooden hairpin appeared. The tiny golden inscriptions on it immediately became Demonic Heart Realm texts under his Fiery Golden Eyes.

During this period of time where Fang Yuan was travelling, other than meditating and trying to explore and recover his actualised dream world, he spent all his time on studying and analysing the Demonic Heart Realm writings.

After Fang Yuan's teaching, ADO's spiritual awareness had already become the same as a normal person. ADO also gained a real name and was doing his utmost in teaching Fang Yuan the writings.

Currently, the texts on the entire wooden hairpin were already largely deciphered.

"The Spiritual Will Steel Seal Technique!"

Fang Yuan sighed and felt rather conflicted.

This Spiritual Will Steel Seal was Shang Hou's supreme divine technique. With it, he controlled three sages and ten over powerful beings. It was the secret controlling technique which led to the establishment of Da Qian dynasty.

Unfortunately, its foundation still laid in the path of dream masters. Hence, after the path was deprived, it immediately returned to its original form.

"Actually... the path of dream masters is nothing much, but this technique, it's too powerful..."

Fang Yuan pondered, "Shang Hou was a talented genius. He might have even added the theories of Demonic Heart Realm into his cultivation. His Illusionary Divine stage was different from others, he completely gave up on the power to create things and open up hollows. Instead, he gambled all his resources on this steel seal. Thus, at his peak, he could control sages!"

Fang Yuan was left with a bit of his dream dao foundation and could totally start over.

And this steel seal technique was the supreme divine technique in establishing a force. Unfortunately, he had to give up on the 8 Gates Sword Array in order to go on this disadvantaged single path. This made Fang Yuan extremely conflicted and undecided.

"Nevermind... dream dao is about creating endless possibilities. How could I give up an entire forest for a stalk of grass?"



Fang Yuan put down the wooden hairpin and felt as though his soul had just undergone another cleansing.

...

Half a month later.

"Lord, we've arrived at Golden Sun Prosperous Land!"

Extreme Darkness respectfully drawn opened the carriage curtain.

"Let Meng Tian and Meng Guang come and see me!"

Fang Yuan laid on the soft chair and calmly instructed.

"Lord, you are finally back!"

A few hundred people were escorted by a group of demonic beasts and they trepidly came forward. After they saw Fang Yuan, the two Wu Zongs in front looked happy immediately.

At first, they thought they were dead for sure after they realised they were surrounded by an army of over 10,000 demonic beasts. However, when this Lord suddenly appeared, it was as though they were brought from hell to heaven.

"Abandon this prosperous land!"

Fang Yuan calmly ordered, "Bring along all the resources and relocate with me!"

Currently, Da Qian World was in chaos. There were refugees, rebel soldiers, martial artists, demonic beasts... Fang Yuan was too lazy to protect all his related people one by one; it was much more convenient to gather them together.

"Yes, Lord!"

Meng Tian and Meng Guang accepted with no hesitation. In actual fact, this period of time they spent on maintaining the prosperous land had already exhausted them.

Recently, there was some news from Three Suns Sect which

made them know that there would be no good outcome if they defended this prosperous land until the very last.

With Fang Yuan's order, everything was back to order.

"Lord, where are we heading to next?"

Liu Mengmei looked at the people moving and the growing size of the group and asked rather puzzledly.

"9 Extremes Mountain!"

Fang Yuan had already planned everything from the start, "I intend to build up a force there! There's no better place to set up our base."

...

All sorts of restrictions still shone brightly on 9 Extremes Mountain.

With the current chaotic situation outside, such a powerful restriction represented some sort of safety instead.

Until this day when Fang Yuan arrived.

"With 9 Extremes Mountain's characteristic, as long as we heavily guard a few entrances, it would be a natural safe haven... If I can think of that, others can too!"

Fang Yuan arrived at an entrance and immediately saw a defensive array.

"Who's that? This is the dream master alliance's territory!"

Within the array, a few figures appeared. There were dream masters from Realm Alliance, Baize Mountain and Evil Divine Sect.

"What dream master alliance?"

Fang Yuan laughed and the figures behind him rushed to the skies, "From today onwards, this is my territory!"

"Roar!"

Behind Fang Yuan, the army of demonic beasts appeared and they looked extremely terrifying.

"Surrender? Or die?"

Under the loud questioning, the dream masters within the array turned pale at once.

...

In front of absolute power, this small and friable alliance immediately cracked like an egg.

After Fang Yuan assumed complete control, he then knew some stuff. As their communications were cut off, the dream masters here had to join hands and they nominated three dream masters with other cultivations to become the temporary leaders. They then quickly decided to retreat into 9 Extremes Mountain.

When they saw Fang Yuan, a powerful being, came over, they immediately surrendered and became one of Fang Yuan's subordinates.

Even though Fang Yuan proclaimed he already had no ties with Realm Alliance, he was still a True Divine after all!

In such tumultuous times, there would only be hope for survival if one followed the strong.

After Fang Yuan easily took over this place, he then found out the dream masters of the 5 Grand Organisations were living terrible lives.

Those who still had their sage were still slightly better off as they still had their main backbone. Whereas, Source Seeking Sect had long disbanded and there was nothing else to say about Divine Lotus Cult as the last group of disciples of texts were all in his carriage.

"The last correspondence was already one month ago?"

Within 9 Extremes Mountain, Fang Yuan chose a giant peak. He

displayed his True Divine cultivation and cleared off all hidden dangers in this place before he immediately began to revamp.

The original core disciples of Divine Lotus Cult, the subordinates from Golden Sun Prosperous Land and the dream masters left behind from the 5 Grand Organisations all submitted to Fang Yuan due to his immense power. They began to build up a new force.

However, when Liu Mengmei and Extreme Darkness asked what was the name of this new force, Fang Yuan's nonchalant character showed once again as he just used 9 Extremes Mountain's name directly. This made the two women roll their eyes greatly.

Currently, the entire giant peak had been tidied up. Many palaces were built and they formed a dense group of building.

On the door to the mountain, there were three big words, "9 Extremes Mountain". They were handwritten by Fang Yuan and each word was 10 feet large. They could be seen from afar and were strong and imposing looking.

"Lord!"

Extreme Darkness was like a secretary and was slowly reporting to Fang Yuan, "Currently, after 9 Extremes Mountain had been cleaned up, palaces which can accommodate 3,000 people have been built. We only have 1272 people currently and there is more than enough accommodation. Furthermore, the supplies we have brought along are sufficient for half a year. Resources are abundant nearby, just that it is quite dangerous to collect them..."

"Regarding our defence, after the emergency sealing and blocking, only the three biggest entrance to 9 Extremes Mountain from the outside are left. We have dispatched skilled ones to guard those places. As per your command, Commander-in-Chief Ado is leading the army of demonic beasts to patrol around 9 Extremes Mountain. With Demon Spirits' habits, this place would be regarded as their territory and there wouldn't be any more demons from the outside coming over to cause trouble."

Extreme Darkness looked rather emotional as she continued, "However, if this place is found out by others from the outside, I'm afraid there will be tons of refugees flooding over."

"I am building up a force, not operating a refugee shelter that accepts anyone!"

Fang Yuan had a cold look on his face as he replied, "You and Liu Mengmei take charge of this area. I only want useful people. We can provide such people with protection and provide their family with safety too."

"Understood!"

Extreme Darkness bowed slightly.

Of course she knew the world outside was like a living hell now. There were conflicts and chaos between soldiers, humans and Demon Spirits. Even normal Wu Zongs and spiritual knights were having a tough time.

With 9 Extremes Mountain's current conditions, as long as a bit of it was revealed, there would definitely be tons of skilled people who were willing to come over to seek refuge.

Thus, through gathering them, after the military and demon chaos was over, this force would perhaps immediately become the number one force to be reckoned with in Da Qian World.

If one could occupy an important role within this...

Extreme Darkness breathing intensifies as she silently made up her mind and was determined to complete Fang Yuan's mission well.

"Finally there's a cleaner place!"

Fang Yuan asked Extreme Darkness to leave. He stood on the 9 Extremes Peak and looked at the entire mountain range.

Behind the palaces, he already ordered his people to set up a large plot of spiritual farm. Fang Yuan could currently see many people

working on the farm.

No matter how horrifying the catastrophe was, as long as one was not dead, one had to continue to live on.

Such a weak yet resilient life even made Fang Yuan felt moved.

# Chapter 494: Mountain Leader

---

"This spiritual farm is quite good!"

Fang Yuan patrolled around the spiritual farm and gazed at the rows of Yellow Grain Rice being planted together with other spiritual plants. He could not help it but smile.

Considering the resources the Divine Lotus Cult had, it was still possible to create a spiritual farm on what was once a piece of barren land.

There was already an abundance of resources in the 9 Extremes Mountain. Coupled with the fact that the environment of the mountain was unique, the land was a pure piece of land.

Fang Yuan was no longer afraid of revealing his skill in Botany.

After all, he was already one of the most powerful beings in Da Qian. Who would be daring enough to plot against him and make use of his Botany skills?

"There is not enough foundation to start anything!"

Fang Yuan arrived at the peak of the mountain and took out a seed.

"After travelling to so many different places, this is the opportunity to finally use you."

The seed in his hands was the seed which he had brought from the Mainland. It had once undergone a mutation and was now a suspected Heavenly Grade seed.

Although Fang Yuan had once pinned high hopes on it, he was fortunate enough to continuously achieve breakthroughs in his cultivation all the way to where he was now and there was no chance for him to make use of this seed.

Only recently did he browse through the recordings of the Divine Lotus Cult to obtain background information of this seed.

"This is the legendary species of Jianmu, used to sort out earthly energy. I can use it to create a foundation for the 9 Extremes Mountain and it should suffice!"

Fang Yuan placed his hands behind his back and gazed at Liu Mengmei, Extreme Darkness and the few others behind. "How're the preparations for the array going on?"

"We have prepared it according to your plan and the dream masters have perfected it through every single node!"

Liu Mengmei smiled as she reported the progress of the preparations of the array.

"Great."

Fang Yuan glanced down at the crater which was dug. According to the plan, this would be the core of the entire array. With a flick of his fingers, the seed flew into the ground.

"Quickly! Water it with the Ten Thousand Refined Mysterious Water!"

As soon as the seed burrowed itself into the ground, the entire mountainous range shook.

Extreme Darkness passed down her orders.

A spiritual knight took out a gourd and poured a spring water into the crater.

This spring water was milky in colour and gave off a clear fragrance of nature. It also had a dense spiritual aura coming from it. The water was rumoured to have been created from refining corpses and bones and every drop of it was priceless.

"Bloop! Bloop!"

The seed in the crater greedily slurped up all the spring water before revealing a green mysterious glow.

"9 Days Swelling Earth, down!"



Liu Mengmei personally took a bag of soil and started to cover the huge crater with it.

"Rumble!"

The soil was pitch black and as it covered the crater, the surface of it appeared extremely smooth.

"Whoosh!"

A slit opened up on the surface of the soil. As everyone watched on, a small tree sapling started to grow out and continued to grow at a crazy pace.

"Rumble!"

The ground shook as though the nodes were being pierced and connected by the roots of the plant.

Within moments, a huge tree appeared. It had a beautiful crown of leaves which bent down slightly, giving off the vibes of peace and tranquillity.

It only took a few moments for the small tree sapling to turn into a 700 feet tree. The shade of the tree was huge enough to even cover half of the entire palace.

"Whoosh! Whoosh!"

At this point in time, a green glow scattered in the vicinity, forming a layer of light which resembled a screen. The screen covered the entire mountain gate and the tree started to release fresh spiritual aura and unknowingly, everyone started to take in deep breaths.

"It's done!"

Witnessing this, Fang Yuan nodded his head in satisfaction. "This Green Wood Sky Net Array which I have designed should be as powerful as the protective arrays of other sects."

"Furthermore, with its protection, the breath of the earth and elemental force would be sorted out in this region. This mountain

will, therefore, become some sort of prosperous or spiritual land!"

The elemental energy in Da Qian was too disrupted and contaminated with dream elemental force. Together with the negative emotions of hatred and fear, the spiritual knights or Wu Zongs would be negatively affected if they were to use these energies for their cultivation. The chances of them getting out of control while training would increase exponentially.

However, in the 9 Extremes Mountain, with the huge array sorting and purifying the energy within it, everything would be different.

Fang Yuan would not just stop here!

"A true Jianmu will not only continue growing but will also continue to spread its roots underground!"

Fang Yuan smiled as he could feel the faint tremors beneath his feet.

The 9 Extremes Mountain was among the 10 most dangerous places in Da Qian due to the existence of the many restrictions within it. This place was therefore plagued with many problems, resulting in many unnatural mutations and changes.

Now, Fang Yuan was leveraging on the power of Jianmu to reset everything here, beginning from underground!

In other words, wherever the roots of Jianmu were to stretch towards would be the boundaries of the array. As the roots stretched out underground, the restrictions would be broken through!

"Jianmu will always grow continuously. As soon as its roots completely replace the soil beneath the 9 Extremes Mountain, this entire secret place will be reformed and it will truly be our base!"

Fang Yuan seemed to be thinking about the future. "By then, the power of the Green Wood Sky Net Array should be comparable to that of the protective arrays which the dream masters of the allied

forces once had."

There was only one requirement of these protective arrays. They had to be able to defend against a powerful being! Even if a sage were to attack this place, the protective array will need to be able to withstand a single hit first!

If not for the fact that everyone in the Divine Lotus Cult was worrying about who to manipulate their own protective array and the betrayal of Elder Green Lotus, they would not have been at the risk of destruction.

"Gather all the deacons and disciples!"

After casting the array, Fang Yuan arrived at the square before the main hall and passed down his order. "I want to see everyone is half an hour's time!"

Considering his status, Fang Yuan's order was promptly passed down.

Within moments, over a thousand people started to gather in the square.

Fang Yuan still had the foundations of a dream master and could detect hints of fear, uneasiness and hope among his people.

This was already different from before.

'This is the right time. Casting the array would mean that our foundations are firm and the hearts of the people will no longer waver.'

Fang Yuan scanned around before beginning his announcement. "I hereby announce that the 9 Extremes Mountain Sect will be formed today! I will be the Mountain Leader. Extreme Darkness and Liu Mengmei will be the protectors. Meng Tian, Meng Guang and the few others will be the 5 Extreme Deacons. The remaining of you will be the First Generation of Disciples!"

Any organisation would have a hierarchy! This was no different

from the ranking of Leaf Cultivator in the Realm Alliance.

"Greetings, Mountain Leader!"

In an instant, thousands of followers performed a greeting.

Although many of them were once the elites of the allied forces, they had since lost their cultivation, which was a heavy blow to their self-esteem. Now, they had to be accepting of everything if they wanted to survive.

Furthermore, would they be able to walk out of the 9 Extremes Mountain alive if they did not want to comply?

Even if they were to make it out of the mountains, wouldn't they be soon captured by the huge army of demons?

Therefore, these 1,000 of them had to accept their new fate which was planned out for them by Fang Yuan and there was no resistance among them.

'Even though they only appear compliant on the surface, it is already a good thing that they are able to come to a decision in such a short period of time!'

Fang Yuan nodded his head.

It was impossible to create such a hierarchy in such a short period of time.

As long as they were to accept this fact, their daily lives in the sect would soon make them used to this. They would be able to work hard to increase their status within the sect and finally become powerful enough for Fang Yuan to make use of them. This was the benefits of having a hierarchy system.

"The Leader of 9 Extremes Mountain?! This title is not bad at all."

Fang Yuan waved his hands and ordered for a banquet. However, he only appeared for a short while before disappearing to his isolation room to train.

Fang Yuan had created this organisation so as to have a group of

people at his disposal in the future. Of course, he knew that the basis of his power and influence still laid in his martial arts!

Without his powerful martial arts, he would not even be able to survive in the chaotic streets of Da Qian, not to mention accomplishing other things.

"I shall leave the outside affairs to Liu Mengmei and Extreme Darkness!"

Fang Yuan crossed his legs and gazed at the wooden hairpin in his hands with a perplexed look on his face.

He did not expect to find the secrets of the Demonic Heart Realm on Shang Hou's body. Instead, it was a pleasant surprise for him to find the Spiritual Will Steel Seal technique.

"Shang Hou is indeed a genius. It's a pity that such a secret technique is not suitable for me."

Fang Yuan shook his head.

Closing his eyes, he could feel the pure elemental force in the surroundings.

"The 9 Extreme Mountain naturally keeps dream elemental force out and restricts supernatural powers in its vicinity. This is a good thing... At least everything in here will be least affected by what is happening in the outside world. Together with the Green Wood Sky Net Array's purification abilities, we will become a paradise among a world plagued with problems."

Fang Yuan heaved a sigh and started to think about the future of Da Qian.

"I'm afraid the chaos outside will continue. Dream masters are now in hiding and a few volunteer armies are already destroyed by the waves of demons. There is also the demon disaster..."

Even Fang Yuan was not confident that a powerful being would be able to set things right.

After all, the most powerful of beings in Da Qian now were the True Divines and True Elementals. Although Fang Yuan was already more powerful than the average powerful being, he still had a limit.

If he were to anger the masses outside, he could still be overwhelmed by their numbers.

"Furthermore... This world is already under the scrutiny of the Demonic Heart Realm. Even the will of Da Qian was harmed and is already in hiding. Why should I steal all the attention?"

Dream elemental force which flooded Da Qian from the Demonic Heart Realm had its pros and cons.

Most importantly, everything was settling down and Da Qian was getting used to it.

According to Fang Yuan's prediction, the will of Da Qian had already suffered a huge loss of its natural source in the battle between the realms. Together with the plague of demons, the realm had to hibernate and for once give up on the happenings in the realm temporarily.

This was a 'painful process' which healing realms had to go through.

"What about the dream masters? They must be devastated! All their possible paths are sealed... They even lost the ability to dream-traverse as a method to leave this realm."

Even though dream masters had once taken over realms after realms, all of these had stemmed from the dream dao.

Now that the dream dao was gone, all the dream masters had to painstakingly discover new ways to harness their dream elemental force. They might even find dream-accessing too arduous to attempt, so how would they even think about dream-traversing to other worlds?

This was a strong blow to the dream masters.

"This is a cultured catastrophe!"

Fang Yuan mumbled to himself as he feared the future.

Dream masters were indeed powerful, but even so, before the beings of the Demonic Heart Realm, the dream masters would not even be able to put up a meaningful resistance.

"This is interesting. Isn't this what I am after?"

After a long silence, Fang Yuan revealed a smile and flames of passion started to burn in his eyes.

# Chapter 495: Black Dragon

---

"Elemental force is the foundation of everything!"

In the isolation room, Fang Yuan sat on the ground with his legs crossed. The streak of silvery dream elemental force squirmed in his hands like a small silver snake.

"The natural form of energy in Da Qian is the natural elemental force! On the other hand, the basic form of energy in the Demonic Heart Realm is dream elemental force! After the collision of the two realms, the environment of Da Qian will undergo certain changes and the surroundings are already filled with this evolved form of elemental force!"

Previously, the dream masters of Da Qian were only able to sense the Demonic Heart Realm through their spiritual wills and therefore absorb radiation of dream elemental force. Only from there would they be able to refine the most elementary form of dream-type elemental force.

Now, due to the fact that the Demonic Heart Realm had flooded Da Qian with a dream elemental force of a higher quality, it seemed like this new dream elemental force had much more unknown and mysterious usages.

"This was Shang Hou's plan, which was to reform Da Qian into an environment more suited for his true physical body to thrive in..."

Fang Yuan shook his head.

If dream masters still had the dream dao, they would be jubilant about having the reformed environment. However, now, only the demons were benefitting from this new environment.

"According to Ado, they are consumers and creators. Every Demon Spirit or demon will turn into pure dream elemental force upon their deaths, returning the energy to the surroundings..."

Fang Yuan started to fear about this quality of the demons.



After prolonged periods, the entire Da Qian will be taken over by the Demonic Heart Realm and will actively reform into a place similar to Demonic Heart Realm.

"This might not be bad news for me!"

Fang Yuan took in a deep breath and he could feel an immense amount of energy flowing into his body. With that, he attempted to connect with his actualised dream world.

"9 Extremes Mountain is under The Ultimate Segregation, which does not allow for supernatural forces to enter into its perimeters. However, with my Green Wood Sky Net Array, an opening is thus created. Upon entering through the opening, the elemental force from outside will be purified and the concentration of elemental force throughout the mountain will remain consistent to form different points of nodes."

Fang Yuan would temporarily not release dream elemental force to the normal cultivators for he was afraid of affecting the conversion of their professions to spiritual knights or Wu Zongs. However, he had no fear in allowing the dream elemental force to flood over himself.

In fact, he did not mind absorbing the corrupted elemental force from the outside world and digesting it on his own.

"It's too difficult... Although there is plenty of dream elemental force in the surroundings, it is extremely difficult to use it in my actualised dream world..."

Fang Yuan took in a deep breath.

Considering his cultivation as a True Divine, he had no difficulties in absorbing martial arts elemental force. Even the most corrupted of martial arts elemental force was absorbed by him without much difficulty.

However, his actualised dream world was indeed pitiful.

It was like a person dying of thirst, gazing at a river before him

but unable to walk forward to take a drink.

The lack of strength in such a situation could potentially drive someone crazy.

"My actualised dream world..."

Fang Yuan's spiritual will entered his actualised dream world. He realised that it was now only about 40 inches wide and might just crumble anytime.

"The actualised dream world represents my foundation as a dream master. I cannot let it crumble just like that! Wait a minute..."

Fang Yuan froze. "I will not give up on the dream dao. However, there needs to be some sort of adaptation!"

Although the dream masters of Da Qian were unique, their foundations were still based in the Demonic Heart Realm. Even the power to create objects was from the other realm. Due to the fact that dream masters were too reliant on the Demonic Heart Realm, all dream masters quickly became crippled as soon as the dream dao was taken away from them.

If all of that were to happen again, dream masters would once again be rendered helpless against the beings of the Demonic Heart Realm.

"The foundation of dream masters lies in dream elemental force. I cannot change this fact. However, I can alter the future path of dream masters to reduce reliance on the Demonic Heart Realm. Furthermore, I can also alter the very composition of dream elemental force.

Fang Yuan's eyes glistened as many ideas popped into his mind.

Although many of his ideas were too impractical, the general direction in which he was exploring was correct.

"Most importantly, we have to be independent!"

"Rumble!"

With that thought, his actualised dream world suddenly crumbled and was being compressed like a black hole, leaving behind a small singularity.

"Whoosh!"

Taking this opportunity, Fang Yuan removed the restrictions on the specific type of dream elemental force required in the actualised dream world.

Silvery dream elemental force flowed towards the singularity and in a dramatic explosion, a void space started to expand from the singularity.

Although the newly formed void seemed a little illusionary, a layer of silver dream elemental force was flowing in it. In fact, the elemental force could now be radiated outwards from Fang Yuan's actualised dream world, affecting everything.

"Although I am only at the 1st Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage, my ability as an Area Being is still with me..."

With the wave of his hands, the surroundings of his actualised dream world became dreamy and illusionary as Fang Yuan tried to hold back his laughter. "What does this count as? A disguise? I may appear weak but I am able to secretly use the spiritual territory of a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master?"

In fact, Fang Yuan knew that after all that had happened, no other dream master would be able to compete with him in terms of foundations as a dream master.... There might only be a single Illusionary Divine dream master in the entire Da Qian now.

"Even the hollows of sages could not hold up against the removal of the dream dao. I believe that these sages could not even retain their own actualised dream worlds..."

Fang Yuan shook his head before taking a glance at his stats window:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 100

Spirit: 100

Magic: 43 (100)

Profession: ???

Cultivation: True Divine, Area Being, Illusionary Divine (1st Tier)

Technique: Pangu Eagle Body, \[8 Gates Sword Array (???)\], \[Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell (Grade 5 (Completed))\]

Skill: \[Medicine (Level 3)\], \[Botany (Level 5)\], \[Fiery Golden Eyes (Level 1)\]"

The newest changes to the stats window were the grey words describing Fang Yuan's cultivation as a dream master. These words were now black again, as though Fang Yuan had broken through certain restrictions to allow himself to increase his cultivation once again.

"My Botany has not improved even after planting the Jianmu. Could it be that it is not enough, or that I have yet to satisfy a certain condition?"

Fang Yuan sighed.

"With a paper, I will be able to paint. Therefore, I shouldn't rush into restoring my 8 Gates Sword Array..."

The 8 Gates Sword Array would allow one to achieve the 8th Tier of the Illusionary Divine stage at its peak and there was no 9th Tier. This was a major disadvantage and pity.

Considering Fang Yuan's abilities, it was unlikely that he would be able to create the 9th Tier all by himself.

After all, the first 8 tiers were already fixed from the beginning. This would be akin to adding another storey onto a building which

would pose many problems.

Now that he had reset his cultivation, it was a great chance for him to resolve any issues he might once have with his foundations.

"I have the recordings and treasures from the Divine Lotus Cult as well as the inheritances from Li Qingmian and Shang Hou. Together with the recordings I already have from the Realm Alliance... I have possession of almost 40% of all the recordings about the dream dao in Da Qian. By starting afresh, I will be able to create the strongest path to follow!"

Fang Yuan felt extremely confident.

Furthermore, taking this opportunity while the other dream masters were weakened, he could sort out everyone. The dream masters of Evil Divine Sect and Baize Mountain would likely submit themselves before Fang Yuan and provide him with their own doctrines and treasures.

...

Just as everyone was beginning to settle down in 9 Extremes Mountain, enjoying their hard-fought peace, chaos continued in the outside world.

The fighting resulted in hatred and suffering for everyone, which was the best food for the Demon Spirits. The demon disaster quickly spread from the Middle Region to everywhere else and everything was out of control.

Those rebels who took the opportunity to take over armies quickly realised that the problem was not about gaining enough territory or reaping enough treasures and rewards, but simply surviving in such times of chaos!

On Baize Mountain.

"Roar! Roar!"

Beasts roared as they guarded the back door of the mountain.

On a closer look, one would realise that these were stone figurines which were full of life. These figurines were able to exert dominance as they fought against the invading demons.

"Sage!"

Sage Baize sat on a cloud in mid-air and there were a few other elders behind him. The surging energy around him meant that he had already broken through to become a True Elemental! He was now a True Elemental spiritual knight!

After all, it was already about a hundred days since Fang Yuan had shifted and altered the 9 Extremes Mountain.

By relying on his foundation as a sage, Sage Baize was able to alter his foundation and push his cultivation as a spiritual knight to the peak!

"This plague of Demon Spirits is becoming increasingly scary as the days go by."

Behind him, an elder sighed. "Now, they seem to be just as powerful as our Ten Thousand Spirits Array!"

"Hmph, these are mere pests. If the Baize Magical Beast was still around, it will be able to lead all the spirits of this world to combine with the stone figurines. By then, even powerful beings will not be able to survive!"

An elder sighed.

Sage Baize remained emotionless but inside, he was enraged.

He was a sage in the past and he could control anyone who was unwilling or was looking to rebel. However, he was merely a True Elemental now.

On Baize Mountain, among the few elders, normal deacons and disciples, there were a few who had cultivated in both martial arts and spiritual spells and were as powerful as Sage Baize.

Since he could not rule by power now, compromises had to be

made.

Therefore, even as a powerful being, his words did not hold as much weight as they use to now.

"It's useless to say all of these now!"

Sage Baize spoke. "I can still try my best to manipulate the Ten Thousand Spirits Array. Even if the demons were to give it their all, they will still not be able to infiltrate. We need not be worried."

"Roar! Roar!"

As soon as he finished his sentence, a roar was heard among the invading demons.

A dragon demon with a lizard's body, huge wings and 3 ferocious-looking heads flew up from the swarm of demons. It gazed down and hollered. "Submit? Or die?"

Its mind power was extremely strong and many elders of Baize Mountain could feel a chill down their spines. The weaker ones turned pale and many other disciples behind started to faint one by one.

"This Demon Spirit seems to be as powerful as a powerful being!"

Sage Baize had a solemn look on his face as he waved his sleeves. "Wind!"

"Whooooo!"

Strong winds raged on and quickly formed a tornado. The green tornado seemed to have a mind of its own as it weaved through all the obstructions, killing its way towards the 3-headed weird-looking dragon.

The 3-headed dragon roared as the sharp wind sliced through its neck, beheading it. Its blood started to spew everywhere.

"Roar! Roar!"

With another roar, its wound started to expand quickly and black

streaks of energy started to glisten. Within moments, 3 smaller dragons appeared and roared in unison as they broke through the Ten Thousand Spirits Array before arriving in front of Sage Baize and the elders.

"This is impossible!"

An elder shrieked. "How can it maintain its spiritual aura even after splitting into 3 entities? What secret technique is this?"

The 3-headed dragon split into 3 entities, creating 3 new powerful beings!

This secret technique was mind-blowing and too powerful for anyone to conceive! Too powerful for anyone to handle!



# Chapter 496: Trade Offer

---

"Hmph!"

Sage Baize's reaction to such a change was a mere snicker.

After all, he was once a sage and was powerful once. Against such weak beings, he could probably kill all of them effortlessly.

Composed, he was confident of dealing with the situation.

"Kill!"

"Spiritual sword, go!"

Behind him, two True Divines leapt out together with another True Elemental. Executing his techniques, a long sword essence emerged, striking fear in many.

Looking at the strength of Baize Mountain, even though many dream masters were killed, Sage Baize could still gather 4 powerful beings together!

With a whistle, the 4 of them formed a huge array, surrounding the 3 black dragons within it. Relentlessly, they dished out their attacks.

"I sincerely thank the three of you for helping out!" Sage Baize secretly spoke in their minds. "When we return, I shall appoint the three of you as the Vice Sect Head. The few of you shall chair the elders and decide on important affairs!"

"It's nothing! We are always willing to serve you, Sage!"

Although these 3 people were once Sage Baize's disciples, even though they were receiving benefits now, all of them were still humble, but there was still competition among them. The good thing was that the situation in Baize Mountain had not escalated to the point where the sect would be on the brink of disbanding like the Divine Lotus Cult or the Source Seeking Sect and order was still maintained in the sect.

"Rumble!"

The array vibrated as it stood strong for about an hour.

Finally, after a huge explosion, the black dragons roared as they killed their way out of the array. They came together to form a single entity. One of the black dragon's head suddenly disappeared, leaving a big bloody wound on its neck.

"Roar! Roar!"

With a single roar, the Demon Spirits in the vicinity started to retreat. The 2-headed dragon transformed into a streak of light before disappearing beyond the horizon.

"Who would've thought that it would have such a sacrificial move to allow one of its magical clone to explode so as to allow the other two to escape from the array!"

The 4 powerful being revealed themselves as a True Divine sighed in disappointment.

"This dragon is not simple. It not only has wisdom but is also proficient in this secret technique..."

Sage Bazie stroked his beard. "To split itself into 3 without losing any power in each magical clone is the perfect '3 Clones in a Single Breath' technique in the legends. I suspect that its lost head will be able to regrow in no time."

Up to this point, Sage Baize unknowingly glanced towards the True Elemental who was wielding a sword.

If not for the fact that this True Elemental was selfish and was not willing to give it his all, they might be able to take down another dragon's head.

Unfortunately, Sage Baize was no longer in control of the situation. He had to compromise with the rest. Otherwise, Baize Mountain would not be able to hold up.

"None of us could've done anything to help the situation!"

The True Elemental who was wielding a sword was an old man in green robes. As he spoke, his eyes glistened. "These Demon Spirits evolve too quickly and it is getting hard to defend against them. Furthermore, they now have wisdom and might even combine forces! Sect Head, quickly make a decision!"

"To relocate?"

Sage Baize's face twitched.

Relocation was not as simple as activating the array and walking away. They would have to form a huge party to traverse through the disaster-plagued Da Qian.

To most people, the act of relocation was a disaster in itself!

However, it seemed as though Sage Baize was almost about to bear the consequences of being the one making the decision.

"Cough cough... this is the last resort. As long as we have resupplies in the form of either manpower or resources, we can continue to maintain this stalemate... After all, even though we dream masters are no longer powerful, we can still injure these Demon Spirits with our limited usage of dream elemental force!"

A True Divine displayed a different stance.

"That's right!"

Another True Divine quickly concurred. "The allied forces of the 3 Grand Organisations should help each other out!"

The Divine Lotus Cult was long swept by Fang Yuan and the Source Seeking Sect was split and therefore, these two organisations were no longer taken into consideration.

In a short period of time, these two long-standing organisations led by sages fell just like this, and this was a huge blow to many dream masters in Da Qian.

"Hmph! We cannot trust Evil Divine! He had used the heavenly evil force to control his elders previously, turning them into

puppets. His disciples do not dare to talk about this issue. Now that chaos is everywhere, their sect is also troubled. Coupled with the invasive Demon Spirits, they are already troubled enough. Do you think they will come to our assistance?"

Sage Baize's expression changed. He had never thought about this before. "To make things worse... The good should not work with the evil. We have caused trouble for them before and therefore, we will never know if they truly want to help us or not."

"Since we cannot rely on the Evil Divine Sect, on the other hand, the Realm Alliance has always been neutral and our relationships are alright..."

An elder gazed towards the retreating demon army as the stone figurines returned to their places. The dazzling gems on them slowly dimmed. "Considering our prowess, we cannot hold on for long. Notwithstanding other issues, the pressing issue of the lack of spiritual rice and other basic necessities is enough to push us to desperation."

At that moment, all the dream masters remained silent.

Their resources had all been destroyed during the war. These dream masters were the most luxurious bunch and only knew how to obtain more resources from the realm in the past. How would they consider these problems before?

Now that they were all weakened and defeated after the war, they finally knew the hardships of being an average human living in Da Qian.

"Realm Alliance? Hmph!"

This time, it was the True Elemental wielding the sword who raised an objection. They are but a group of dispersed individuals. With the war, I'm sure more than half of them would have fled, especially so for The Ancient One. Being ever-so scheming, he might have already cultivated himself into a True Divine or True

Elemental on his own. According to our insider information, he has locked himself up in isolation since returning from the war. What do you think he might be planning? If you ask me, I would choose to believe that this person might be even more dangerous than Evil Divine!"

In the war at the Jade Capital, the allied forces were defeated without a doubt. The sage of the Realm Alliance was already a True Elemental before the war and therefore, his losses were the least among the 5 sages.

Furthermore, there was a small rebel coming from his alliance - Fang Yuan!

All of these had already led to the dissatisfaction of many.

"The Ancient One is indeed scheming!"

Sage Baize had to agree with this. "Furthermore, he always seems calm and composed. He might not come to our help."

Everyone remained silent once more.

Dream masters were once the owners of the world. Other than the 5 Grand Organisations, it was impossible for them to seek help elsewhere considering the bad blood and the feud formed with every other organisation in Da Qian.

Everyone felt a sense of pity as they quietly returned to the sect.

"Sage! Elders!"

At this point in time, a deacon quickly rushed in with a weird expression.

"What happened?"

Sage Baize glared at him.

This deacon was once a 6th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master, the in-charge of a territory. Now that his cultivation was lost, he was demoted to become a runner, which was already considered rather good for other dream masters could not even

obtain a role within the sect.

"Someone delivered a letter to us, claiming that they want to engage in a trade!"

The deacon's expression was weird as he presented a piece of jade to Sage Baize.

"Eh?"

Sage Baize took the jade and swept through it with his spiritual will before revealing the same weird expression as the deacon. "Take a look!"

He casually passed the jade to the elder wielding the sword.

"Fang Yuan? 9 Extremes Mountain?"

The elder wielding the sword took in a deep breath. "This person has disappeared after causing trouble at the Divine Lotus Cult. Who would've thought that he had established a sect for himself at the 9 Extremes Mountain!"

To think about it, the environment of 9 Extremes Mountain was comparable to even Baize Mountain in these tumultuous times.

"He is proposing a trade with us to use spiritual rice and elemental crystals in exchange for the recordings of dream masters' recordings and valuable pieces of information. Furthermore, he is proposing that we assist each other in times of need. What do you guys think?"

Sage Baize scanned around, looking at the reaction of the elders.

"We don't really have any bad blood with this person..."

A True Divine spoke as he totally disregarded Fang Yuan's relationship with Master Heartless.

Years before, Master Heartless had made many enemies everywhere, including the dream masters of Baize Mountain. However, in such troubled times, those dream masters with bad blood against Master Heartless were long dead and the remaining

few were too weak to even pose any resistance.

In other words, the benefits which they were about to receive from Fang Yuan were able to shut any potential resistance among the elders.

"The thing is... why is this person after dream masters' recordings and valuable information?"

Another True Divine among the elders was confused.

If this was before the war, Fang Yuan's act of eyeing on other sect's dream masters' recording would be scrutinised and soon after, he would be hated upon.

However, now, these recordings were as useful as a bowl of vegetables.

"Could it be that... the dream dao can be salvaged?"

The True Elemental elder started to mumble to himself. Although he knew that it was impossible, he was still unwilling to lose all hope for the dream dao.

The 3 of them gazed at Sage Baize.

Sage Baize had already tried all means. He was once a sage and therefore, he knew more than anyone else that the dream dao was gone for good!

Shaking his head, he looked towards the deacon. "Tell me more about it..."

"Reporting!"

With a helpless look, the deacon started to report. "We have already gathered over a hundred disciples with their cultivations ranging from a dream-accessing dream master to a 7th Tier Illusionary Divine dream master. We have tried different means and have confirmed that all of their actualised dream worlds have crumbled and can no longer be repaired... Those with their cultivations below the Illusionary Divine stage had turned into

normal human beings. While the Illusionary Divine dream masters might still be able to use their dream elemental force, they can only do basic control, transference and release of it and at most use the illusionary traits of dream elemental force to confuse the enemy. However, they will no longer be able to actualise objects."

The actualised dream world was the foundation of an Illusionary Divine dream master, the potential hollow! The key was in being able to actualised objects within it!

Without this ability, dream masters would be no different from the rest in the Demonic Heart Realm in terms of the usage of dream elemental force.

"Such usage of dream elemental force would make it similar to martial arts elemental force..."

The 3 elders appeared desolated. "The usage of dream elemental force will still be more limited compared to martial arts elemental force even if we were to change our cultivation to become a dream martial artist."

"At such a young age, Fang Yuan had already cultivated in both martial arts and the dream dao, pushing both of this cultivation levels to the level of a powerful being. He is a rare talent indeed and must be ambitious enough to find a new dao and restore the dream dao!"

Sage Baize spoke his mind. "After reading this letter, I believe that all dream masters should put our differences aside and work together to find a solution to this problem!"

"This is an ambitious goal. Unfortunately, it is too... naive!"

The remaining dream masters sighed.

Working together was the most optimum. However, dream masters were all scheming and selfish. Against a calamity, they would not completely trust each other.

Ambitions would always remain as ambitions!



# Chapter 497: Maximum Level

---

"The Realm Alliance and the Evil Divine Sect have rejected my offer. Only Baize Mountain has agreed to trade with us. Are they only using their recordings and secret techniques in exchange for spiritual rice, elemental crystals and other resources?"

In the 9 Extremes Mountain, Fang Yuan held a piece of jade and did not know whether to laugh or cry.

"Yes, Mountain Leader!"

Extreme Darkness bowed down. "Even Baize Mountain is against our act of forming an alliance. According to our investigations, there are internal conflicts in Evil Divine Sect. As for the Realm Alliance, they are still unhappy with you, Mountain Leader."

"They are just stubborn people who are unaware of the situation at hand! In the future, they will surely come begging to work with us..."

Fang Yuan scoffed.

It was not easy to tide through this demon disaster.

Furthermore, even if they were to survive the disaster, it was still not a good thing for dream masters.

On the contrary, the very existence of the demon disaster gave dream masters breathing space since the other martial artists and spiritual knights would be busy fending off the demons!

As soon as the disaster ends, True Elementals and True Divines from all over the world would combine forces and dream masters would be completely purged from the world.

Now that the 2 sects were unwilling to cooperate, it was still possible to loot their recordings and secret techniques if their sects were destroyed in the future.

Casually, Fang Yuan arrived at the spiritual farm and started to

run this fingers through the small tree saplings.

"Mountain Leader!"

From aside, Liu Mengmei, together with a few nervous spiritual farmers, greeted Fang Yuan with respect.

"Mmm. Do take note that you will have to trim this Spiritual Elemental Tree every day. Change its spiritual liquid once in three days. Also, for the Emerald Vines, take note not to water it..."

Fang Yuan casually reminded the few important points regarding these spiritual plants and the farmers standing at one side were shocked. They felt as though his Mountain Leader knew everything.

"The plants in this spiritual farm are growing quite well. You have put in the effort!"

After patrolling a few plots of spiritual farms, Fang Yuan and Liu Mengmei walked through an array and arrived at the core of the spiritual farms.

In here, there were no spiritual flowers or spiritual fruits. Instead, it was filled with the most commonly seen weed. The only advantage of these weeds was that they were extremely hardy and could survive in almost all types of conditions.

Now, some of the weeds were displaying signs of evolution.

Some of it had accelerated growth and was almost as tall as a human being while some of it had started to grow sharp jagged teeth. A few others had a brilliant emerald hue and had already evolved into a spiritual plant.

Witnessing this scene, Liu Mengmei's heart was filled with pride. 'Mountain Leader is willing to share these secrets with me...'

Examining the plants, Fang Yuan did not seem satisfied.

"Increased combat power? These wild grasses have a new row of teeth but are still unable to kill a rabbit! Useless!"

"Able to bear fruits now? This is new, and I shall experiment if these fruits are edible..."

"Evolved to become a spiritual plant? It's still too weak, I'll give up on it!"

He casually inspected a few others and was desolate even when presented with evolved spiritual plants, which shocked Liu Mengmei.

"EH?"

After a few rounds around the farm, Fang Yuan stopped before a patch of grass. A golden hue flashed in his eyes as he started to appear excited.

He squatted down, plucked the grass and placed them in his hands to examine them.

"It is hardy and able to spread quickly.... More importantly, it is able to stabilise the elemental energy in the surroundings, allowing dream elemental force to fuse with the elemental force of Da Qian and therefore reduce the negative emotions of cultivators absorbing these elemental forces..."

Fang Yuan could detect that these grasses were giving out a spiritual aura with a mediating trait, potentially allowing the mixed elemental force in the surroundings to settle down.

"Such a mediating ability is seen in many different arrays already, but are they really practical? No matter how strong an array might be, it can only be used for protective purposes. Can it really affect the entire realm? The correct way will be to seek a solution that is easily replicable and cheap..."

Fang Yuan gazed at the wild grass in his hands as though he had found treasure. "These weeds are able to make the elemental energy in the surroundings settle down. Although its effect is weak, it is ultimately a plant, which will allow me to artificially reproduce it in massive numbers... no! Not artificially, but I shall

let it spread throughout the world by itself! My efforts of planting so many batches of weeds have not come in vain! I have finally obtained a suitable variant!"

Fang Yuan was greedy. He had attempted to create such weed to salvage the entire realm and from there gain the favour of the will of the realm.

"Hmm, I shall name this grass Green Elemental Grass. We can remove the other grass patches. Use this batch of Green Elemental Grass as a foundation, we shall first reproduce it for a few generations. If there are no problems with it, we shall introduce it into the ecosystem!"

Fang Yuan stood up and there were flames of burning passion in his eyes. "After the Green Elemental Grass matures, I shall create a few variants of easily reproducible rice as well as spiritual rice. Now that the environment of the realm is changing, if spiritual farms outside do not have protection, the amount of harvest will be drastically reduced. Therefore, I will once again do good to the world."

What karma would be the greatest? Of course, the karma he would get from salvaging the world and the human race.

The world was represented by the heavens while the human dao was represented by the earth. Heavenly and earth karma will represent the natural source of the realm, which is everything the realm had!

"After I create these few variants, even if the will of the realm were to assume that I am a foreign demon, it will still reward me... Furthermore, I am going with the heavenly trend and therefore I will be able to benefit a lot along the way."

Fang Yuan gazed towards the sky and smiled.

After harvesting from a few realms, he was experienced enough.

One should only forcefully take the natural source of the realm in

desperate times. The smart way was to follow the will of the realm, forcing it to reward one for helping it out!

"I am conducting research in plants in order to stabilise the elemental energy in the realm and therefore salvage it from its impending doom. The will of the realm is well aware of this and will surely reward me!"

Thinking up to his point, Fang Yuan started to pray loudly towards the skies.

"Buzz! Buzz!"

In an instant, Liu Mengmei started to feel something different.

Although the surroundings remained intact, she could seemingly feel that an unknown consciousness had descended.

The feeling of power and might unknowingly force her to her knees in an act of submission.

In Fang Yuan's eyes, he could see a colourful streak of energy appearing above the few acres of the spiritual farm. The energy started to fill up his own stats window.

His Botany was originally at the peak of the 5th Level. Even after planting the Jianmu, he was still unable to increase his cultivation in Botany. However, now, the numbers started to blur out before becoming clear again. His Botany had increased to the 6th Level!

Level 6 Botany!

Seeing this, Fang Yuan started to laugh heartily.

He knew that this act of his had caught the attention of the heavens, forcing the heavens to intervene and help him complete his breakthrough.

He gazed towards his stats window and detailed information started to appear:

"Botany (Level 6) (Maximum) - You are the grandmaster of Botany, a natural talent! You will now be able to communicate

with plants, control its maturity period and its mutation!"

"Indeed, the 6th Level of Botany will allow me to control the mutation of plants!"

Fang Yuan let out a satisfactory sigh. "Furthermore... To attain the maximum level in Botany, I not only need to have enough experience, I also need heavenly karma! No... That feeling was the natural source of the realm!"

Of course, the will of Da Qian had no idea about Fang Yuan's own stats. However, it had presented Fang Yuan with heavenly karma in advance, which was in the form of the natural source of the realm. Coincidentally, it was all Fang Yuan needed to bring his Botany to the maximum level!

With his newfound ability, Fang Yuan would no longer need to plant huge plots of weed to choose his preferred variant. Instead, he could directly alter the mutation of the weed!

Such an ability would make him one of the most powerful beings in the realm!

"Of course, I cannot immediately control the mutation of the plants!"

Fang Yuan slowly experienced everything which was described in the information next to his Botany. "To complete this step, I will first need to communicate with the plants and in the process understand the state of the plants and its genetic information. From there, I will have to alter its mutation according to the end state which I am looking for. Furthermore, I will need to slowly cultivate it and strengthen it over time, otherwise, its genetic material might break down and everything will be in vain..."

"Regardless, it is still better than now where I am relying on luck!"

"Mountain Leader?"

Liu Mengmei became confused as she looked at Fang Yuan.

"Nothing much. These spiritual farms will need some alteration. Furthermore, get me a few variants of normal rice and spiritual rice with the highest rate of produce!"

Fang Yuan causally commanded her.

It was extremely easy to spread the Green Elemental Grass. As soon as it matured, Fang Yuan could simply toss it to the outside world and it would be dispersed by natural wind and animals to be introduced into the ecosystem.

However, more effort would have to be put in place to spread the variants of rice.

Of course, in these troubled times, this might be the most popular business and at the same time, Fang Yuan would be able to help ensure the survival of human beings at the same time. Although he would not directly stand to gain from it, in the long run, it would contribute greatly to his fate energy.

From today onwards, the system within the 9 Extremes mountain would be settled.

...

In the blink of an eye, another month had passed.

In an isolation room, Fang Yuan crossed his legs and gazed at his own stats:

"Name: Fang Yuan

Essence: 100

Spirit: 100

Magic: 43 (100)

Profession: ???

Cultivation: True Divine, Area Being, Illusionary Divine Stage (1st Tier)

Technique: Pangu Eagle Body, \[8 Gates Sword Array (???)\], \

[Elemental Spiritual Energy Cultivation Spell (Grade 5 (Completed))\]

Skill: \[Medicine (Level 3)\], \[Botany (Level 6) (Maximum)\], \[Fiery Golden Eyes (Level 1)\]"

"Botany (Level 6) (Maximum) - You are the grandmaster of Botany, a natural talent! You will now be able to communicate with plants, control its maturity period and its mutation!"

"With my maximum level Botany skills, I have already started to spread a few variants of seeds throughout the realm. I cannot rush through this. I can leave it to Extreme Darkness and Liu Mengmei to settle it for me... The rewards are not very visible as of now but I shall be patient. As time passes, my rewards shall be exponential!"

Fang Yuan nodded his head but slowly, he started to frown. "I will need some time to see what will happen to Da Qian. I already have a few ideologies about the dream dao. Unfortunately, no matter how talented I might be, without the resources, I cannot do anything!"

The only way to increase his own cultivation as a dream master was to harvest the natural source of the realm.

He had already made his arrangements in Da Qian but the effects would not be instant.

Therefore, the only way was to dream-traverse to other realms!

"Other dream masters have already lost even their most basic abilities, but I am still able to locate other realms... I can accomplish a few of my ideologies about the dream dao in foreign realms!"

Fang Yuan had come to a decision.



# Chapter 498: Arrival

---

The ability to dream-traverse was discovered by dream masters.

By making use of their dream world, dream masters would be able to quickly locate other realms, allowing their True Spirits to descend and harvest the realm. This process allowed the dream masters to quickly advance and become more powerful.

However, all these were gone together with the lost of the dream dao.

"Strictly speaking, dream masters are not the only ones who can move through realms and locate other realms. Realms of higher dimensions are also able to do it to prey on other planes and harvest from them... However, the process of dream-traversing would consume the least energy and allow the dream traverser to gain more rewards, considering the energy exhausted."

Fang Yuan quickly arranged an array and started to think to himself. "We have lost all means of communication with the conquered realms. Why does this feel like the weakening of the United Kingdom leading to the independence of its colonies... Of course, the coordinates will never change. If one is willing to pay the price to start from scratch, I'm sure one will be able to find a similar traversing technique while making use of elemental force native to Da Qian instead of using dream elemental force..."

Previously, dream masters heavily guarded this technique to be able to increase their cultivation in a short period of time. Only the foolish would share such a valuable technique with their servants.

Now, it was time to spread this technique.

"Hehe... among all the recordings of the various dream masters, the coordinates of the realm is the most important thing in dream-traversing. I have indeed looted quite a lot from the Divine Lotus Cult this time!"

He was the only one in Da Qian who was able to dream traverse and no one was competing with him. This situation was extremely in his favour.

A tinge of excitement flashed in Fang Yuan's eyes as he began to activate the array.

"Rumble!"

The space around the array shook and the surroundings started to change. It was as though Fang Yuan had arrived into outer space, floating in the universe. The milky way above him glittered brilliantly as each and every star shone brightly in the night sky.

"Every star here represents a coordinate of a realm which the Divine Lotus Cult have discovered. Now, all of these are mine!"

Fang Yuan lowered his head and stretched out his hand, attempting to touch the stars. Suddenly, something drastic happened!

The originally glittering milky way started to dim as the stars began to lose its glow.

"What's happening?"

Fang Yuan's expression changed. Slowly, he realised that even the realms which he had visited before, including the Water Realm, Hui Realm and Planet Earth Realm slowly became unusable, as though he had lost the connection with these past realms.

"What just happened... Did all the realms just disappear?"

He shook his head. "This is impossible! Therefore, it is not that the coordinates are unusable, but my original location... it has relocated!"

After opening the door which connected the Demonic Heart Realm to Da Qian and the changing of elemental force in Da Qian, everything else was possible.

Even a small change might result in a huge difference to a realm!

After all, the coordinates of the other realms were relative to the location of Da Qian. Now that Da Qian had shifted, the coordinates relative to Da Qian would change too.

"I'm afraid that Da Qian is now attracted by the Demonic Heart Realm and is shifting towards it. It would either become a follower realm to the Demonic Heart Realm or it might just be consumed in the long run..."

Fang Yuan finally understood everything. Although this might only happen in another thousand years, it was still unavoidable!

"The adverse consequences of opening up the door to the Demonic Heart Realm is only showing up slowly..."

Fang Yuan sighed as he started to locate his own realm's location.

Without the accurate relative coordinates, Fang Yuan had to start from scratch! If he wanted to connect Da Qian with the previous realms he had visited before, he would have to spend an extraordinary amount of effort.

"If this is so, I might as well explore a new world! After all, if there are any changes to the dimensions around, this will mean that the neighbouring realms will also undergo changes! Regardless, there is potential everywhere!"

The dream-traversing technique of dream masters included not only the ability to locate realms but also to search for new realms. Sage Changli had demonstrated this before and had once directly searched the coordinates of the Demonic Heart Realm!

Unfortunately, it did not bring prosperity to Da Qian. Instead, it only brought disaster.

"Neighbouring realms are likely to be radiated by dream elemental force... This is a good thing to me, for I will be able to test out a few of my new ideologies!"

Fang Yuan's eyes glistened with excitement.

...

Another month had passed.

Fang Yuan finally had a discovery after many in-depth investigations.

"Indeed... The surroundings of Da Qian are undergoing some changes... To put it in another way, we are now among a new foreign group of realms..."

The new realms confused Fang Yuan for they had the spiritual aura of the Demonic Heart Realm but seemed unaffected by it.

These realms were probably planes which feed on the energy of the Demonic Heart Realm. They were similar to Da Qian and were fortunate enough not to be consumed by the Demonic Heart Realm. Instead, they were developing quite well.

"It's a pity... I can only accurately pinpoint the coordinates of one of these realms!"

Fang Yuan activated the array and felt as though he had arrived in the centre of the universe. A cluster of stars was spread across the vast space.

Unfortunately, these stars appeared illusionary and only had a hint of spiritual aura coming from them.

Only one of them was releasing a dim purple glow in a corner of the universe, resembling a purple eye.

"Do I really only have the coordinates of one realm?"

Fang Yuan sighed.

The exploration of new realms was like buying the lottery. Fang Yuan was fortunate enough to locate a coordinate within a single month.

On the other hand, the 5 Grand Organisations had sent groups of

people and spent years and even decades to find nothing. This was the norm!

"This realm... is giving off an inauspicious vibe!"

Just by detecting the spiritual aura of the realm, Fang Yuan felt disappointed. The Purple Eye Realm gave him an eerie feeling and the sense of chaos. In that deep corner...

"No risks, no rewards. The more dangerous the realm is, the more my rewards will be! Furthermore... time passes extremely quick in this realm, which is suitable for me."

Without hesitation, Fang Yuan announced to his servants that he would remain in isolation. With anticipation, he pressed his finger towards the purple star.

"Rumble!"

The array crumbled and the entire universe started to fade away.

Fang Yuan crossed his legs. His True Spirit started to drift away and slowly disappeared...

...

"This is... such a twisted and chaotic realm!"

Fang Yuan had plenty of experience in dream-traversing.

However, never had he ever felt that a realm was so weird.

His True Spirit became a comet and flew through the membrane of the destination realm.

With that, a twisted and chaotic will started to overwhelm him as though it was about to consume him whole.

"This realm does not have a will... or could the realm be crazy?"

In that instant, a single thought flashed through Fang Yuan's mind.

Twisted fragments flew across his True Spirit. Time started to warp and an image started to appear in his consciousness.

It was a dark-purple bronze door that stood tall and mighty.

Two ferocious ghost heads were biting on the frame of the door. The floating carvings on the surface of the doors were warped. They were the illustration of wronged souls crying in pain.

A blurred silhouette approached the door, placed its hands squarely on the door and gave it a firm push.

"Rumble!"

The door opened and behind the door was...

Darkness overwhelmed Fang Yuan. He was lost.

...

"Rumble!"

There was a torrential downpour and strong winds were blowing against the glass, making a screeching noise.

In an ancient-looking mansion in the secluded mountains, a man started to laugh hysterically.

"Haha... I've finally succeeded!"

He ran into the delivery room and carried a bloodied baby in his hands. He started to smile ferociously like an evil ghost. "With it, we can now resist against the curse on the Tantai Family!"

He was carrying a young boy in his hands. The baby stopped crying, opened its eyes and glared at the man carrying him as though he was looking at a stranger. In his eyes, there was a flicker of gold.

The young man shuddered as he observed the cold and heartless look on the baby.

"Juexin! Is it out yet?"

In the front yard, a group of people were waiting. They did not appear happy. Instead, they were looking towards the delivery room with a look of... fear?!

An old man holding crutches walked up and stroked the baby with his thin hands. The old man had a head full of white hair and a wrinkled face, as though he was on the brink of death. "He is naturally gifted indeed. Our collective efforts... and the descendant which we have created!"

"Father! Look..."

Tantai Juexin swaddled the baby and passed it to a female servant behind. "Think of a name for him!"

"A name, let me think..."

The old man spoke with composure. "The Taitai family has our rules. My generation name is 'Ghost' and yours is 'Heartless'. His is 'Destruction'. Now that the skies are clear and the sun is bright, let's name him 'Sun'! [Tantai Mieming!](#)"

"Tantai Mieming! Great!"

Tantai Juexin remained emotionless as he waved his hands.

The servants seemed to be prepared as they walked up to clean the baby.

"Tantai... Mieming?"

The swaddled baby remained silent as it scanned the old faces around him. "Is this going to be my name for life? It seems like my family is rather impressive!"

"Is he... that thing?"

"The trump card which the elders have put in their all to create in order to resist the curse?"

"He represents... inauspiciousness!"

"Don't let Little Four and Little Five get close to this baby. I don't want to die in his baby's hands even before I die to the curse..."

"Look at his eyes! He doesn't even look like a baby!"

...

The relatives of the family started to look at Fang Yuan, no! They started to look at Tantai Mieming's eyes which were filled with hatred and fear.

He was simply like... a demon!

"Interesting!"

Fang Yuan closed his eyes slowly. After all, he had just completed his dream-traversing and he needed to rest.

"This world... hmm? The elemental force in the surroundings is extremely sparse. Could it be another realm with harsh laws of physics? However, it feels different. Also, this body of mine..."

As the host of the body, Fang Yuan could feel that there was something wrong with it.

"It is physically stronger than the average body. Could this be what they are looking for?"

Recalling how his body's grandfather had looked at him, he knew that he was not being seen as a grandson, but a 'tool'!

In other words, they had completed a certain ceremony to call for the arrival of a certain being!

Mieming means 'Destruction of the Sun' in English.



# Chapter 499: Family Heritage

---

Purple Eye Realm.

This was the name Fang Yuan had given this realm.

Because he was an infant, no matter how gifted he might be, he had spent the last few months eating and sleeping. No one ever paid too much attention to him, allowing him to secretly gather a lot of information.

This realm was mainly populated by humans and it was rather advanced in technology. Fang Yuan had seen before telephones, newspapers and the like.

However, the Tantai family preferred to live in seclusion and had always been living in an ancient looking mansion in the outskirts of the city.

This family was extremely wealthy and even had servants around. However, all the members of the Tantai Family always seem gloomy and depressed.

Furthermore, something which did not add up was that there were very little elders among the family.

Fang Yuan had only seen one elder, which was Tantai Juexin's father. He was the elder of the entire Tantai Family, Tantai Guijing!

'This family seems to be knowledgeable in certain secret spells! This might be the secret behind how they become so wealthy.'

In Fang Yuan's memories, he could recall being carried to an array for a few times. During these times, he was part of a bloody ritual and was fed much weird stuff.

As an infant, he could not put up any resistance and could only do as he was told.

'Sigh... I am speechless about the predicament I am in right

now...'

The small infant sighed softly.

According to Fang Yuan's predictions, the place which he had reincarnated was coincidentally the location of the 'ceremony' held by the Tantai Family! Therefore, his True Spirit must have subconsciously chosen the most suitable body which led to him possessing the infant.

'Comparatively, I would rather reincarnate as a normal human! Furthermore... This realm...'

Fang Yuan glanced at his stats with a gloomy look:

"Name: Fang Yuan (Tantai Mieming)

Essence: 0.5 (100)

Spirit: 0.5 (100)

Magic: 2.0 (100)

Profession: ???

Cultivation: ???

Technique: ???

Skill: [Medicine (Sealed)], [Botany (Sealed)], [Fiery Golden Eyes (Sealed)]"

"My stats are miserable and even my techniques are completely wiped off? Most importantly..."

Fang Yuan realised that his Medicine and Botany had faded grey, similar to the previous encounter with the Demonic Heart Realm whereby his dream master related stats had faded grey when the dream dao was taken away.

Of course, under Fang Yuan's continuous efforts, the bracket containing the Fiery Golden Eyes started to shimmer and appeared unstable, allowing him to occasionally use it.

"Something is wrong with this mansion! There is too much Yin

Energy! Unfortunately... My present form is too weak!"

Even though Fang Yuan's stats in his window were sealed, he was confident that he would be able to restore his cultivation in Da Qian. However, all of these required time!

In this mansion, everything gave him a sense of danger!

This was not an observation through his Fiery Golden Eyes but rather, his detection from being physically in the mansion!

Until now, Fang Yuan could be certain that his physical body was different from others! Notwithstanding his magical energy, how could a newborn have half the stats of a full-grown adult?

Unless...

"Creak!"

The room door was opened. A large-breasted female in her thirties walked in.

Fang Yuan could recognise that this was the female servant taking care of him. She was Xu Ma.

All the servants serving in the mansion appeared pale and depressed too, and it seemed that it was because they had served in the family for a long period of time already. They rarely smiled and most of the time appeared gloomy.

"No! Something's not right!"

Fang Yuan's eyes glistened. "This lady... she is too emotionless."

"Bang!"

At this point in time, Xu Ma's eyes turned blank as she fainted.

Behind her, there was another silhouette. A pair of deadly eyes glared at Fang Yuan as the silhouette raised a pair of scissors in its hand.

'This lady... She seems like she is the wife of Tantai Juexin's brother, my aunt. She should be either the Seventh Aunt or Eight

Aunt, and her name is Qiu Liang...'

Qiu Liang had a pleasant look. However, now, she was raising a pair of scissors, aiming its tip towards Fang Yuan's heart. She had a ferocious and frenzied look on her face. "Di... Die! You shouldn't even exist in this world, and it's all because of you! Ashang is dead! You shall die too!"

Fang Yuan laid there helplessly as the pair of scissors was swung downwards.

'This is none of my business... and yet you want to kill me...'

Fang Yuan closed his eyes and concentrated.

"Ah!"

In an instant, there was a shriek, followed by the clanging of a metal pot which fell to the floor, spilling the water in it.

"Help! Lady Qiu Liang is..."

A female servant screamed at the top of her lungs but soon after, she shrieked.

Fang Yuan's ears twitched. He could hear the shuffling of feet. Relaxed, he heaved a sigh.

In this world, he no longer knew if his old techniques would work and he would have a hard time explaining. It was still better to let others save him.

"Qiu Liang, what are you doing?"

Tantai Juexin rushed to the scene and a crisp slap was heard. "Are you crazy?"

"Haha... I have been crazy all along! If not for him, would Ashang die?"

Qiu Liang's voice was filled with hatred and vengeance. As she tried to retaliate, she was once again hit to the ground.

"Daughter-in-law... what is happening?"

At this point in time, a large group of them had arrived in the baby's room. The old man in front was Tantai Guijing. He had a cold look on his face and was awe-inspiring.

"Are you guys blind? I am trying to kill him!"

Qiu Liang was restrained. She appeared crazed for a moment before started to sob. "Ashang, Ashang was killed by him! All of you have seen how pitifully Ashang had died. His eyes were even dug out of his corpse! This child's eyes are different! This is why Ashang's eyes were dug out!"

"Rubbish! Ashang was obviously..."

Tantai Guijing sounded strict at first but as he spoke to the end of the sentence, his voice started to soften.

"Forget about it. This woman is crazy. Bring her to the patriarchal hall and lock her up!"

After a long while, another voice was heard.

"All of you... will die!"

Fang Yuan was being carried by another servant as he looked into Qiu Liang's eyes.

Her eyes were filled with hatred and vengeance, turning her otherwise beautiful look into a demonic one. The servant carrying Fang Yuan started to shake in fear.

"Do you think he can really resist against the curse? No! That is impossible! The Tantai Family is a cursed one and there is nothing we can do about it. The introduction of a new force will only lead all of you to your deaths!"

Qiu Liang frantically screamed and cursed everyone on the scene like a poisonous snake spitting its venom at its prey. "I hate you! I hate all of you! If not for Ashang, why would I even be married into your family, destroying my future?"

"Something's not right!"

She started to struggle and grabbed the red pair of scissors on the floor. Seeing this, Tantai Guijing quickly screamed. "Stop her! She wants to..."

"All of you, die!"

As she screamed, Qiu Liang suddenly rushed towards the female servant carrying Fang Yuan with a great force.

"Chi!"

Blood spewed everywhere!

The bloodstained Fang Yuan's face, spreading a metallic smell everywhere.

"How could... how could it be?"

Qiu Liang gazed at the female servant who had the scissors pierced through her neck before looking down.

At her chest, a sharp knife was protruding out, stained with the blood of her own.

"Pa!"

The female servant fell to the ground and Fang Yuan fell towards the ground as well before being caught firmly by another pair of hands.

"Let's get out of here! Get some servants to clear up the corpses."

Fang Yuan realised that it was his own father, Tantai Juexin who had killed Qiu Liang from behind her! Composed, he kept his dagger and ordered the servants around.

"Argh..."

Qiu Liang, who was lying on the ground, was still trying to struggle. Blood flowed out from her mouth and it was an unforgettable scene for all of those who had witnessed her emotion-filled face.

"Do I represent... inauspiciousness?"

Fang Yuan was a little confused as he felt a chill vibe in his heart.

Unknowingly, the red pair of scissors on Qiu Liang's hands seem to be a bright red due to it being stained by blood.

"Father, how should we deal with it?"

After clearing the scene, Tantai Juexin looked towards Tantai Guijing.

"As usual, but we have to strengthen the defences of the family. Otherwise, she will come into contact with that 'thing'!"

Tantai Guijing bent over and forcefully pried open Qiu Liang's fingers to pick up the scissors in her hands. "Nobody shall leak the events of today. Otherwise, I will deal with them according to the family rules. Is that understood."

"Yes!"

Everyone around nodded their heads. However, they still could not wipe off the fear in their eyes. They were all perplexed as they looked towards Fang Yuan.

He was a true sign of inauspiciousness!

As Fang Yuan was being carried away, he took one last look at the lady on the ground.

It might be his own hallucination, but her fingers seemed to be... moving!

...

The seasons went by.

It had already been a few years.

Fang Yuan was now 5 years old. He was like an invisible person in the Tantai Family.

Although he was given the best food and accommodation and no one dared to oppose him, no other kids of the same age were willing to play with him.

Even the servants feared him, even though Fang Yuan did nothing.

His biological mother, Su Xin, had also intentionally distanced herself from Fang Yuan and they had a weak relationship.

In the past 5 years, Fang Yuan had discovered many weird things.

For instance, after a certain period of time, there would always be a member of this family who would inexplicably die, and the rest of the family would treat it as a norm.

Every time he examined their corpses, he could tell that they did not die of natural causes.

"Curse, so they say..."

After gathering all his experiences for the past few years, Fang Yuan could roughly figure out what was going on with this family.

"The Tantai Family has been cursed and everyone cannot escape from it... After a certain period of time, there will always be a death! No wonder this family had decided to live in seclusion. Otherwise, they would surely scare their neighbours."

Although Fang Yuan had no forms of entertainment in the past 5 years, he could still bear it.

Furthermore, he was not afraid of displaying his wisdom at a young age.

Even though he might appear gloomy and depressed like a matured person, no one would suspect anything.

After all, he was the greatest anomaly in the family!



# Chapter 500: Ghost Garden

---

Fang Yuan's life was very organised, or should I say... monotonous!

Ever since he displayed an intelligence on par with average 10-year-olds at the age of 3, he had more lessons every day.

Specialised teachers were hired for all his lessons, from normal culture classes to physical education, and including his most interesting topic on the supernatural and the spiritual. The person who taught him spiritualism was his father, Tantai Juexin.

"Father!"

After Fang Yuan finished his dinner, he went to the study room.

The ancient looking oil lamp flickered. Tantai Juexin sat behind the study table with a cold and harsh expression on his face.

Fang Yuan called his father quietly without any emotion, it was as though he was calling any other person.

"Let's start our supernatural lesson now! Repeat to me what I have taught you yesterday!"

Tantai Juexin was used to such coldness from his son. He then continued with an expressionless look on his face, "Tell me, what are 'ghosts'?"

Fang Yuan concentrated and the knowledge inside his brain came out, "Ghosts are a spiritual presence. It is unknown when they appeared in this world... It is a phenomenon that cannot be easily explained by science and it's filled with terror! Most importantly, all kinds of ghosts cannot be destroyed by humans! What we can do is to discover the patterns behind them and thus, avoid the dangers and save lives. This is our job as exorcists..."

As Fang Yuan recited, he felt rather astonished secretly.

Indeed, supernormal powers were present in this realm, they

were 'ghosts'!

However, such ghost spirits were very different from the impression Fang Yuan had inside his memory. They appeared in the form of spiritual bodies and only those ghosts at the lowest tier could be observed and described.

In actual fact, Fang Yuan being gravitated to them was a curse, a meme! They could not be completely described and explained. Even exorcists' conclusions were one-sided as they were things that could not be understood by humans!

All ghosts could not be destroyed by humans. They possessed all sorts of inexplicable powerful abilities, such as messing with people's heart and mind, reversing cause-and-effect, killing people in their dreams and even distorting space-time. When normal people were faced with them, they would sink into complete despair!

When Fang Yuan heard all these, he was immediately greatly interested in this phenomenon of ghosts.

After all, even dream master sages could not distort space-time nor cause-and-effect. This realm was indeed worthy to be explored!

However, Tantai Juexin had also sternly warned Fang Yuan before. If any exorcist were met with such a ghost who could distort space-time and cause-and-effect, they must immediately hide far away from it and should never walk into such a situation. This was because even the most supreme exorcist would definitely die to such a ghost!

Yes, Tantai Family was an exorcist family!

This family's bloodline possessed a special gene which caused all their descendants, regardless of gender, to possess extraordinary appearances and abilities! There were even some who could awaken some 'special traits'!

These included the ability to see ghosts, temporarily dispel curses

and even sense a person's remaining lifespan!

Due to such powers, Tantai Family could remain strong through the eras and they even amassed a great fortune.

Unfortunately, such a family was ridden with an unbreakable curse!

'All members of Tantai Family! Would die a horrible death! In a certain period of their lives, they would definitely die of unnatural death!'

The expression Tantai Juexin had when he said this was deeply ingrained in Fang Yuan's sea of consciousness.

The origin of this curse was unknown. However, it had spread throughout the bloodline of Tantai Family. Amongst all the family members, there were no exceptions!

This was the reason why there were so little elderly in Tantai Family.

Also, Fang Yuan was the 'tool' created to resist this unbreakable curse.

For his 'arrival' ritual that time, not only were large amounts of things depleted from the storage, a few elders of the family even died of unnatural death. Lots of funerals kept happening in the family mansion; the price paid was too heavy.

Of course, Tantai Juexin would never tell Fang Yuan such. This was silently observed and concluded by Fang Yuan himself.

"Very good, you are almost done with learning the theory of exorcism..."

Tantai Juexin looked at his son and felt emotional. His son's learning speed was shocking, there was indeed... that sort of presence.

"What's next is the practical stage. Follow me!"

Tantai Juexin stood up and brought Fang Yuan to the ancestral

hall at the back of the mansion.

This was an important place for the family. It was also extremely gloomy and frightening. Other kids would never dare to come here to play.

Behind the ancestral hall, there was a plot of land.

In the centre of the area, there was a black coloured hall. To the Tantai Family, this was even more important than the ancestral hall.

"This is the 'Hall of Sacrifice'! It is taken care of by a few family elders."

Tantai Juexin said calmly but did not go in. Instead, he went to the back of the hall.

'What is worthy to be sacrificed?'

Fang Yuan's heart jumped. He wanted to use his special ability to look inside it but felt a sense of danger and chose not to instead.

One had to be able to live till an old age in Tantai Family to become a family elder, it was a very powerful role. Thus, the items offered inside this Hall of Sacrifice were definitely unusual and extraordinary!

With a bit of regret, Fang Yuan arrived behind the Hall of Sacrifice.

"This is..."

Fang Yuan could clearly felt that the surroundings had changed, "Dimension fusion? Is this the secret of Tantai Family's old mansion? What is exposed on the outside is already so scary, this is just the tip of the iceberg!"

"Also, this realm is too unusual... even mere mortals can possess such powers. Although they don't rely on themselves, they put quite a few Illusionary Divine dream masters to shame!"

The knowledge about dimensional fusion was part of the study

on spiritual territories. Only 7th Tier Illusionary Divine powerful beings were qualified enough to have some contact with such knowledge.

However, now, a mortal family even made use of special environments to achieve such!

"We require many medicines for exorcism rituals. These medicinal herbs can only be grown under special conditions and environments. For example..."

Tantai Juexin voice was low and he raised his head to look at the moon.

Under the moonlight, a garden appeared. The plants inside were all oddly and eerily shaped. Normal people who saw such would definitely have nightmares!

Fang Yuan took a look and saw a stalk of Human Faced Sunflower. In its centre was a women's face that was swaying along with the moonlight.

On the ground, a broken arm crawled pass and left behind a trail of blood on the soil.

"This is the Human Faced Sunflower and Broken Arm Grass. These are some of the basic materials needed for us to make spiritual medicine..."

Tantai Juexin pushed Fang Yuan into the garden, "Today's lesson will be for you to stay inside here until tomorrow morning! I will teach you how to identify these materials tomorrow..."

"..."

Fang Yuan looked at the surroundings. It was rife with all sorts of extremely sinister-looking, bloody and horrifying plants that were beyond human imagination.

Normal kids would have been scared crazy if they were here.

'Something's wrong... this garden is obviously hidden with

dangers!'

Fang Yuan suddenly had a thought, 'Perhaps... he wants me to die here!'

Outside the garden, Tantai Juexin's palm was trembling slightly.

Tantai Juexin knew it was actually a plot of wilderness behind the Hall of Sacrifice! This garden did not exist in the human world!

Even Tantai Juexin was feeling conflicted currently.

He both hoped this tool which carried the family's hope could create miracles and yet hoped he would just die like the others.

"Su Xin... she must be very sad, right? That's why she left him to be taken care by the wet nurse immediately after giving birth to him... She hates me, she hates this child!"

Tantai Juexin sighed. His expression was extremely complicated.

"This Ghost Garden is located in the netherworld and these plants can only grow in such an environment. Thus, it will occasionally attract some of those dangerous 'presence'. Hence, this is why it was built behind the Hall of Sacrifice and requires some family elders to periodically 'prune' it... Even if no ghosts come, the Aggrieved Ghost Vines and Corpse Vines inside also requires living humans as their nutrient and would automatically look for their prey."

Tantai Juexin was very clear that even a normal exorcist would go crazy or even die if they spent one night in such an environment!

For a 5 years old child, even if it was Tantai Mieming, it was a very difficult mission to complete.

However, at the next moment, his eyes opened wide and his mouth was agape. It was unbelievable.

Vines that were like streaks of black hair twined around the 5 years old Tantai Mieming as though they were playing with him.

Although this child was inside the Ghost Garden, he was like the king of all!

'Heart of Nature!'

Even if Fang Yuan was met with powerful entities like the Demonic Heart Realm and had his abilities sealed, his stats and special abilities still remained. The seal that sealed his skills was long lifted.

At this current moment, Fang Yuan was making use of his botany skills to subdue all the plants in the Ghost Garden!

It was not technically subduing them, in actual fact, what Fang Yuan did was to listen attentively to the heartfelt thoughts of these plants.

"It's different from the usual spiritual grass, I can only hear pain and suffering!"

Fang Yuan stroked the hair-like Corpse Vine in front of him. Suddenly, he exerted strength and plucked out the vine along with its roots.

"Ying! Ying!"

A women's cry could be heard from the streaks of black hair. Fang Yuan was immediately sympathetic, "I will help you to... release your pain!"

Fang Yuan's finger moved. It was as though he pinched a key spot and all the black vines turned into ashes at once. On his palm, a few black coloured legumes were left behind.

"Please teach me how to identify them now."

Fang Yuan walked out of the ghost garden and stood in front of Tantai Juexin with an indifferent look on his face.

"This person... this person..."

Tantai Juexin's face flashed with a tinge of shock and immediately changed to horror. Even he himself did not notice

that his voice was slightly trembling, "These are the seeds of Corpse Vines, Corpse Vines requires the hair of drowned corpses as their nourishment. Its matured body needs to devour a living person every year and its seeds can be used to..."

After a night, the father and son there were not like father and son returned to the old mansion in front.

"Mieming, you go back first!"

Tantai Guijing seemed to have waited for quite a while already. After he instructed Fang Yuan to leave first, the conversation between him and Tantai Juexin could be vaguely heard.

"It is a bit too early to open the Ghost Garden to him now..."

"I have my plans, Father!"

"...Okay, looks like I underestimated his potential by too much. From now onwards, you will be fully in-charged of Mieming's training. Also, one more thing... Jueqing is back!"



# Table of Contents

## [Carefree Path of Dreams](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 401: Medicinal Herbs](#)

[Chapter 402: Healing the Wounded](#)

[Chapter 403: Thesis](#)

[Chapter 404: Inheritance](#)

[Chapter 405: A New Era](#)

[Chapter 406: Ambush](#)

[Chapter 407: Investigations](#)

[Chapter 408: Demon Restraining Cuffs](#)

[Chapter 409: Illness](#)

[Chapter 410: Old Daoist Ma](#)

[Chapter 411: Arrest](#)

[Chapter 412: Grading](#)

[Chapter 413: The Willow Tree](#)

[Chapter 414: Parasitic](#)

[Chapter 415: Infiltration](#)

[Chapter 416: Tempest](#)

[Chapter 417: Under the Tree](#)

[Chapter 418: Ignite the Explosives](#)

[Chapter 419: The Driver](#)

[Chapter 420: Investigation](#)

[Chapter 421: A Shocking Commotion](#)

[Chapter 422: Roth](#)

[Chapter 423: Threat](#)

[Chapter 424: Metalbender](#)

[Chapter 425: Compromise](#)

[Chapter 426: Tragedy](#)

[Chapter 427: Secretive](#)

[Chapter 428: Amun](#)

[Chapter 429: Half Plane](#)

[Chapter 430: Calamity](#)

[Chapter 431: Departure](#)

[Chapter 432: Cleaning Up The Mess](#)

[Chapter 433: Settlement](#)

[Chapter 434: Ten Years](#)  
[Chapter 435: Occurrence](#)  
[Chapter 436: Treasure Hunting](#)  
[Chapter 437: Predicament](#)  
[Chapter 438: Secret](#)  
[Chapter 439: White Jade Capital](#)  
[Chapter 440: Eschaton](#)  
[Chapter 441: Relocation](#)  
[Chapter 442: Xing Hezi](#)  
[Chapter 443: Flying Star](#)  
[Chapter 444: Conflict of Interests](#)  
[Chapter 445: Blood Sacrifice](#)  
[Chapter 446: Otherworldly](#)  
[Chapter 447: Destruction](#)  
[Chapter 448: Spiritual Realm](#)  
[Chapter 449: The Encounter](#)  
[Chapter 450: Approaching](#)  
[Chapter 451: Combined Ambush](#)  
[Chapter 452: The Chase](#)  
[Chapter 453: Capture](#)  
[Chapter 454: Magical Clone](#)  
[Chapter 455: A New Beginning](#)  
[Chapter 456: A New End](#)  
[Chapter 457: It Has Begun](#)  
[Chapter 458: The Arrival](#)  
[Chapter 459: Devour](#)  
[Chapter 460: Truth](#)  
[Chapter 461: Appearance](#)  
[Chapter 462: Three Kills](#)  
[Chapter 463: Retreat](#)  
[Chapter 464: Cleaning Up the Mess](#)  
[Chapter 465: Departure](#)  
[Chapter 466: Breakthrough](#)  
[Chapter 467: Violet](#)  
[Chapter 468: Massacre](#)  
[Chapter 469: Conceal](#)  
[Chapter 470: Cleansing](#)  
[Chapter 471: Paying a Visit](#)  
[Chapter 472: Discourse](#)

[Chapter 473: The Beginning](#)  
[Chapter 474: The Trade](#)  
[Chapter 475: Beast Swarm](#)  
[Chapter 476: Prominent Divine](#)  
[Chapter 477: The Pen and the Sword](#)  
[Chapter 478: Chaos in War](#)  
[Chapter 479: Battle](#)  
[Chapter 480: The Appearance](#)  
[Chapter 481: Steel Seal](#)  
[Chapter 482: Demonic Shadow](#)  
[Chapter 483: Demon Lord](#)  
[Chapter 484: The Realm's Final Blow](#)  
[Chapter 485: Deprivation](#)  
[Chapter 486: Retribution](#)  
[Chapter 487: To Settle](#)  
[Chapter 488: Disaster](#)  
[Chapter 489: Demon Spirits](#)  
[Chapter 490: Pressured](#)  
[Chapter 491: Help](#)  
[Chapter 492: Demon Spirit](#)  
[Chapter 493: Foundation](#)  
[Chapter 494: Mountain Leader](#)  
[Chapter 495: Black Dragon](#)  
[Chapter 496: Trade Offer](#)  
[Chapter 497: Maximum Level](#)  
[Chapter 498: Arrival](#)  
[Chapter 499: Family Heritage](#)  
[Chapter 500: Ghost Garden](#)